Law Tracts,

CONTAINING

- I. A Proposition for compiling and Amendment of our Laws.
- 2. An Offer of a Digest of the Laws.
- 3. The Elements of the Common Laws of England, containing a Collection of fome principal Rules and Maxims of the Common Law, with their Latitude and Extent. 2-2.2
- 4. The Use of the Law for Preservation of our Persons, Goods and good Names, according to the Practice of the Laws and Customs of this Land. —/1-109
- c. Cases of Treason, Felony,

- Præmunire, Prerogative of the King, of the Office of a Constable. -- 164
- Arguments in Law in certain great and difficult Cafes, viz.
- Of Impeachment of Waste. 195 Low's Case of Tenures. 2.18 Of Revocation of Uses. 2.33 The Jurisdiction of the Marches. 2.46
- 7. Ordinances in Chancery for the better and more regular Administration of Justice in the Chancery, to be daily observed, faving the Prerogative of the Court.
- 8. Reading on the Statute of Uses. 299.

By FRANCIS BACON, Baron of Verulam, Viscount St. Alban, and Lord High Chancellor of England.

In the SAVOY:

Printed by E. and R. Nutt, and R. Gosling, (Affigns of Edw. Sayer, Efq.) for R. Gosling at the Crown and Mitre against Fetter-lane End, Fleet-street. MDCC XXXVII.

279

MVSEVM BRITANNICVM A

PROPOSITION

TO HIS

MAJESTY,

BY

Sir FRANCIS BACON, Knt.

His MAJESTY'S Attorney-General, and one of his Privy-Council; touching the Compiling, and Amendment of the Laws of ENGLAND.

Your MAJESTY,

F your favour, having made me privycounsellor, and continuing me in the
place of your attorney-general, (which
is more than was these hundred years
before,) I do not understand it to be, that by
putting off the dealing in causes, between party
and Party, I should keep holy-day the more; but
that I should dedicate my time to your service
with less distraction. Wherefore, in this plentiful accession of time, which I have now gained, I
take it to be my duty, not only to speed your
command-

commandments, and the business of my place; but to meditate and to excogitate, of my self, wherein I may best, by my travels, derive your virtues to the good of your people; and return their thanks and increase of love to you again. And after I had thought of many things, I could find, in my judgment, none more proper for your Majesty, as a master, nor for me, as a workman, than the reducing and recompiling of the laws of

England.

Your Majesty is a King, blessed with posterity; and these Kings fort best with acts of perpetuity, when they do not leave them, instead of children; but transmit both line and merit to future generations. You are a great mafter in justice and judicature; and it were pity that the fruit of that virtue should die with you. Your Majesty also reigneth in learned times; the more, in regard of your own perfections and patronage of learning; and it hath been the mishap of works of this nature, that the less learned time hath wrought upon the more learned, which now will not be fo. As for my felf, the law is my profession, to which I am a debtor. Some little helps I may have of other learning, which may give form to matter; and your Majesty hath set me in an eminent place. whereby in a work which must be the work of many, I may the better have coadjutors. Therefore, not to hold your Majesty with any long preface, in that which I conceive to be nothing less than words, I will proceed to the matter; which matter itself nevertheless requireth somewhat briefly to be faid, both of the dignity, and likewise of the fafety, and convenience of this work: and then to go to the main; that is to fay, to flew how the work is to be done: which incidently also will best demonstrate, that it is no vast nor speculative thing, but a real and feafible. Callifthenes, that followed Alexander's court, and was grown in some displeasure with him, because he could not well

well brook the Persian adoration; at a supper (which with the Grecians was ever a great part talk) was defired, because he was an eloquent man, to speak of some theme, which he did; and chose for his theme, the praise of the Macedonian nation, which though it were but a filling thing to praife men to their faces, yet he did it with fuch advantage of truth, and avoidance of flattery, and with fuch life, as the hearers were so ravished with it, that they pluckt the roses off from their garlands, and threw them upon him; as the manner of applauses then was: Alexander was not pleased with it, and by way of discountenance said, It was eafy to be a good orator, in a pleafing theme. But (faith he to Callisthenes,) turn your style, and tell us now of our faults, that we may have the profit, and not you only the praise: which he prefently did with fuch a force, and so piquantly, that Alexander said, The goodness of his theme had made him eloquent before; but now it was the malice of his heart, that had inspired him.

d

T

1,

of

7;

y.,

n;

li-

r-

n-

ur

it

nat

ore

my

a

her

and

ice,

of

ore,

ace,

han

nat-

efly

the

hen

how

will

cula-

enes,

en in

not

well

1. SIR, I shall not fall into either of those two extremes, concerning the laws of England; they commend themselves best to them that understand them; and your Majesty's chief Justice of your bench hath in his writings magnified them not without cause: certainly they are wife, they are just, and moderate laws; they give to God, they give to Cafar, they give to the subjects that which appertaineth. It is true, they are as mixt as our language, compounded of British, Roman, Saxon, Danish, Norman customs. And as our language is to much the richer, fo the laws are the more complete: neither does this attribute less to them, than those that would have them to have stood out the same in all mutations; for no tree is so good first set, as by transplanting.

2. As for the second extreme, I have nothing to do with it, by way of taxing the laws. I speak only by way of perfecting them, which is easiest

A 2

in the best things; so that which is far amiss, hardly receiveth amendment; but that which hath already, to that more may be given. Besides, what I shall propound is not to the matter of the laws. but to the manner of their registry, expression, and tradition; fo that it giveth them rather light than any new nature. This being fo, for the dignity of the work I know scarcely where to find the like; for furely that scale, and those degrees of fovereign honour, are true and rightly marshalled. First, the founders of estates; then the law-givers; then the deliverers and faviours after long calamities; then the fathers of their countries, which are just and prudent princes; and lastly, conquerors, which honour is not to be received amongst the rest, except it be, where there is an addition of more country and territory to a better government, than that was of the conquered. Of thefe, in my judgment, your Majesty may with more truth than flattery be intitled to the first, because of your uniting of Britain and planting Ireland. both which favour of the founder. That which I now propound to you, may adopt you also into the fecond: law-givers have been called principes perpetui; because, as bishop Gardiner said in a bad fense, that he would be bishop an hundred years after his death, in respect of the long leases he made: fo law-givers are still Kings and Rulers after their decease, in their laws. But this work, shining so in itself, needs no taper. For the safety and convenience thereof, it is good to confider, and to answer those objections or scruples which may arise, or be made against this work.

Obj. 1. That it is a thing needless; and that the law, as it now is, is in good estate, comparable to any foreign law; and that it is not possible for the wit of man, in respect of the frailty thereof, to provide against the incertainties and eva-

fions, or omissions of law.

1.04 "

Resp. For the comparison with foreign laws, it is in vain to speak of it; for men will never agree about it. Our lawyers will maintain for our municipal laws; civilians, scholars, travellers, will be of the other opinion.

Bur certain it is, that our laws, as they now stand, are subject to great incertainties, and variety of opinion, delays and evasions: whereof

enfueth,

ſs,

th

at

15,

n,

ht

g-

he

of

rs;

la-

ch

ie-

gst

on

rn-

le.

ore

use

nd,

h I

nto

pes

oad

ars

he

af-

rk.

afe-

ler,

iich

hat

ara-

ible

ere-

eva-

esp.

THAT the multiplicity and length of fuits is great.

2. THAT the contentious person is armed, and

the honest subject wearied and oppressed.

3. That the judge is more absolute; who, in doubtful cases, hath a greater stroke and liberty.

4. That the chancery courts are more filled, the remedy of law being often obscure and doubt-

ful.

5. That the ignorant lawyer shroudeth his ignorance of law, in that, doubts are so frequent

and many.

6. That mens affurances of their lands and eftates by patents, deeds, wills, are often subject to question, and hollow; and many the like incon-

veniencies,

It is a good rule and direction (for that all laws, secundum magis & minus, do participate of incertainties,) that followeth: Mark, whether the doubts that arise are only in cases of ordinary experience, or which happen not every day: If in the first only, impute it to frailty of man's foresight, that cannot reach by law to all cases; but if in the latter, be assured there is a fault in the law. Of this I say no more, but that (to give every man his due) had it not been for Sir Edward Coke's reports (which, though they may have errors, and some peremptory and extrajudicial resolutions, more than are warranted; yet they contain infinite good decisions, and rulings over of

A PROPOSAL FOR AMENDING

cases,) the law by this time had been almost like a ship without ballast; for that the cases of modern experience, are sled from those that are adjudged and ruled in former time. But the necessity of this Work is yet greater in the statute law. For first, there are a number of ensuring penal laws, which lie upon the subject; and if in bad times they should be awaked, and put in execution, would grind them to powder.

THERE is a learned civilian that expoundeth the curse of the prophet; Pluet super eos laqueos, of multitude of penal laws; which are worse than showers of hail or tempest upon cattle, for they

fall upon men.

THERE are some penal laws fit to be retained, but their penalty too great; and it is ever a rule, that any over-great penalty, (besides the acerbity

of it) deads the execution of the law.

THERE is a farther inconvenience of penal laws, obfolete, and out of use; for that it brings a gangrene, neglect, and habit of disobedience upon other wholesome laws, that are sit to be continued in practice and execution; so that our laws endure the torment of Mezentius:

The living die in the arms of the dead.

LASTLY, There is such an accumulation of statutes concerning one matter, and they so cross and intricate, as the certainty of law is lost in the heap; as your Majesty had experience last day upon the point, Whether the incendiary of Newmarket should have the benefit of his clergy.

Obj. 2. THAT it is a great innovation; and

innovations are dangerous beyond forelight.

Resp. All purgings and medicines, either in the civil or natural body, are innovations: so as that argument is a common place against all noble resormations. But the truth is, that this work ought not to be termed or held for any innovation

2.06; h

Answer.

ea

ern

ed

of

ws,

nes

on,

eth

of

an

ey

ed,

le,

ity

WS.

an-

0-

red

en-

ta-

nd

the

lay

200-

nd

in

as

ble

ork

va-

non

tion in the suspected sense. For those are the innovations which are quarrelled and spoken against,
that concern the consciences, estates, and fortunes
of particular persons: but this of general ordinance pricketh not particulars, but passeth sine strepitu. Besides, it is on the favourable part; for
it easeth, it present not: and lastly, it is rather
matter of order and explanation, than of alteration. Neither is this without president in former
governments.

THE Romans, by their Decemviri, did make their twelve tables; but that was indeed a new enacting or constituting of laws, not a registering or recompiling; and they were made out of the laws of the Grecians, not out of their own customs.

In Athens they had Sexviri, which were standing commissioners to watch and to discern what laws waxed unproper for the time; and what new law did, in any branch, cross a former law, and so, ex officio, propounded their repeals.

KING Lewis XI of France, had it in his intention to have made one perfect and uniform law, out of the civil law Roman, and the provincial cuftoms of France.

JUSTINIAN the Emperor, by commissions directed to divers persons learned in the laws, reduced the Roman laws from vastness of volume, and a labyrinth of incertainties, unto that course of the civil law which is now in use. I find here at home of late years, that King Henry VIII, in the twenty seventh of his reign, was authorized by parliament to nominate thirty two commissioners, part ecclesiastical, part temporal, to purge the canon law, and to make it agreeable to the law of God, and the law of the realm; and the same was revived in the south year of Edw. VI, though neither took effect.

For the laws of Lycurgus, Solon, Minos, and others of antient time, they are not the worse, A4 because

because grammar scholars speak of them: but things too antient wax children with us again.

EDGAR, the Saxon King, collected the laws of this Kingdom, and gave them the strength of a faggot bound, which formerly were difperfed.

THE statutes of King Edward the First were fundamental paut, I doubt, I err, in producing fo many examples; for as Cicero saith to Cafar, so

may I say to your Majesty.

Nil vulgare te dignum videri possit.

Obj. 3. In this purging of the course of the common laws and statutes, much good may be taken away.

> Resp. In all purging, some good humours may pass away; but that is largely recompensed, by

lightening the body of much bad.

Obj. 4. LABOUR were better bestowed, in bringing the common laws of England to a text law, as the statutes are, and setting both of them

down in method and by titles.

Resp. IT is too long a business to debate, whether lex scripta, aut non scripta, a text law, or customs well registered, with received and approved grounds and maxims, and acts and refolutions judicial from time to time duly entered and reported, be the better form of declaring and authorizing laws. It was the principal reason or oracle of Lycurgus, that none of his laws should be written. Customs are laws written in living tables; and some traditions the church doth not difauthorize. In all sciences they are the foundest, that keep close to particulars; and sure I am, there are more doubts that rife upon our statutes, which are a text law, than upon the common law, which is no text law. But, howfor ever that question be determined, I dare not advife to cast the law into a new mould. The Work

THE LAWS OF ENGLAND.

work which I propound tendeth to pruning and grafting the law, and not to plow up and planting it again; for fuch a remove I should hold in-

deed for a perilous innovation.

Obj. 5. It will turn the judges, counsellors of 5. Obj. law, and students of law, to school again, and make them to feek what they shall hold and advise for law; and it will impose a new charge upon all lawyers, to furnish themselves with new books of law.

Resp. For the former of those, touching the Armes new labour, it is true it would follow, if the law were new moulded into a text law; for then men must be new to begin, and that is one of the reasons for which I disallow that course.

Bur in the way that I shall now propound, the entire body and fubitance of law shall remain, only discharged of idle and unprofitable, or hurtful matter; and illustrated by order and other helps, towards the better understanding of it,

and judgment thereupon.

For the latter, touching the new charge, it is not worth the speaking of, in a matter of so high importance a it might have been used of the new translation of the bible, and such like works. Books must follow sciences, and not sciences books.

The Work itself; and the way to reduce and recompile the Laws of ENGLAND.

HIS work is to be done (to use some few I words which is the language of action and effect) in this manner.

IT consisteth of two parts; the digest or recompiling of the common laws; and that of the statutes.

IN

but aws

gth difere

ing , io

the be

ay bÿ

in xt em

ieor

p-0ed nd

or ld ıg

ot d-I

ır e

)+ 1-

3 k

A PROPOSAL FOR AMENDING

In the first of these three things are to be done.

tin

th

tit

ide

be

ve

th

ca

th

IT

t

t

d

T

1

(

I. THE compiling of a book, de antiquitatibus juris.

2. The reducing or perfecting of the course or corps of the common laws.

3. The composing of certain introductive and auxiliary books touching the study of the laws.

For the first of these, all antient records in your Tower, or elsewhere, containing acts of parliament, lords patents, commissions, and judgments, and the like, are to be searched, perused, and weighed: And out of these are to be selected those that are of most worth and weight, and in order of time not of titles, (for the more conformity with the year-books,) to be set down and register'd, rarely, in bec verba; but summed with judgment, not omitting any material part; these are to be used for reverend precedents, but not for binding authorities.

For the second, which is the main, there is to be made a perfect course of the law in serie temporis, or year-books, (as we call them) from Edward the First to this day: in the compiling of this course of law, or year-books, the points fol-

lowing are to be observed.

First, all cases which are at this day clearly

no law, but constantly ruled to the contrary, are to be left out; they do but fill the volumes, and season the wits of students in a contrary sense of law. And so likewise all cases, wherein that is solemnly and long debated, whereof there is now no question at all, are to be entered as judgments only, and resolutions, but without the arguments, which are now become but frivolous, yet for the observation of the deeper sort of lawyers, that they may see how the law hath altered, out of which they may pick sometimes good use, I do advise, that upon the first in time of those obsolete cases, there were a memorandum set, that at that time

time the law was thus taken, until fuch a time, 8c.

to be

atibus

rfe or

and

is in

par-

udg-

ised,

lect-

and

con-

own

um-

ate-

ore-

s to

em-

Ed-

of

fol-

rly

arc

nd

of

is

W

its

ts.

he

ey

ch

e,

te

at

10

IS.

SECONDLY, Homonymia, (as Justinian calleth them) that is, cases merely of iteration and repetition, are to be purged away; and the cales of identity, which are best reported and argued, to be retained instead of the rest; the judgments nevertheless to be set down, every one in time as they are, but with a quotation or reference to the case where the point is argued at large; but if the case consist part of repetition, part of new matter, the repetition is only to be omitted.

THIRDLY, As to the Antinomia, cases judged to the contrary, it were too great a trust to refer to the judgment of the composers of this work, to decide the law either way, except there be a current stream of judgments of later times; and then I reckon the contrary cases amongst cases obsolete, of which I have spoken before; nevertheless this diligence would be used, that such cases of contradiction be specially noted and collected, to the end those doubts, that have been to long militant, may either by affembling all the judges in the exchequer chamber, or by parliament, be put into certainty. For to do it by bringing them in question under seigned parties, is to be disliked. Nil babeat forum ex [cena.

FOURTHLY, All idle queries, which are but feminaries of doubts and incertainties, are to be left out and omitted, and no queries fet down, but of great doubts well debated and left undecided for difficulty; but no doubting or upstarting queries, which though they be touched in argument for explanation, yet were better to die

than to be put into the books.

LASTLY, cases reported with too great prolixity, would be drawn into a more compendious report; not in the nature of an abridgment, but fautologies and impertinences to be cut off for misprinting, and insensible reporting, which many

dec

tra

Wil

Go

1

tha

an

be

the

on

ex

of

po

ha

fo

a

th

tw

m

ft

T

a

0

P

1

many times confound the students, that will be obiter amended; but more principally, if there be any thing in the report which is not well warranted by the record, that is also to be rectified the course being thus compiled, then it resteth but for your Majesty to appoint some grave and sound lawyers, with some honourable stipend, to be * reporters for the time to come, and then this is settled for all times.

OR the auxiliary books that conduce to the study and science of the law, they are three; Institutions; a treatise De regulis juris; and a better book De verborum fignificationibus, or terms of the law. For the Institutions, I know well there be books of introductions (wherewith students begin) of good worth, especially Littleton and Fitzberbert's Natura brevium; but they are no ways of the nature of an institution; the office whereof is to be a key and general preparation to the reading of the course. And principally it ought to have two properties; the one a perspicuous and clear order or method; and the other, an universal latitude or comprehension, that the students may have a little pre-notion of every thing, like a model towards a great building. For the treatise De regulis juris, I hold it, of all other things, the most important to the health (as I may term it) and good institutions of any laws: it is indeed like the ballast of a ship, to keep all upright and stable want I have seen little in this kind, either in our law, or other laws, that fatisfieth me. The naked rule or maxim doth not the effect It must be made useful by good differences, ampliations, and limitations, warranted by good authorities; and this not by raising up of quotations and references, but by discourse and

This Constitution of Reporters I obtained of the King after Lwas Chancellor; and there are two appointed with 100 1. a year spiece stipend,

deduce-

deducement in a just tractate. In this I have travelled myfelf, at the first more curforily, fince with more diligence, and will go on with it, if God and your Majesty will give me leave. And I do affure your Majesty, I am in good hope, that when Sir Edward Coke's reports, and my rules and decisions shall come to posterity, there will be (whatfoever is now thought) question, who was the greater lawyer? For the books of the terms of the law there is a poor one but I wish a diligent one, wherein should be comprised not only the exposition of the terms of law, but of the words of all antient records and precedents.

For the abridgments I could wish, if it were possible, that none might use them, but such as had read the course first, that they might serve for repertories to learned lawyers, and not to make a lawyer in halte; but fince that cannot be, I with there were a good abridgment composed of the two that are extant, and in better order.

much for the common law.

be

e be

ant-

The

for

und

re-

fet-

the

ee;

a

rms

vell

tu-

ton

are

of-

ra-

al-

er-0nat

ry or

0as

VS:

all

his

la-

ot

if-

ed

up

nd

ter

ear

C-

Statute Law.

FOR the reforming and recompiling of the sta-

tute law, it consisteth of four parts.

1. THE first, to discharge the books of those statutes, whereas the case, by alteration of time, is vanished: as Lombards, Jews, Gauls half-pence, &c. Those may nevertheless remain in the libraries for antiquities, but no reprinting of them. The like of statutes long fince expired and clearly repealed; for if the repeal be doubtful, it must be so propounded to the parliament.

2. THE next is, to repeal all statutes which are lleeping and not of use, but yet snaring and in force; in some of those it will perhaps be requilite to substitute some more reasonable law instead

of

of them agreeable to the time; in others a simple repeal may fuffice.

3. THE third, that the grievousness of the penalty in many statutes be mitigated, though the

ordinances stand.

4. THE last is, the reducing of concurrent statutes heaped one upon another to one clear and uniform law. Towards this there hath been already, upon my motion, and your Majesty's direction, a great deal of good pains taken; my Lord Hobart, myfelf, Serjeant Finch, Mr. Heneage Finch, Mr. Nove, Mr. Hackwell, and others, whose labours being of a great bulk, it is not fit now to trouble your Majesty with any further particularity therein gonly by this you may perceive the work is already advanced but because this part of the work, which concerneth the statute laws, must of necessity come to parliament, and the houses will best like that which themselves guide, and the persons that themselves employ, the way were to imitate the precedent of the commissioners for the canon laws in 27 Hen. VIII. and 4 Edw. VI. and the commissioners for the union of the two realms, primo of your Majesty, and so to have the commissioners named by both houses; yet not with a precedent power to conclude, but only to prepare and propound to parliament this is the best way, I conceive, to accomplish this excellent work, of honour to your Majesty's times, and of good to all times; which I submit to your Majesty's better judgment.

giv

pe

lo th

> te hi of th do to

AN

F ER

King JAMES,

OF

GEST

To be made of the

Laws of ENGLAND.

Most Excellent Sovereign,

MONGST the degrees and acts of fovereign, or rather heroical honour, the first or second is the person and merit of a lawgiver. Princes that govern well are fathers of the people: But if a Father breed his fon well, or allow him well while he liveth, but leave him nothing at his death, whereby both he and his children, and his childrens children may be the better, furely the care and piety of a father is not in him complete. So Kings, if they make a portion of an age happy by their good government, yet if they do not make testaments (as God Almighty doth) whereby a perpetuity of good may descend to their country, they are but mortal and transi-

tory

pethe

iple

ftaand aldi-

ord ncb, ours

uble ere-

alork,

effibest

lons tate

non the

ms, omvith

pare ay,

of to

bet-

N

Ó

b

tl

e

er

th

ga

ar

go

na

tic

is

fo

CO

the

hir

am

exa

and

to

Pin

Con

bes

are

tha

pre

the

laft

tory benefactors. Domitian, a few days before he died, dreamed that a golden head did rife upon the nape of his neck: which was truly performed in the golden age that followed his times for five fuccessions. But Kings, by giving their subjects good laws, may (if they will) in their own time, join and graft this golden head upon their own necks after their death. Nay, they may make Nabuchodonozor's image of monarchy golden from head to foot. And if any of the meaner fort of politicks, that are fighted only to fee the worst of things, think, that laws are but cobwebs, and that good Princes will do well without them, and bad will not stand much upon them; the discourse is neither good nor wife. For certain it is, that good laws are some bridle to bad Princes, and as a very wall about government. And if tyrants fometime make a breach into them, yet they mollify even tyranny itself, as Solon's laws did the tyranny of Pisistratus: and then commonly they get up again, upon the first advantage of better times. Other means to perpetuate the memory and merits of fovereign Princes are inferior to this. Buildings of temples, tombs, palaces, theatres, and the like, are honourable things, and look big upon posterity: But Constantine the Great gave the name well to those works, when he used to call Trajan that was a great builder, Parietaria, wall-flower, because his name was upon so many walls: So if that be the matter, that a King would turn wall-flower, or pellitory of the wall, with cost he may. Adrian's vein was better, for his mind was to wrestle a fall with time, and being a great progressor through all the Roman Empire, whenever he found any decays of bridges, or highways, or cuts of rivers and fewers, or walls, or banks, or the like, he gave substantial order for their repair with the better. He gave also multitudes of charters and liberties for the comfort of corporations and companies in decay: so that his bounty did ftrive

nc

ed

ve

e,

vn

ke

om

of

of

nat

ad

rfe

nat

as

nts

ol

the

ney

eta

no-

to

res,

big

ave

to

ria,

any

uld

cost

ind

reat

nen-

ays,

or,

pair

har-

did trive

frive with the ruins of time. But yet this, though it were an excellent disposition, went but in effect to the cases and shells of a commonwealth. It was nothing to virtue or vice. A bad man might indifferently take the benefit and ease of his ways and bridges as well as a good; and bad People might purchase good charters. Surely the better works of perpetuity in Princes, are those that wash the inside of the cup. Such as are foundations of colleges and lectures for learning and education of youth; likewise foundations and institutions of orders and fraternities, for nobleness, enterprise, and obedience, and the like. But yet these also are but like plantations of orchards and gardens, in plots and spots of ground here and there; they do not till over the whole kingdom and make it fruitful, as doth the establishing of good laws and ordinances, which makes a whole nation to be as a well ordered college or foundation.

This kind of work in the memory of times, is rare enough to shew it excellent; and yet not to rare as to make it suspected for impossible, inconvenient, or unfafe. Moses, that gave laws to the Hebrews, because he was the scribe of God himself, is fitter to be named for honour's sake to other law-givers, than to be numbred or ranked amonst them. Minos, Lycurgus, and Solon, are examples for themes of grammar scholars. For ancient perionages and characters now adays use to wax children again; though that parable of Pindarus be true, the best thing is water: for common and trivial things are many times the best, and rather despised upon pride, because they are vulgar, than upon cause or use. Certain it is, that the laws of those three law-givers had great prerogatives. The first of fame, because they were the pattern amongst the Grecians: The second of lalting, for they continued longest without alteration: The third, of a spirit of reviver, to be of-

ten oppressed, and often restored.

Amongst the seven kings of Rome sour were law-givers: for it is most true, that a discourser of Italy saith, There was never state so well swaddled in the infancy, as the Roman was by the virtue of their first Kings; which was a principal cause of the wonderful growth of that state in after times.

THE Decemvirs laws were laws upon laws, not the original; for they grafted laws of Gracia, upon Roman stock of laws and customs: But such was their fuccefs, as the twelve tables which they compiled were the main body of the laws which framed and wielded the great body of that estate. These lasted a long time, with some supplementals and the Pretorian edicts in Albo; which were, in respect of laws, as writing tables in respect of brass; the one to be put in and out, as the other is permanent. Lucius Cornelius Sylla reformed the laws of Rome: For that man had three fingularities, which never tyrant had but he; That he was a law-giver; that he took part with the nobility, and that he turned private man, not upon fear, but upon confidence.

V

n

ti

f

fe

W

ai

P

de

bo

m

W

fa

th

th

CO

th

ni

th

of

ca

gr

ha

CÆSAR long after defired to imitate him only in the first, for otherwise he relied upon new men; and for refigning his power Seneca deferibeth him right: Cæsar gladium citò condidit, nunquan posuit. Casar soon sheathed his sword, but never put it off. And himself took it upon him, faying in fcorn of Sylla's refignation; Sylla nescivit literas, dictare non potuit, Sylla knew no letters, he could not dictate. But for the part of a law-giver, Cicero giveth him the attribute; Cafar si ab co quæreretur, quid egisset in toga; leges se respondisset multas & præclaras tulisse; if you had asked Cafar what he did in the gown, he would have answered, that he made many excellent laws. His nephew Augustus did tread the fame

of-

ere

fer

he

pal in

not

upuch

hey

ich

ate. ien-

ere,

ther the

lari-

no-

ipon

him

upon a de-

didit,

vord,

upon Sylla

w no

Cæ-

leges

you

, he

y ex-

d the

fame

fame steps, but with deeper print, because of his long reign in peace; whereof one of the poets of his time saith,

Pace datâ terris, animum ad civilia vertit Jura suum; legesq; tulit justissimus author.

FROM that time there was such a race of wit and authority between the commentaries and decisions of the lawyers, and the edicts of the Emperors, as both laws and lawyers were out of breath. Whereupon fustinian in the end recompiled both, and made a body of laws such as might be wielded, which himself calleth gloriously, and yet not above truth, the edifice or structure of a sacred temple of justice, built indeed out of the former ruins of books, as materials, and some novel constitutions of his own.

In Athens they had Sexviri, (as Æschines obferveth) which were standing commissioners, who did watch to discern what laws waxed improper for the times, and what new law did in any branch cross a former law, and so ex officio propounded their repeal.

KING Edgar collected the laws of this kingdom, and gave them the strength of a faggot bound, which formerly were dispersed; which was more glory to him than his failing about this island with a potent fleet: for that was, as the scripture faith, Via navis in mari; the way of a ship in the sea, it vanished, but this lasteth. Alphonso the wife, (the ninth of that name) King of Caftile, compiled the digest of the laws of Spain, intitled the Siete Partidas; an excellent work which he finished in seven Years. And as Tacitus noteth well, that the capitol, though built in the beginnings of Rome, yet was fit for the great monarchy that came after; fo that building of laws sufficeth the greatness of the empire of Spain, which fince hath enfued.

LEWIS XI. had it in his mind (though he performed it not) to have made one constant law of France, extracted out of the civil Roman law, and the customs of provinces which are various, and the kings edicts, which with the French are statutes. Surely he might have done well, if, like as he brought the crown (as he said himself) from Page, so he had brought his People from Lackey; not to run up and down for their laws to the civil law, and the ordinances and the customs, and the discretions of courts and discourses

of philosophers, as they use to do.

King Harry VIII. in the twenty feventh year of his reign, was authorized by parliament to nominate thirty two commissioners, part ecclesiaffical, and part temporal, to purge the canon law, and to make it agreeable to the law of God, and the law of the land; but it took not effect: for the acts of that king were commonly rather proffers and fames, than either well grounded, or well purfued: but I doubt, I err in producing fo many examples. For as Cicero faid to Cæsar, so may I fay to your Majesty, Nil vulgare te dignum videri possit. Though indeed this well understood is far from vulgar: For that the laws of the most kingdoms and states, have been like buildings of many pieces, and patched up from time to time according to occasions, without frame or model.

Now for the laws of England, (if I shall speak my opinion of them without partiality either to my profession or country,) for the matter and nature of them, I hold them wise, just and moderate laws: they give to God, they give to Cæsar, they give to the subject what appertaineth. It is true they are as mixt as our language, compounded of British, Roman, Saxon, Danish, Norman customs. And surely as our language is thereby so much the richer, so our laws are likewise by that

mixture the more complete.

E

u

p

fa

th

ei

fc

m

fe

ca

 $\mathbf{f}_{\mathbf{0}}$

ad

of

Ы

no

te

pe

th

NEITHER doth this attribute less to them, than those that would have them to have stood out the fame in all mutations. For no tree is so good first set, as by transplanting and grafting. member what happened to Callifibenes, that followed Alexander's court, and was grown into fome displeasure with him because he could not well brook the Persian adoration. At a supper which with the Grecians was a great part talk,) he was defired (the King being present) because he was an eloquent man, to speak of some theme, which he did; and chose for his theme, the praise of the Macedonian nation, which though it were but a filling thing to praise men to their faces, yet he performed it with fuch advantage of truth, and avoidance of flattery, and with fuch life, as was much applauded by the hearers, The King was the less pleased with it, not loving the man, and by way of discountenance said: It was easy to be a good orator in a pleasing theme. But, faith he to him, turn your style, and tell us now of our faults, that we may have the profit, and not you the praise only; which he prefently did with fuch quickness, that Alexander faid, That malice made him eloquent then, as the theme had done before. I shall not fall into either of these extremes, in this subject of the laws of England; I have commended them before for the matter, but furely they ask much amendment for the form; which to reduce and perfect, I hold to be one of the greatest dowries that can be conferr'd upon this kingdom; which work, for the excellency, as it is worthy your Majesty's act and times, so it hath some circumstance of propriety agreeable to your person. God hath blessed your Majesty with posterity, and I am not of opinion that Kings that are barren are fittest to supply perpetuity of generations, by perpetuity of noble acts; but contrariwife, that they that leave posterity are the more interested in the B 3 carq

HER

lie

nt

an

ri-

ich

if,

lf)

om

WS

cu-

fes

ear

to

efi-

non

od,

for

of-

vell

any

y I

deri

far

ing-

any

cor-

eak

r to

na-

ode-

far,

It is

and-

cu-

y fo

that

care of future times; that as well their progeny, as their people may participate of their merit.

Your Majesty is a great master in justice and judicature, and it were pity the fruit of that your virtue, should not be transmitted to the ages to come. Your Majesty also reigneth in learned times, the more (no doubt) in regard of your own perfection in learning, and your patronage thereof. And it hath been the mishap of works of this nature, that the less learned time hath (sometimes) wrought upon the more learned, which now will not be fo. As for my felf, the law was my profession, to which I am a debtor: some little helps I have of other arts, which may give form to matter; and I have now (by God's merciful chastisement, and by his special providence,) time and leifure to put my talent, or half talent, or what it is, to fuch exchanges as may perhaps exceed the interest of an active life. Therefore, as in the beginning of my troubles, I made offer to your Majesty to take pains in the story of England, and in compiling a method and digest of your laws, so have I performed the first (which rested but upon my self,) in some part; and I do in all humbleness renew the offer of this later (which will require help and affiftance) to your Majesty, if it shall stand with your good pleasure to employ my service therein.

THE

THE

ELEMENTS

OFTHE

COMMON LAWS

OF

ENGLAND.

CONTAINING

- I. A Collection of some principal Rules and Maxims of the Common Law; with their Latitude and Extent.
- II. The Use of the Common Law, for prefervation of our Perfons, Goods, and good Names; according to the Laws and Customs of this Land.

TO HER

Sacred MAJESTY.

Do here most humbly present and dedicate to your facred Majesty a sheaf and cluster of fruit of the good and favourable season, which by the influence, of your happy government we enjoy; for if it be true that silent leges inter arma, it is also as true, that your Majesty

B 4

is

HE

ly,

nd

nat ges red

our age rks

ath ed, the

or:

od's ovihalf

nay life.

s, I

the

hod

the

ome

mn-

your

is in a double respect the life of our Laws; once, because without your authority they are but litera mortua; and again because you are the life of our peace, without which laws are put to filence, and as the vital spirits do not only maintain and move the body, but also contend to perfect and renew it; fo your facred Majesty, who is anima legis, doth not only give unto your laws force and vigour but also hath been careful of their amendment and reforming; wherein your Majesty's proceeding may be compared, as in that part of your government (for if your government be confidered in all the parts, it is incomparable) with the former doings of the most excellent Princes that ever have reigned, whose study altogether hath been always to adorn and honour times of peace, with the amendment of the policy of their laws. Of this proceeding in Augustus Casar the testimony yet remains.

Pace datâ terris, animum ad civilia vertit Jura suum; legesq; tulit justissimus author.

Hence was collected the difference between gesta in armis, and acta in toga, whereof he disputeth thus:

ECQUID est quod tam proprie dici possit actum ejus, qui togatus in republica cum potestate imperioque versatus sit, quam lex? quære acta Gracchi; leges Semproniæ proferantur: quære Syllæ, Corneliæ: quid? Cn. Pom tertius consulatus, in quibus actis consistit? nempe in legibus: a Cæsare ipso si quæreres quidnam egisset in urbe, & in toga, leges multas se responderet & præclaras tulisse.

THE same desire long after did spring in the Emperor Justinian, being rightly called Ultimus Imperatorum Romanorum, who having peace in the heart of his empire, and making his Wars prosperously in the remote places of his dominions by his lieutenants, chose it for a monument and ho-

nour

no

la

in of

an

mi

ex

fha

ye

th

fav

de

tin

of

Ea

the ha

in

Ho

Wa

cen

upo

cip like

tha

the

ftic plo

tha nin

fon

tha

And

mo

Wea

urt

nour of his government, to revise the Roman laws from infinite volumes and much repugnancy, into one competent and uniform corps of law; of which matter himself doth speak gloriously, and yet aptly, calling of it, proprium & fanctiffimum templum justitiæ consecratum: a work of great excellency indeed, as may well appear in that France, Italy, and Spain, which have long fince shaken off the yoke of the Roman Empire, do yet nevertheless continue to use the policy of that law: but more excellent had the work been, fave that the more ignorant and obscure time undertook to correct the more learned and flourishing. time. To conclude with the domestick example of one of your Majesty's royal Ancestors: King Edward I. your Majesty's famous progenitor, and the principal law-giver of our nation, after he had in his younger years given himself satisfaction in the glory of arms, by the enterprise of the Holy Land, and having inward peace, (otherwise than for the invasions which himself made upon Wales and Scotland, parts far distant from the centre of the realm;) he bent himself to endow his state with fundry notable and fundamental laws, upon which the government hath ever fince principally rested: of this example, and others the like, two reasons may be given; the one, because that Kings, which either by the moderation of their natures, or the maturity of their years and judgment, do temper their magnanimity with justice, do wisely consider and conceive of the exploits of ambitious wars, as actions rather great than good; and so distasted with that course of winning honour, they convert their minds rather to do somewhat for the better uniting of human society, than for the dissolving or disturbing of the same. Another reason is, because times of peace for the most part drawing with them abundance of wealth, and finesse of cunning, do draw also in further consequence multitude of suits and controversies

ur erhe at

e,

ra

ur

nd

ve

W

is,

vi-

nt

d-

th ce, WS. 10-

fa eth

um 10bi: æ:

tis res Se

he nus he of-

by 10-

ur

troversies, and abuses of law by evasions and devices; which inconveniences in such time growing more general, do more instantly solicit for the amendment of laws to restrain and repress them.

Your Majesty's reign having been blessed from the highest with inward peace, and falling into an age, wherein if science be increased, conscience is rather decayed; and if mens wits be great, their wills be greater; and wherein also laws are multiplied in number, and flackened in vigour and execution; it was not possible but that not only fuits in law should multiply and increase, (whereof a great part are always unjust) but also that all the indirect courses and practises to abuse law and justice should have been much attempted and put in ure, which no doubt had bred greater enormities, had they not by the royal policy of your Majesty, by the censure and foresight of your Council-table and Star-chamber, and by the gravity and integrity of your Benches, been repressed and restrained; for it may be truly obferved, that as concerning frauds in contracts, bargains, and affurances, and abuses of laws by delays, covins, vexations, and corruptions in informers, jurors, ministers of justice, and the like, there have been fundry excellent statutes made in your Majesty's time, more in number, and more politick in provision, than in any your Majesty's predecessor's times.

But I am an unworthy witness to your Majesty of an higher intention and project, both by that which was published by your chancellor in full parliament from your royal mouth, in the five and thirtieth of your happy reign; and much more by that which I have been since vouchsafed to understand from your Majesty, imparting a purpose for these many years insused into your Majesty's Breast, to enter into a general amendment of the states of your laws and to reduce them to more brevity and certainty, that the

great

gr

lai

vi

ve

ve

CO

ftı

th

ne

lie

ftr

fo

ch

ne

int

im

th

ce

A

ve

ce

of

Cat

as

M

jef

fty

Bu

rie

ble

ral

me

lab

the

ac

Wa

the

fuc

ot

the

deowthe m. rom o an ence eat, are and only reof t all law and r ey of it of the reobacts, s by inlike, made and Ma-Mah by or in e five nuch fafed ng a your nendeduce t the

great

great hollowness and unsafety in affurances of lands and Goods may be strengthened, the swerving penalties that lie upon many fut jects removed, the execution of many profitable laws revived, the judge better directed in his fentence, the counsellor better warranted in his council, the fludent eased in his reading, the contentious suitor that feeketh but vexation difarmed, and the honest suitor that seeketh but to obtain his right relieved; which purpose and intention, as it did strike me with great admiration when I heard it, fo it might be acknowledged to be one of the most chosen works, and of the highest merit and beneficence towards the subject, that ever entered into the mind of any king; greater than we can imagine, because the impersections and dangers of the laws are covered under the clemency and excellent temper of your Majesty's government. And though there be rare precedents of it in government, as it cometh to pais in things to excellent, there being no precedent full in view but of Justinian, yet I must say as Cicero said to Cæsar, Nibil vulgare te dignum videri potest; and as it is no doubt a precious feed fown in your Majesty's heart by the hand of God's divine Majesty, so I hope, in the maturity of your Majesty's own time, it will come up and bear fruit. But to return thence whither I have been carried; observing in your Majesty, upon notable proofs and grounds, this disposition in general of a prudent and royal regard to the amendment of your laws, and having by my private labour and travel collected many of the grounds of the common laws, the better to establish and settle a certain fense of law, which doth now too much waver in incertainty, I conceived the nature of the subject, besides my particular obligation, was fuch, as I ought not to dedicate the same to any other than to your facred Majesty; both because though the collection be mine, yet the laws are yours;

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORY.

yours; and because it is your Majesty's reign that hath been as a goodly seasonable spring-wheather to the advancing of all excellent arts of peace. And so concluding with a prayer answerable to the present argument, which is, that God will continue your Majesty's reign in a happy and renowned peace, and that he will guide both your policy and arms to purchase the continuance of it with surety and honour, I most humbly crave pardon, and commend your Majesty to the divine preservation.

Your facred MAJESTY'S

most humble and obedient

subject and servant,

FRANCIS BACON.

ſë

th

m

to

da

gr

pl

th

of

(if

fho

th wi

con

thr by

wh cor wa aut ly cafe the

the mo:

our laid fett be o

ness

gun

redi

tial

gene

very

and

kind

civil

THE

PREFACE.

Hold every man a debtor to his profession; from the which as men of course do seek to receive countenance and profit, so ought they of duty to endeavour themselves by way of amends to be a help and ornament thereunto. This is performed in some degree by the honest and liberal practice of a profession, when men shall carry a respect not to descend into any course that is corrupt and unworthy thereof, and preserve

ferve themselves free from the abuses wherewith the fame profession is noted to be infected: but much more is this performed if a man be able to visit and strengthen the roots and foundation of the science it felf; thereby not only gracing it in reputation and dignity, but also amplifying it in perfection and fubstance. Having therefore from the beginning come to the study of the laws of this realm, with a defire no lefs (if I could attain unto it) that the same laws should be the better for my industry, than that my felf should be the better for the knowledge of them: I do not find that by mine own travel, without the help of authority, I can in any kind confer so profitable an addition unto that science, as by collecting the rules and grounds difperfed throughout the body of the same laws; for hereby no small light will be given in new cases, wherein the authorities do square and vary, to confirm the law, and to make it received one way, and in cases wherein the law is cleared by authority; yet nevertheless to see more profoundly into the reason of such judgments and ruled cases, and thereby to make more use of them for the decision of other cases more doubtful; so that the incertainty of law, which is the principal and most just challenge that is made to the laws of our nation at this time, will, by this new strength laid to the foundation, be somewhat the more fettled and corrected: neither will the use hereof be only in deciding of doubts, and helping foundness of judgment, but further in gracing of argument, in correcting unprofitable subtlety, and reducing the fame to a more found and fubstantial sense of law, in reclaiming vulgar errors, and generally the amendment in some measure of the very nature and complextion of the whole law; and therefore the conclusions of reasons of this kind are worthily and aptly called by a great civilian legum leges, laws of laws, for that many placita

gn

g-

of

er-

od

ру

oth

nce

bly

the

N.

10

fion; ek to they of a-This and shall ourse

pre-

placita legum, that is, particular and politive learns ings of laws do eafily decline from a good temper of justice, if they be not rectified and governed

n

iı

lo

p

ra

fi

fc

po

la

ot

th

ro

ho

m

tw

ve

th

lav

fu

as

the

on

in

rer

to

rul

kn

Wh thr

fee

fo

diff

Wit

ma Cev

all

be

by fuch rules.

Now for the manner of fetting down of them, I have in all points, to the best of my understanding and forefight, applied my felf not to that which might feem most for the oftentation of mine one wit or knowledge, but to that which may yield most use and profit to the students

and profesfors of our laws.

AND therefore, whereas these rules are some of them ordinary and vulgar, that now ferve but for grounds and plain fongs to the more shallow and impertinent fort of arguments; other of them are gathered and extracted out of the harmony and congruity of cases, and are such as the wifest and deepest fort of lawyers have in judgment and use, though they be not able many

times to express and fet them down.

For the former fort, which a man that should rather write to raise an high opinion of himself, than to instruct others, would have omitted, as trite and within every Man's compass; yet nevertheless I have not affected to neglect them, but have chosen out of them such as I thought good: I have reduced them to a true application, limiting and defining their bounds, that they may not be read upon at large, but restrained to a point of difference: for as both in the law and other sciences, the handling of questions by common-place without aim or application is the weakest; so yet nevertheless many common principles and generalities are not to be contemned, if they be well derived and deduced into particulars, and their limits and exclusions duly affigned; for there be two contrary faults and extremities in the debating and fifting out of the law, which may be best noted in two several manner of arguments: Some argue upon general grounds, and come not near

near the point in question; others, without laying any foundation of a ground or difference, do loosely put cases, which though they go near the point, yet being put so scattered, prove not, but rather serve to make the law appear more doubtful, than to make it more plain.

SECONDLY, whereas some of these rules have a concurrence with the civil Roman law, and fome others a diversity, and many times an opposition, such grounds which are common to our law and theirs I have not affected to difguise into other words than the civilians use, to the end they might feem invented by me, and not borrowed or translated from them: No, but I took hold of it as a matter of greater authority and majesty to see and consider the concordance between the laws penn'd, and as it were dictated verbatim by the same reason: on the other side, the diversities between the civil Roman rules of law and ours, happening either when there is fuch an indifferency of reason so equally ballanced as the one law embraceth one course, and the other the contrary, and both just, after either is once positive and certain, or where the laws vary in regard of accommodating the law to the different confiderations of estate, I have not omitted to fet down.

THIRDLY, whereas I could have digested these rules into a certain method or order, which I know would have been more admired, as that which would have made every particular rule through coherence and relation unto other rules seem more cunning and deep, yet I have avoided so to do, because this delivering of knowledge in distinct and dis-joined aphorisms, doth leave the wit of man more free to turn and toss, and make use of that which is so delivered to more several purposes and applications; for we see that all the antient wisdom and science was wont to be delivered in that form, as may be seen by the parables

me not

arn-

per

rned

der-

t to

n of hich

dents

fome

e but

allow

them

nony

judgmany

hould

mself,

ed, as

ever-

good:

limi-

may

to a and o-

com-

weak-

nciples f they

s, and

r there

he de-

ments:

parables of Soloman, and by the aphorisms of Hippocrates, and the moral verses of Theognis and Phocylides, but chiefly the president of the civil law, which hath taken the same course with their

rules, did confirm me in my opinion.

FOURTHLY, whereas I know very well it would have been more plaufible and more current, if the rules, with the expositions of them, had been fet down either in Latin or in English, that the harshness of the language might not have disgraced the matter, and that civilians, statesmen, scholars, and other fensible men might not have been barred from them; yet I have forfaken that grace and ornament of them, and only taken this course: the rules themselves I have put in Latin, not purified further than the propriety of the terms of the law would permit; which language I chose as the briefest to contrive the rules compendiously, the aptest for memory, and of the greatest authority and majesty to be avouched and alledged in argument: and for the expositions and distinctions, I have retained the peculiar language of our law, because it should not be singular among the books of the same science, and because it is most familiar to the students and professors thereof, and because that it is most signisticant to express conceits of law; and to conclude, it is a language wherein a man shall not be inticed to hunt after words, but matter; and for the excluding of any other than professed lawyers, it was better manners to exclude them by the strangeness of the language than by the obscurity of the conceit; which is as though it had been written in no private and retired language, yet by those that are not lawyers, would for the most part not have been understood, or, which is worse, mistaken.

FIFTHLY, whereas I might have made more flourish and ostentation of reading, to have vouched the authorities, and sometimes to have enforced or

noted

al

m

m

tle

th

th

ge he

as

tha

of boo

tifi

tho

wei

and

to

fubi

con

not

by thou

for

may

cont

fon, thor

prov wor

of n

auth

time.

accou

L

of

nd

vil

eir

ıld

he

et

h-

he

nd

ed

nd

fe:

ou-

of

ofe uf-

test

dg-

di-

age

a-

be-

ro-

ifi-

ide,

in-

for

ers,

the

rity

een

yet

nost

rfe,

lou-

hed

d or oted noted upon them, yet I have abstained from that alfo; and the reason is, because I judged it a matter undue and preposterous to prove rules and maxims, wherein I had the example of Mr. Littleton, and Mr. Fitzberbert, whose writings are the institutions of the laws of England: whereof the one forbeareth to vouch any authority altogether; the other never reciteth a book, but when he thinketh the case so weak of credit in it self, as it needs a furety; and these two I did far more esteem than Mr. Perkins or Mr. Stamford that have done the contrary: well will it appear to those that are learned in the laws, that many of the cases are judged cases, either within the books or of fresh report, and most of them fortified by judged cases, and similitude of reason: though in some few cases I did intend expresly to weigh down the authority by evidence of reason, and therein rather to correct the law, than either to footh a received error, or by unprofitable fubtlety which corrupteth the fense of law, to reconcile contrarieties. For these reasons I resolved not to derogate from the authority of the rules, by vouching of any of the authority of the cases. though in mine one copy I had them quoted: for although the meanners of mine own Person may now at first extenuate the authority of this collection, and that every man is adventurous to controul; 'yet furely according to Gamduel's reaion, if it be of weight, time will fettle and authorife it; if it be light and weak, time will reprove it: fo that to conclude, you have here a work without any glory of affected novelty, or of method, or of language, or of quotations and authorities, dedicated only to use, and submitted only to the censure of the learned, and chiefly of time.

LASTLY, there is one point above all the rest I account the most material for making these rea-

fons indeed profitable and instructing; which is, that they be not fet down alone like short dark oracles, which every Man will be content still to allow to be true, but in the mean time they give little light or direction; but I have attended them, a matter not practifed, no not in the Civil law to any purpose; and for want whereof indeed, the rules are but as proverbs, and many times plain fallacies, with a clear and perspicuous expofition, breaking them into cases, and opening them with distinctions, and sometimes shewing the reasons above whereupon they depend, and the affinity they have with other rules. And tho' I have thus, with as good discretion and forefight as I could, ordered this work, and as I might fay, without all colours or shews, husbanded it best to profit; yet nevertheless not wholly trusting to mine own judgment, having collected three hundred of them, I thought good, before I brought them all into form, to publish fome few, that by the taste of other mens opinions, in this first, I might receive either approbation in mine own course, or better advice for the altering of the other which remain; for it is great reason that that, which is intended to the profit of others, should be guided by the conceits of others.

THE

In

th

ध

wh car her thi and imp far. course

or yet of but

THE

AXIMS

OF THE

In jure non remota causa sed proxima spectatur.

T were infinite for the law to judge the causes of causes, and their impulsions one of another; therefore it contenteth it self with the immediate cause, and judgeth of acts by that, without looking to any farther degree.

As if an annuity be granted pro confilio impenso 6 H. 8. Dy. & impendendo, and the grantee commit treason whereby he is imprisoned, so that the grantor cannot have access unto him for his counsel, yet nevertheless the annuity is not determined by this non feasance; yet it was the grantee's act and default to commit the treaton whereby the imprisonment grew: but the law looketh not so far, but excuseth him, because the not giving counfel was compulfory, and not voluntary, in regard of the imprisonment.

So if a parson make a lease, and be deprived Litt. cap. or refign, the successors shall avoid the lease; and 2 H. 4. 3. yet the cause of deprivation, and more strongly 26 H. 8. 2. of a refignation, moved from the Party himself: but the law regardeth not that, because the Ad-

C 2

mission

HE

139

ark to rive

ded ivil inmes

poning ving and tho' oreight

ed it

rufthree

re I few,

this

mine g of

eason of o-

ers.

mission of the new incumbent is the act of the ordinary.

5 H. 7 25.

So if I be feifed of an advowing in gross, and an usurpation be had against me, and at the next avoidance I usurp arere, I shall be remitted, and yet the presentation, which is the act remote, is mine own act; but the admission of my clerk, whereby the inheritance is reduced to me, is the act of the ordinary.

So if I covenant with 7. S. a Stranger, in confideration of natural love to my fon, to stand feised to the use of the said 7. S. to the intent he shall infeoff my Son; by this no use ariseth to 7. S. because the law doth respect that there is no immediate confideration between me and 7. S.

So if I be bound to enter into a statute before the mayor of the staple at such a day, for the fecurity of a hundred pound, and the obligee, before the day, accept of me a leafe of an house in satisfaction; this is no plea in debt upon my obligation, and yet the end of that statute was but fecurity of money: but because the entring into this statute it felf, which is the immediate act whereunto I am bound, is a corporal act which lieth not in fatisfaction, therefore the law taketh no consideration that the remote intent was for money.

So if I make a * feoffment in fee, upon condition that the feoffee shall infeoff over, and the feossee be desseised, and a descent cast, and then the feoffee bind himself in a statute, which statute is discharged before the recovery of the land, this is no breach of the condition, because the land was never liable to the statute, and the polfibility that it should be liable upon the recovery,

the law doth not respect.

al

n

th

er

re

an

fai

pa

m

for

pa

he

the

and

rup

Kn

in

feo

wif

feo

nan

mir

beca

and

thei

and

prep

him

flies.

upor

if th it sh

the

exec

I

^{*} M. 40 & 41 El. Julius Winnington's Case, ore report per le trefreverend Judge, le Sur Coke, lib. 2.

So if I enfeoff two, upon condition to enfeoff, and one of them take a Wife, the condition is not broken, and yet there is a remote possibility that the jointenant may die, and then the feme is entitled to dower.

So if a man purchase land in fee-simple, and die without issue; in the first degree the law respecteth dignity of sex and not proximity; and therefore the remote heir on the part of the father, shall have it before the near heir on the part of the mother: but in any degree paramount the first the law respecteth not, and therefore the near heir by the grandmother, on the part of the father, shall have it before the remote heir of the grandfather on the part of the father.

THIS rule faileth in covenous acts, which though they be conveyed through many degrees and reaches, yet the law taketh heed to the corrupt beginning, and counteth all as one entire act.

As if a feoffment be made of lands held by Knights-service to 7. S. upon condition that within a certain time he shall infeoff J. D. which feoffment to 7. D. shall be to the use of the wife of the first feoffor for her Jointure, &c. this feoffment is within the Statute of 32 H. VIII. nam dolus circuitu non purgatur.

In like manner this rule holdeth not in criminal acts, except they have a full interruption; because when the intention is matter of substance, and that which the law doth principally behold, there the first motive will be principally regarded, and not the last impulsion. As if 7. S. of malice prepensed discharge a pistol at 7. D. and misseth him, whereupon he throws down his piftol and flies, and 7. D. pursueth him to kill him, whereupon he turneth and killeth J. D. with a dagger; if the law should consider the last impulsive cause, it should say that it was in his own defence; but the law is otherwise, for it is but a pursuance and execution of the first murtherous intent.

C 3

BUT

t per le

So

the

and

the

ed,

ote,

erk,

the

in

and

t he

1 to

e is

7. S.

fore

the

igee,

oute

my

s but

into

e act

vhich

aketh

s for

ondi-

d the

then

n sta-

land,

e the

pof-

very,

44 Ed. 3.

BUT if 7. S. had fallen down his dagger drawn, and 7. D. had fallen by hafte upon his dagger, there 7. D. had been felo de fe, and 7. S. shall go quit.

A L so you may not confound the act with the execution of the act; nor the entire act with the last part, or the consummation of the act.

Lit. cap. de disc.

FOR if a diffeifor enter into religion, the immediate cause is from the party, though the defcent is cast in law; but the law doth but execute the act which the party procureth, and therefore the descent shall not bind, & sic è con-

21 Eliz.

Dy.

24 H. 8. fo. 4.

If a leafe for years be made rendring a rent, and the leffee make a feoffment of part, and the leffor enter, the immediate cause is from the law in refpect of the forfeiture, though the entry be the act of the party: but that is but the pursuance and putting in execution of the title which the law giveth; and therefore the rent or condition shall be appointed.

So in the binding of a right by a descent, you are to consider the whole time from the disseisin to the descent cast; and if at all times the per-

fon be not privileged, the descent binds.

9 H. 7. 24. 3 & 4 P. & M. Dr. 143.

1.

AND therefore if a feme covert be disseised, and the Baron dieth, and she taketh a new husband, and then the descent is cast: or if a man, that is not infra 4 Maria, be disseised, and he return into England, and go over sea again, and then a descent is cast, this descent bindeth because of the interim when the persons might have entered; and the law respecteth not the state of the person at the last time of the descent cast, but a continuance from the very diffeifed to the de-

So if baron and feme be, and they join in a feoffment of the wife's land, rendring a rent, and the Baron die, and the feme take a new husband

F

to

ir

W

d

la

CC

Ca

te

it

by

an

th

is

th

th

an

be

WI

Wi

dri

the ed

the

ple

un

before any rent day, and he accepteth the rent, the feoffment is affirmed for ever.

er

s.

he

the

m-

de-

xe-

and

011-

and

for

re-

the

ince

the

tion

you

eisin

per-

ifed,

hus

man,

e re-

and

be-

have

te of

, but

de-

in a

and

band

efore

Reg. 2. Non potest adduci exceptio ejusdem rei, cujus petitur dissolutio.

It were impertinent and contrary in it felf, for the law to allow of a plea in bar of fuch matter as is to be defeated by the same suit; for it is included: otherwise a man should never come to the end and effect of his suit, but be cut off in the way.

AND therefore if tenant in tail of a manor, whereunto a villain is regardant, discontinue and die, and the right of the entail descend to the villain himself, who brings a formedon, and the discontinuee pleadeth villainage, this is no plea, because the devesting of the manor, which is the intention of the suit, doth include this plea, because it determineth the villainage.

So if tenant in antient demesne be disseised by the lord, whereby the seigniory is suspended, and the disseise bring his assize in the court of the Lord, frank see is no plea, because the suit is brought to undo the disseissee, and so to revive the seigniory in antient demesne.

So if a man be attainted and executed, and 7 H. 4. 39. the heir bring a writ of error upon the attainder, 7 H. 6. 44. and the corruption of blood by the same attainder be pleaded to interrupt his conveying in the same writ of error; this is no plea, for then he were without remedy ever to reverse the attainder.

So if tenant in tail discontinue for life, ren- 38 Ed. 3. 32. dring a rent, and the issue brings a formedon, and the warranty of his ancestor with assets be pleaded against him, and the assets is laid to be no other but his reversion with the rent; this is no plea, because the formedon which is brought to undo this discontinuance doth inclusively undo

C 4 this

this new reversion in see with the rent thereunto

But whether this rule may take place where the matter of plea is not to be avoided in the same suit but in another suit, is doubtful; and I rather take the law to be that this rule doth extend to such cases, for otherwise the party were at a mischief, in respect the exceptions and bars might be pleaded cross either of them in the contrary suit, and so the party altogether prevented and intercepted to come by his right.

So if a man be attainted by two several attainders, and there is error in them both, there is no reason but that there should be a remedy open for the heir to reverse those attainders being erroneous, as well if they be twenty as one.

And therefore if in a writ of error brought by the heir of one of them, the attainder shall be a plea peremptorily; and so again if in error brought of that other, the former should be a plea, these were to exclude him utterly of his right; and therefore it should be a good replication to say that he hath a writ of error depending of that also, and so the court shall proceed; but no judgment shall be given till both pleas be discussed; and if either plea be found without error, there shall be no reversal either of the one or of the other; and if he discontinue either writ, then it shall be no longer a plea; and so of several outlawries in a personal action.

And this feemeth to me more reasonable, than that generally an outlawry or an attainder should be no plea in a writ of error brought upon a diverse outlawry or an attainder, as 7 H. IV. and 7 H. VI. seem to hold; for that is a remedy too large for the mischief; for there is no reason but if any of the outlawries or attainders be indeed without error, but it should be a peremptory plea to the person in a writ of error as well as in any other action.

in any other action.

But

Eom!

very

ther

beca

chai

begi

may

that

and

the tain

be bonly

livet

his e

clufi

fes a for

fuffe

and bifro

writ fore

of tl

a wr

T

If te

difco

a rer

and

and

tion,

pend

desce

B

to

re

he I

X-

ere

ars

n-

ted

at-

e is

en

er-

ght

nall

ror

a

his

ca-

ing

but dif-

er-

one

her

of

nan

uld

di-

and

fon

in-

np-

vell

UT

But if a man levy a fine fur conusaunce de droit come ceo que il ad de son done, and suffer a recovery of the fame lands, and there be error in them both, he cannot bring error first of the fine, because by the recovery his title of error is difcharged and released in law inclusive, but he must begin with the error upon the recovery (which he may do, because a fine executed barreth no titles that accrue de prisne temps after the fine levied,) and so restore himself to his title of error upon the fine: but so it is not in the former case of the attainder; for a writ of error to a former attainder is not given away by a fecond, except it be by express words of an act of parliament, but only it remaineth a plea to his perfon while he liveth, and to the conveyance of his heir after his death.

But if a man levy a fine where he hath nothing in the land, which inureth by way of conclusion only, and is executory against all purchases and new titles which shall grow to the conusor afterwards, and he purchase the land, and suffer a recovery to the conuse, and in both fine and recovery, there is error; this fine is fanus bifrons, and will look forward, and bar him of his writ of error brought of the recovery; and therefore it will come to the reason of the first case of the attainder, that he must reply that he hath a writ also depending of the same fine, and so demand judgment.

To return to our first purpose, like law it is if tenant in tail of two acres make two several discontinuances to several persons for life, rendring a rent, and bringeth a formedon of both, and in the formedon brought of white acre the reversion and rent reserved upon black acre is pleaded, and so contrary. I take it to be a good replication, that he hath a formedon also upon that depending, whereunto the tenant hath pleaded the descent of the reversion of white acre, and so

neither

neither shall be a bar; and yet there is no doubt but if in a formedon the warranty of tenant in tail with assets be pleaded, it is no replication for the issue to say, that a præcipe dependeth brought by I. S. to evict the assets.

But the former case standeth upon the particu-

lar reason before mentioned.

Reg. 3. Verba fortius accipiuntur contra proferentem.

This rule, that a man's deeds and his words shall be taken strongliest against himself, though it be one of the most common grounds of the law, it is notwithstanding a rule drawn out of the depth of reason; for first it is a school-master of wisdom and diligence in making men watchful in their own business; next it is author of much quiet and certainty, and that in two forts: first, because it favoureth acts and conveyances executed, taking them still beneficially for the grantees and possessors: and secondly, because it makes an end of many questions and doubts about construction of words; for if the labour were only to pick out the intention of the parties, every judge would have a feveral fense; whereas this rule doth give them a fway to take the law more certainly one way.

But this rule, as all other which are very general, is but a found in the air, and cometh in fometimes to help and make up other reasons without any great instruction or direction; except it be duly conceived in point of difference, where it taketh place, and where not; and first we will examine it in grants, and then in pleadings.

THE force of this rule is in three things, in ambiguity of words, in implication of matter, and deducing or qualifying the exposition of such grants as were against the Law, if they were taken according to their words.

AND therefore if I. S. submit himself to arbitrement of all actions and suits between him and

2 R. 3. 18. 21 H. 7. 29.

I. D.

Ī.

fu

ad

bu

ag

ft

fe he

be

ur

ca

ha

ft

m

th

bi

of

an

it

th

th

fo

an

fh

ab

fo

all

et

ye

it

co

lea

th

lea

di

an

I. D. and I. N. it rests ambiguous whether the submission shall be intended collective of joint actions only, or distribute of several actions also; but because the words shall be taken strongliest against I. S. that speaks them, it shall be understood of both; for if I. S. had submitted himself to arbitrement of all actions and suits which he hath now depending, except it be such as are between him and I. D. and I. N. now it shall be understood collective only of joint actions, because in the other case at large, construction was hardest against him that speaks, and in this case strict construction is hardest.

So if I grant ten pounds rent to baron and fe- 8 Aff. ip. 10. me, and if the baron die, that the feme shall have three pounds rent, because these words rest ambiguous whether I intend three pounds by way of increase, or three pounds by way of restraint and abatement of the former rent of ten pounds, it shall be taken strongliest against me that am the grantor, that it is three pounds addition to the ten: but if I had let land to baron and seme for three lives, reserving ten pounds per annum, and if the baron die reserving three pounds, this shall be taken contrary to the former case, to abridge my rent only to three pounds.

So if I demise omnes boscos meos in villa de Dale 14 II, 8. for years, this passeth the soil; but if I demise 21 H. 8. Dr. 19. all my lands in Dale exceptis boscis, this extend-

eth to the trees only, and not to the foil.

So if I fow my lands with corn, and let it for years, the corn passeth to my lessee, if I except it not; but if I make a lease for life to I. S. upon condition that upon request he shall make me a lease for years, and I. S. soweth his ground, and then I make request, I. S. may well make me a lease excepting his corn, and not break the condition.

So if I have free warren in mine own hand, 8 H. 7. and let my land for life, not mentioning the war- 32 13 .6.

rena

words ough f the out of nafter atchor of forts:

r the

use it

about

were

rties,

here-

loubt

it in

n for

ught

ticu-

ntem,

y geeth in easons

; exrence, rft we dings. gs, in natter,

f fuch were

arbin and I. D. ren, yet the lessee by implication shall have the warren discharged and extract during his lease: but if I let the land una cum libera warrenna, excepting white acre, there the warren is not by implication referved unto me either to be enjoyed or extinguished; but the lessee shall have warren against me in white acre.

29 At T. pl. 10.

So if I. S. hold of me by fealty and rent only, and I grant the rent, not speaking of the fealty, yet the fealty by implication shall pass, because my grant shall be taken strongly as of a rent-service, and not of a rent-feck.

44 Ed. 3. 19.

OTHERWISE had it been if the feigniory had been by homage, fealty, and rent, because of the dignity of the fervice, which could not have passed by intendment by the grant of the rent: 26 Aff. pl. 66. but if I be seised of the manor of Dale in fee, whereof I. S. holds by fealty and rent, and I grant the manor, excepting the rent, the fealty shall pass to the grantee, and I. S. shall have but a rent-feck.

So in grants against the law, if I give land to I. S. and his heirs males, this is a good fee-fimple, which is a larger estate than the words feem to intend, and the word males is void. But if I make a gift entail, referving a rent to me and the heirs of my body, the words of my body are not void, and to leave it a rent in fee-simple; but the word beirs and all are void, and leaves but a rent for life; except that you will fay, it is but a limitation to any my heir in feefimple which shall be heir of my body; for it cannot be a rent entail by refervation.

Bur if I give land with my daughter in frank marriage, the remainder to I. S. and his heirs, this grant cannot be good in all the parts, according to the words: for it is incident to the nature of a gift in frank marriage, that the done hold it of the donor; and therefore my deed

thall

Th

ra

m

fha

to

fra

is

m

ac

is

th

rei

bla

in

rei

of

1110

ex

gis

ba

of

don

thi

it !

ar

fel

at

tha

ter

on

*

grai ferr

Sur

in l

4 F

shall be taken so strongly against myself, * that rather than the remainder shall be void, the frank marriage, though it be first placed in the deed, shall be void as a frank marriage.

But if I give land in frank marriage, referving to me and my heirs ten pounds rent, now the frank marriage stands good, and the refervation is void, because it is a limitation of a benefit to

myself, and not to a stranger.

the

se:

ex-

by

yed

ren

nly,

lty,

ule

fer-

had

of

nave

ent :

tee,

dI

alty

but

d to

fim-

eem

if I

and

oody

fim-

and

will

fee-

or it

rank

neirs,

the

onee

deed

thall

So if I let white acre, black acre, and green acre to I. S. excepting white acre, this exception is void, because it is repugnant; but if I let the three acres aforesaid, rendring twenty shillings rent, viz. for white acre ten shillings, and for black acre ten shillings, I shall not distrain at all in green acre, but that shall be discharged of my rent.

So If I grant a rent to I. S. and his heirs out of my manor of Dale, & obligo manerium & omnia bona & catalla mea super manerium prædisum existentia ad distringendum per balivum domini regis: this limitation of the distress to the King's bailiss is void, and it is good to give a power of distress to I. S. the grantee and his bailiss.

But if I give land in tail tenend' de capitalibus 2 Ed. 4, 5. dominis per redditum viginti solidorum & sidelitatem: this limitation of tenure to the lord is void; and it shall not be good, as in the other case, to make a reservation of twenty shillings good unto my self; but it shall be utterly void as if no reservata all had been made: and if the truth be that I that am the donor hold of the lord paramount by ten shillings only, then there shall be ten shillings only reserved upon the gift entail as for ovelty.

^{*} Quære car le ley semble dée le contrary, entant que in un grant quant lun part del fait ne poit estroier ove lauter le darr: serra void, auterment in un devise & accordant fuit lopin: de Sur Anderson & Owen Just. contra Walmesley Just. P. 40. Eliz. in le case de Countesse de Warwick & Sur Berkley in com. banco. 4 H. 6. 22. 26 Ass. pl. 66. 46 Ed. 3. 18.

21 E. d. 3. 49. 31 & 32 H. 8. Dyer 46. Plow to 37. 25 H 4 6. 34.

So if I give land to I. S. and the heirs of his body, and for default of such issue quod tenementum prædictum revertatur ad I. N. yet these words of reservation will carry a remainder to a stranger. But if I let white acre to I. S. excepting ten shillings rent, these words of exception to mine own benefit shall never inure to words of reservation.

But now it is to be noted, that this rule is the last to be reforted to, and is never to be relied upon but where all other rules of exposition of words fail; and if any other come in place, this giveth place. And that is a point worthy to be observed generally in the rules of the law, that when they encounter and cross one another in any case, it be understood which the law holdeth worthier, and to be preferred; and it is in this particular very notable to consider, that this being a rule of some strictness and rigor, doth not as it were its office, but in absence of other rules which are of more equity and humanity; which rules you shall afterwards find set down with their expositions and limitations.

Bur now to give a taste of them to this prefent purpose, it is a rule that general words shall never be stretched too far in intendment, which the Civilians utter thus; Verba generalia restringuntur ad babilitatem personæ, vel ad aptitudinem rei.

,14 Aff. pl. 25.

THEREFORE if a man grant to another common intra metas & bundas villæ de Dale, and part of the vill in his several, and part his waste and common; the grantce shall not have common in the several; and yet this is the Strongest exposition against the grantor.

Lit. cap. cond.

So it is a rule, Verba ita funt intelligenda; it res magis valeat quam pereat: and therefore if I give land to I. S. and his heirs, reddend. quinque libras annuatim to I. D. and his heirs, this implies a condition to me that am the grantor; yet

it the abs

fore catalogue tors

wro

aga han

ftoc

and cum and and this of fi

be i

S

have of to tion percent & te

although of the strong

gran of a again

cat a

it were a stronger exposition against me, to say the limitaion should be void, and the seoffment absolute.

his

1617.-

ords

an-

ting

of

e is

re-

ace,

rthy

the

one hich

red; onsi-

and

ab-

find

ns.

preshall

vhich

ngun-

ret.

com-

part

e and

on in kposi-

e if I

uinque

s im-

it

to.

So it is a rule, that the law will not intend a 10 Ed. 4. 1. wrong, which the Civilians utter thus; Ea est accipienda interpretatio, quæ vitio caret. And therefore if the executor of I. S. grant omnia bona & catalla sua, the goods which they have as executors will not pass, because non constat whether it may be a devastation, and so a wrong; and yet against the trespasser that taketh them out of their hands, they shall declare quod bona sua cepit.

So it is a rule, that words are so to be understood that they work somewhat, and be not idle
and frivolous: verba aliquid operari debent, verba
cum effectu sunt accipienda. And therefore if I buy
and sell you the fourth part of my manor of Dale,
and say not in how many parts to be divided,
this shall be construed four parts of sive, and not
of six nor seven, &c. because that it is the strongest against me; but on the other side, it shall not
be intended four parts of sour parts, or the whole
of sour quarters; and yet that were strongest
of all, but then the words were idle and of none
effect.

So it is a rule, Divinatio non interpretatio est, 3 H. 6.20.

que omnino recedit a litera: and therefore if I have a fee-farm-rent issuing out of white acre of ten shillings, and I reciting the same reservation do grant to I. S. the rent of sive shillings percipiend de reddit predict & de omnibus terris & tenementis meis in Dale, with a clause of distress, although there be atturnement, yet nothing passeth out of my former rent; and yet that were strongest against me to have it a double rent, or grant of part of that rent with an enlargement of a distress in the other land, but for that it is against the words, because copulatio verborum indicat acceptionem in eodem sensu, and the word de (Anglice out of) may be taken in two senses,

that is, either as a greater fum out of a less. or as a charge out of land, or other principal interest; and that the coupling of it with lands and tenements; viz. I reciting that I am feifed of fuch a rent of ten Shillings, do grant five shillings percipiend' de eodem reddit', it is good enough without atturnement; because percipiend' de Ec. may well be taken for parcella de &c. without violence to the words; but if it had been de reddit' prædict', although I. S. be the person that payeth me the foresaid rent of ten shillings, yet it is void; and so it is of all other rules of exposition of grants, when they meet in opposition with this rule they are preferred.

Now, to examine this rule in pleadings as we have done in grants, you shall find that in all imperfections of pleadings, whether it be in ambiguity of words and double intendments, or want of certainty and averments, the plea shall be strictly and strongly against him that pleads.

For ambiguity of words, if in a writ of entry upon diffeifin, the tenant pleads jointenancy with I. S. of the gift and feoffment of I. D. judgment de briefe, the demandant saith that long time before I. D. any thing had, the demandant himfelf was seised in fee quousque prædict' I. D. super possessionem ejus intravit, and made a joint feoffment, whereupon he the demandant re-entred, and fo was feifed until by the defendant alone he was diffeifed; this is no plea, because the word intravit may be understood either of a lawful entry, or of a tortious; and the hardest against him shall be taken, which is, that it was a lawful entry; therefore he should have alledged precisely that I. D. disseisivit.

3 Ed. 6 Dy. 66.

So upon ambiguities that grow by reference, if an action of debt be brought against I. N. and I. P. sheriffs of London, upon an escape, and the plaintiff doth declare upon an execution by force of a recovery in the prison of Ludgate sub custodia

I:

tha

2 1

ध

to

efc

rati

vice

goo

in t

tha

of o

tunc

mer

fup

not,

may

defe

forn

alleg

colla

repli

enter

conft

ance

there

it wa

other

his a

I. S.

not t

leised

be in

parols

Fo

that

white

faid w

Fo

F

I. S. & I. D. then sheriffs in I K. H. VIII. and that he so continued sub custodia I. B. & I. G. in 2 K. H. VIII. and so continued sub custodia I. N. & I. L. in 3 K. H. VIII. and then was suffered to escape: I. N. and I. L. plead that before the escape supposed, at such a day anno superius in narratione specificato the said I. D. and I. S. ad tune vicecomites suffered him to escape; this is no good plea, because there be three years specified in the declaration, and it shall be hardest taken that it was I or 3 H. VIII. when they were out of office; and yet it is nearly induced by the ad tune vicecomites, which should leave the intendment to be of that year in which the declaration supposeth that they were sheriffs; but that sufficeth not, but the year must be alleged in fact, for it may be mislaid by the plaintiff, and therefore the defendants meaning to discharge themselves by a former escape, which was not in their time, must allege it precisely.

For incertainty of intendment, if a warranty 26 H. 8. collateral be pleaded in bar, and the plaintiff by replication to avoid the warranty faith, that he entered upon the possession of the defendant, non constat, whether this entry was in the life of the ancestor or after the warranty attached; and therefore it shall be taken in hardest sense, that it was after the warranty descended, if it be not

otherwise averred.

ess.

pal

ith

: 1

do

t is

rci-

. de

had

the

ten

her

t in

we

im-

nbi-

want

1 be

ntry

with

nent

e be-

him-

Super

eoff-

tred,

ne he

word

il en-

gainst

wful

ecife-

ce, if

. and

d the

force

stodia

I. S.

For impropriety of words, if a man plead that 38 H. 6. 18. his ancestor died by protestation seised, and that 39 H. 6. 5. I. S. abated; &c. this is no plea, for there cannot be an abatement, except there be a dying seised alleged in fact; and an abatement shall not be improperly taken for disseisn in pleading car parols sont pleas.

For repugnancy, if a man in avowry declare that he was feifed in his demesne as of see of white acre, and being so seised did demise the said white acre to I. S. babendum the moiety for

D twenty

twenty-one years from the Date of the deed, the other moiety from the furrender, expiration, or determination of the estate of I. D. qui tenet prædict' medietatem ad terminum vitæ suæ reddend' 40 s. rent: this declaration is insufficient, because the seisin that he hath alleged in himself in his demesne as of fee in the whole, and the thate for life of a moiety are repugnant; and it shall not be cured by taking the last which is expressed to controll the former, which is but general and formal; but the plea is naught, and yet the matter in law had been good to have intitled him to have distrained for the whole rent.

But the same restraint follows this rule in pleading that was before noted in grants: for if the case be such as falleth within another rule of

pleading, this rule may not be urged.

9 Ed. 4. AND therefore it is a rule to every intent.
4 Ed. 6. Plow. to a common intent, though not to every intent. AND therefore it is a rule that a bar is good As if a debt be brought against five executors, and three of them make default, and two appear and plead in bar a recovery had against them two of 300 l. and nothing in their hands over and above that fum. If this bar should be taken strongliest against them, it should be intended that they might have abated the first suit, because the other three were not named, and so the recovery not duly had against them; but because of this other rule the bar is good: for that the more common intent will fay, that they two did only administer, and so the Action well considered; rather than to imagine, that they would have

> So there is another rule, that in pleading a man shall not disclose that which is against himfelf: and therefore if it be matter that is to be fet forth on the other side, then the plea shall not be taken in the hardest sense, but in the most

> lost the benefit and advantage of abating the

be

to

tic

be

fha

iffi

ter

an

fen

fea

thi

def

had

die

unc

dan

fide

the

pari

mar

cust

hav

and

iffue

with

shou

shou

by a

cafe

wife

it is

fide.

thefe

poun

how

it me

A

writ.

beneficial, and to be left unto the contrary party to allege.

the

or

net

end'

be-

felf

the

d it

ex-

ene-

yet

itled

e in

or if

le of

good

tent.

itors,

ppear

them

over

taken

d that

fe the

overy

f this

more

only

ered;

have

g the

ding a

him-

to be

nall not

e most

bene-

AND therefore if a man be bound in an obliga- 28 H. 8. Dy. tion, that if the feme of the obligee do decease before the feast of St. John the Baptist, which shall be in the year of our Lord 1598. without issue of her body by her husband lawfully begotten then living, that then the bond shall be void, and in debt brought upon this obligation the defendants plead that the feme died before the faid feast without iffue of her body then living: if this plea should be taken strongliest against the defendant, then should it be taken that the feme had iffue at the time of her death, but this iffue died before the feast; but that shall not be fo understood, because it makes against the defendant, and it is to be brought in of the plaintiff's fide, and that without traverse.

So if in a detinue brought by a feme against the executors of her husband for her reasonable part of the goods of her husband, and her demand is of a moiety, and she declares upon the custom of the realm, by which the seme is to have a moiety, if no iffue be had between her and her husband, and the third part if there be issue had, and declareth that her husband dieth without iffue had between them; if this count hould be hardliest construed against the party, it hould be intended that her husband had iffue by another wife, though not by her, in which tale the feme is but to have the third part likewife; but that shall not be so intended, because it is matter of reply to be shewed of the other fide.

And fo it is of all other rules of pleadings, these being sufficient not only for the exact expounding of these other rules, but obiter to shew how this rule which we handle is put by when it meets with any other rule.

D 2

As for acts of parliament, verdicts, judgments, &c. which are not words of parties, in them this rule hath no place at all, neither in devises and wills upon several reasons; but more especially it is to be noted, that in evidence it hath no place, which yet seems to have some affinity with pleadings, specially when demurrer is joiner upon the evidence.

AND therefore if land be given by will by H. C. to his fon I. C. and the heirs males of his body begotten; the remainder to F. C. and the heirs males of his body begotten; the remainder to the heirs males of the body of the devisor; the remainder to his daughter S. C. and the heirs of her body, with a clause of perpetuity; and the question comes upon the point of forfeiture in an affize taken by default, and evidence is given, and demurrer upon evidence, and in the evidence given to maintain the entry of the daughter upon a forfeiture, it is not fet forth nor averred that the devisor had no other issue male, yet the evidence is good enough, and it shall be so intended; and the reason hereof cannot be, because a jury may take knowledge of any matters not within the evidence; and the court contrariwife cannot take knowledge of any matters not within the pleas: for it is clear that if the evidence had been altogether remote, and not proving the iffue there, although the jury might find it, yet a demurrer might well be taken upon the evidence.

But if I take the reason of difference to be between pleadings, which are but openings of the case, and evidences which are the proofs of an issue, for pleadings being but to open the verity of the matter in sact indifferently on both parts, hath no scope and conclusion to direct the construction and intendment of them, and therefore must be certain; but in evidence and proofs the issue, which is the state of the question and con-

clusion,

cl

te

CE

W

W

in

ta

it

hi

to

kr

th

de

R

his

it

mi

no

for

cop

be

mo

or

of

cife

ver

the

gra

cha

he

refe

clusion, shall incline and apply all the proofs as tending to that conclusion.

ents,

this

and

ly it

lace,

ead-

the

H. C.

body

heirs

o the

e re-

f her

n an

, and

upon

that

e evi-

nded;

jury

vithin

annot

n the

been

there,

nurrer

to be

of the

of an

verity

parts,

con-

refore

ofs the

con-

lufion,

dence also.

ANOTHER reason is, that pleadings must be certain, because the adverse party may know whereto to answer, or else he were at a mischief, which mischief is remedied by a demurrer; but in evidence if it be short, impertinent, or incertain, the adverse party is at no mischief, because it is to be thought that the jury will pass against him; yet nevertheless the jury is not compellable to supply the defect of evidence out of their own knowledge, though it be in their liberty so to do; therefore the law alloweth a demurrer upon evi-

Reg. 4. Quod sub certa forma concessum vel reservatum est, non trabitur ad valorem vel compensationem.

The law permitteth every man to part with his own interest, and to qualify his own grant as it pleaseth himself; and therefore doth not admit any allowance or recompence if the thing be not taken as it is granted.

So in all profits a prender, if I grant common 17 H. 6. 10. for ten beafts, or ten loads of wood out of my copps, or ten loads of hay out of my meads, to be taken for three years; he shall not have common for thirty beafts, or thirty loads of wood or hay the third year, if he forbear for the space of two years; here the time is certain and precise.

So if the place be limited, or if I grant estovers to be spent in such a house, or stone towards the reparation of such a castle; although the grantee do burn of his suel, and repair of his own charge, yet he can demand no allowance for that he took it not.

So if the kind be specified; as if I let my park reserving to myself all the deer and sufficient D 3 pasture

e

I.

I.

W

al

W

fig

21

V

C

R

tl

tl

n

0

0

C

fe

C

V

10

C

th

k

e

tı

b

go

enjoy-

pasture for them, if I do decay the game whereby there is no deer, I shall not have quantity of pasture answerable to the feed of so many deer as were upon the ground when I let it; but am without any remedy except I replenish the ground again with deer.

But it may be thought that the reason of these cases is the default and laches of the grantor,

which is not fo.

For put the case that the house where the estovers should be spent be overthrown by the act of God, as by tempest, or burnt by the enemies of the king, yet there is no recompence to be made.

And in the strongest case where it is in default of the grantor, yet he shall make void his own grant rather than the certain form of it should be wrested to an equity or valuation.

As if I grant common ubicunque averia mea ierint, the commoner cannot otherwise intitle himself, except that he averr that in such grounds my beasts have gone and sed; and if I never put in any, but occupy my grounds otherwise, he is without remedy; but if I put in, and after by poverty or otherwise I desist, yet the commoner may continue; contrariwise, if the words of the grant had been quandocunque averia mea ierint, for there it depends continually upon the putting in of my beasts, or at least the general seasons when I put them in, not upon every hour or moment.

But if I grant tertiam advocationem to I. S. if he neglect to take his turn ea vice, he is without remedy: but if my wife be before intitled to dower, and I die, then my heir shall have two presentments, and my wife the third, and my grantee shall have the fourth; and it doth not impugn this rule at all, because the grant shall receive that construction at the first that it was integer.

39H. 8. Dy. 38. tended such an avoidance as may be taken and

enjoyed; as if I grant proximam advocationem to I. D. and then grant proximam advocationem to I. S. this shall be intended the next to the next, which I may lawfully grant or dispose.

But if I grant proximam advocationem to I. S. and I. N. is incumbent, and I grant by precise words illam advocationem, quam post mortem, resignationem, translationem, vel deprivationem I. N. immediate fore contigerit; now the grant is merely void, because I had granted that before, and it cannot be taken against the words.

Reg. 5. Necessitas inducit privilegium quoad jura privata.

THE law chargeth no man with default where the act is compulsory and not voluntary, and where there is not a confent and election; and therefore if either there be an impossibility for a man to do otherwise, or so great a perturbation of the judgment and reason, as in presumption of law man's nature cannot overcome, fuch ne- 4 Ed. 6. cond. cessity carrieth a privilege in itself.

NECESSITY is of three forts; necessity of con-Stamf. servation of life, necessity of obedience, and ne-

cessity of the act of God or of a stranger.

FIRST of conservation of life; if a man steal Stamf. viands to latisfy his present hunger, this is no fe-

lony nor larceny.

So if divers be in danger of drowning by the calting away of some boat or barge, and one of them get to some plank, or on the boats side to keep himself above water, and another to save his life thrust him from it, whereby he is drowned; this is neither se desendendo nor by misadventure, but justifiable.

So if divers felons be in a goal, and the goal per Brooke. by cafualty is fet on fire, whereby the prisoners per Keble. get forth; this is no escape, nor breaking of pri-perRead.

ion.

Cond. 13. 6. 14 H. 7. 29. 4 Ed. 6. pl. So condic.

D 4

these intor, e the ne act emies to be

n deid (his

of it

nerey of

deer

t am

ound

a mea intitle ounds er put he is er by moner

of the et, for ing in easons or mo-

I. S. if ithout led to e two nd my ot imall rewas inn and

enjoy:

in

th

fa

bı G

tic

les

th

ce

ex

pu

1110

far

ur

the

the

go

COL

rel

the

the

alle

fro

So fhe

obe

in wea

the

mai

fire

tow

hole

fiab

case

So upon the statute, that every merchant, that setteth his merchandize on land without satisfying the customer or agreeing for it, (which agreement is construed to be incertainty) shall forfeit his merchandize, and it is so that by tempest a great quantity of the merchandize is cast over-board, whereby the merchant agrees with the customer by estimation, which falleth out short of the truth, yet the over-quantity is not forfeited; where note that necessity dispenseth with the direct letter of a statute law.

Lit. pl. 4. 19. 12 H. 4. 20. 14 H. 4. 30. B. 33 H. 6. 11. 28 H. 6. 8. 39 H. 6. 50.

So if a man have right to land, and do not make his entry for terror of force, the law allows him a continual claim, which shall be as beneficial unto him as an entry; so shall a man save his default of appearance by cretain de cau, and avoid his debt by duresse, whereof you shall find proper cases elsewhere.

Stamf. 26. 2 Ed. 3. 160. Cor. Fitzh. THE second necessity is of obedience; and therefore where baron and seme commit a selony, the seme can neither be principal nor accessary; because the law intends her to have no will, in regard of the subjection and obedience she owes to her husband.

So one reason among others why ambassadors are used to be excused of practices against the state where they reside, except it be in point of conspiracy, which is against the law of nations and society, is, because non constat whether they have it in mandatis, and then they are excused by necessity of obedience.

So if a warrant or precept come from the King to fell wood upon the ground whereof I am tenant for life or for years, I am excused in waste.

THE third necessity is of the act of God, or of a stranger; as if I be particular tenant for years of a house, and it be overthrown by grand tempest, or thunder and lightning, or by sudden sloods, or by invasion of enemies, or if I have belonging unto it some cottage which hath been in-

B. 42 Ed. 3.6.
B. Walt 31.
12 Ed. 3.6.
19 Ed. 3 per
Th. Firz Waft
30: 14.
12 Ed. 3.
14 Ed. 3. 31.

infected, whereby I can procure none to inhabit them, no workman to repair them, and fo they fall down, in all these cases I am excused in waste: but of this last learning when and how the act of God and strangers do excuse, there be other particular rules.

hat

ing

ient

his reat

ard, r by

uth,

note r of

not lows

ficial

de-

void

oper

and

ony,

ary; l, in

owes

idors

the

it of tions

they

cufed

King

te-

ste.

d, or

years

tem-

dden

have

been in-

Bur then it is to be noted, that necessity privilegeth only quoad jura privata, for in all cases if the act that should deliver a man out of the neceffity be against the commonwealth, necessity excuseth not; for privilegium non valet contra rempublicam: and as another faith, necessitas publica major est quam privata: for death is the last and farthest point of particular necessity, and the law imposeth it upon every subject, that he prefer the urgent service of his prince and country before the fafety of his life: as if in danger of tempest those that are in the ship throw over other mens goods, they are not answerable; but if a man be commanded to bring ordnance or ammunition to relieve any of the King's towns that are diffressed, then he cannot for any danger of tempest justify the throwing of them overboard; for there it holdeth which was spoken by the Roman, when he alleged the same necessity of weather to hold him from embarking, Necesse est ut eam, non ut vivam. So in the case put before of husband and wife, if the join in committing treason, the necessity of obedience doth not excuse the offence as it doth in felony, because it is against the commonwealth.

So if a fire be taken in a street, I may justify 13 H. 8. 16. per the pulling down of the wall or house of another 12 H 3. 10. per man to fave the row from the spreading of the Brooke. fire; but if I be affailed in my house in a city or 22 Ast. pl. 56. town and distressed, and to save my life I set fire on mine own house, which spreadeth and taketh hold upon other houses adjoining, this is not justihable, but I am subject to their Action upon the case, because I cannot rescue mine own life by

doing any thing which is against the commonwealth: but if it had been but a private trespass, as the going over another's ground, or the break-6 Ed. 4. 7. per ing of his inclosure when I am pursued for the fafeguard of my life, it is justifiable.

4 H. 7. 2.

Saref.

This rule admitteth an exception when the law doth intend fome fault or wrong in the party that hath brought himself into the necessity; so that is necessitas culpabilis. This I take to be the chief reason why seipsum defendendo is not matter of justification, because the law intends it hath a commencement upon an unlawful cause, because quarrels are not prefumed to grow without fome wrongs either in words or deeds on either part, and the law that thinketh it a thing hardly triaable in whose default the quarrel began, supposeth the party that kills another in his own defence not to be without malice; and therefore as it doth not touch him in the highest degree, so it putteth him to fue out his pardon of course, and punisheth him by forfeiture of goods: for where there cannot be any malice or wrong prefumed, as where a man affails me to rob me, and I kill him that affaileth me; or if a woman kill him that assaileth her to ravish her, it is justifiable without any Pardon.

21 H. 7. 13.

So the common case proveth this exception, that is, if a madman commit a felony, he shall not lose his life for it, because his infirmity came by the act of God: but if a drunken man commit a felony, he shall not be excused, because his imperfection came by his own default; for the reason and loss of deprivation of will and election by necessity and by infirmity is all one, for the lack of arbitrium folutum is the matter: and therefore as infirmitas culpabilis excuseth not, no more doth neceffitas culpabilis.

Reg.

R

go

an

dy

no

be

pe

of

cer

no

aga

aga

fhe

eft

fall

ion

he

he

a b

can

it a

mai

mir

ftra

or v

ty :

an den

nac plea

ano

Reg. 6. Corporalis injuria non recipit astimationem de futuro.

THE law, in many cases that concern lands or goods, doth deprive a man of his prefent remedy, and turneth him over to a further circuit of remedy, rather than to fuffer an inconvenience: but if it be question of personal pain, the law will not compel him to fustain it and expect remedy, because it holdeth no damage a sufficient recom-

pence for a wrong which is corporal.

As if the sheriff make a false return that I am 5 Ed. 4. 80. fummoned, whereby I lose my land; yet because of the inconvenience of drawing all things to incertainty and delay, if the sheriff's return should not be credited, I am excluded of my averment against it, and am put to mine action of deceit against the sheriff and summoners: but if the sheriff upon a capias return a cepi corpus, & quod 3 H. 6. 3. est languidus in prisona, there I may come in and fallify the return of the sheriff to save my impriionment.

So if a man menace me in my goods, and that he will burn certain evidences of my land which he hath in his hand, if I will not make unto him a bond, yet if I enter into bond by this terror, I cannot avoid it by plea, because the law holdeth it an inconvenience to avoid a specialty by such matter of averment; and therefore I am put to mine action against such a menacer: but if he restrain my person, or threaten me with a battery, 7 Ed. 4. 21. or with the burning of my house, which is a fafety and protection to my person, or with burning an instrument of manumission, which is an evidence of my enfranchisement; if upon such menace or duresse I make a deed, I shall avoid it by

So if a trespasser drive away my beasts over 13 H. 8 15. another's ground, I pursue them to rescue them, 21 H. 7.28.

Reg.

on-

ass,

eakthe

the

arty ; fo

the atter

th a

aufe

some

part,

triaofeth

fence

doth

tteth

mishthere

, as

1 him

that

thout

that

t lole

ie act elony,

ection

d lois

cessity

arbi-

as in-

th ne-

yet

yet am I trespasser to the stranger upon whose ground I came; but if a man assail my person, and I sly over another's ground, now am I no

trespasser.

This ground some of the canonists do aptly inferr out of Christ's facred mouth, Amen, est corpus supra vestimentum, where they say vestimentum comprehendeth all outward things appertaining to a man's condition, as lands and goods, which they fay are not in the same degree with that which is corporal; and this was the reason of the antient lex talionis, oculus pro oculo, dens pro dente, so that by that law corporalis injuria de præterito non recipit æstimationem: but our law, when the injury is already executed and inflicted, thinketh it best fatisfaction to the party grieved to relieve him in damage, and to give him rather profit than revenge; but it will never force a man to tolerate a corporal hurt, and to depend upon that inferior kind of fatisfaction, ut in dammagiis.

Reg. 7. Excusat aut extenuat delictum in capitalibus, quod non operatur idem in civilibus.

In capital causes, in favorem vitæ, the law will not punish in so high a degree, except the malice of the will and intention appear; but in civil trespasses and injuries that are of an inferior nature, the law doth rather consider the damage of the party wronged, than the malice of him that

was the wrong-doer: and therefore,

THE law makes a difference between killing a man upon malice fore-thought, and upon present heat: but if I give a man slanderous words, whereby I damnify him in his name and credit, it is not material whether I use them upon sudden choler and provocation or of set malice, but in an action upon the case I shall render damages alike.

an

bu

of

pa

in

ma

thi

die

of

wh

no

his

lon

acc

of

COL

the

ma

the

tre

of

die

acc

ma

the

go

Re

per

officit i

nose

lon,

no

ptly

cor-

tum

g to

hey

hich

ient

that

re-

jury

best

n in

re-

erate

erior

itali-

will

alice

civil

r na-

re of

that

ing a

elent ords,

redit,

fudalice,

ender

Sa

So if a man be killed by misadventure, as by an arrow at buts, this hath a pardon of course: but if a man be hurt or maimed only, an action of trespass lieth, though it be done against the party's mind and will, and he shall be punished Stams. 16. in the law as deeply as if he had done it of 6 Ed. 4. 7. malice.

So if a surgeon authorized to practise, do Stams. 16. through negligence in his cure cause the party to die, the surgeon shall not be brought in question of his life; and yet if he do only hurt the wound, whereby the cure is cast back, and death insues not, he is subject to an action upon the case for his misseasance.

So if baron and feme be, and they commit felony together, the feme is neither principal nor accessary, in regard of her obedience to the will of her husband: but if baron and feme join in committing a trespass upon land or otherwise, the action may be brought against them both.

So if an infant within years of discretion, or a madman kill another, he shall not be impeached thereof; but if they put out a man's eye, or do him like corporal hurt, he shall be punished in trespass.

So in felonies the law admitteth the difference 35 H. 6. 11. of principal and accessary, and if the principal die, or be pardoned, the proceeding against the accessary faileth; but in a trespass, if one command his man to beat you, and the servant after 17 H. 4. 19. the battery die, yet your action of trespass stands good against the master.

Reg. 8. Æstimatio præteriti delicti ex postremo facto nunquam crescit.

THE law constructh neither penal laws, nor penal facts by intendments, but considereth the offence in degree, as it standeth at the time when it is committed; so as if any circumstance or matter

matter be subsequent, which laid together with the beginning should seem to draw it to a higher nature, yet the law doth not extend or amplify the offence.

11 H. 4. 12.

THEREFORE if a man be wounded, and the percussor is voluntarily let go at large by the goaler, and after, death ensueth of the hurt, yet this is no felonious escape in the goaler.

So if the villain strike the heir apparent of the lord, and the lord dieth before, and the person hurt who fucceedeth to be lord to the villain dieth

after, yet this is no petty treason.

So if a man compass and imagineth the death of one that after cometh to be King of the land, not being any person mentioned within the statute of 25 Ed. III. this imagination precedent is not high treason.

So if a man use slanderous words of a person upon whom some dignity after descends that maketh him a peer of the realm, yet he shall have but a fimple action of the case, and not in the nature of a scandalum Magnatum upon the sta-

tute.

So if John Stile steal fix pence from me in money, and the King by his proclamation doth raile monies, that the weight of filver in the piece now of fix pence should go for twelve pence, yet this shall remain petty larceny and no felony: and yet in all civil reckonings the alteration shall take place; as if I contract with a labourer to do fome work for twelve pence, and the inhancing of money cometh before I pay him, I shall fatilfy my contract with a fix-peny piece fo raifed.

So if a man deliver goods to one to keep, and after retain the same person into his service, who afterwards goeth away with his goods, this is 28 H. 8. pl. 2. no felony by the statute of 21 H. VIII. because

he was no fervant at that time.

In like manner, if I deliver goods to the fervant of I. S. to keep, and after die, and make I. S.

1.

ma of

the

any

cor

pui

ma

gri

is

pra

Re

-

pre

priv

fau.

and

him

form

pera

form

med

whi

rem

fee

upo

difa

whe

righ

exec

by a

mitt

or la

hold

I. S. my executor; and before any new commandment of I. S. to his servant for the custody of the same goods, his fervant goeth away with them, this is also out of the statute. Quod nota.

Bur note that it is said præteriti delicti; for any accessary before the fact is subject to all the 18 Eliz. 175. contingencies pregnant of the fact, if they be pursuances of the same fact: as if a man command or counsel one to rob a man, or beat him gricvously, and murder enfue, in either case he is accessary to the murder, quia in criminalibus præstantur accidentia.

Reg. 9. Quod remedio destituitur ipsa re valet si culpa absit.

THE benignity of the law is fuch, as when to preserve the principles and grounds of law it depriveth a man of his remedy without his own fault, it will rather put him in a better degree and condition than in a worse; for if it disable him to purfue his action, or to make his claim, lometimes it will give him the thing itself by operation of law without any act of his own, fometimes it will give him a more beneficial remedy.

AND therefore if the heir of the diffeifor which is in by descent make a lease for life, the remainder for life unto the disseisee, and the leflee for life die, now the franktenement is cast upon the diffeisee by act in law, and thereby he is dilabled to bring his pracipe to recover his right; whereupon the law judgeth him in his antient right as strongly as if it had been recovered and executed by action, which operation of law is by an antient term and word of law called a remitter; but if there may be affigned any default or lachess in him, either in accepting the freehold, or in accepting the interest that draws the

have n the e stamoraife e now t this

vith

her

lify

the

goa-

yet

the

rfon

lieth

leath

land,

stant is

erfon

ma-

and Il take to do ancing fatiled.

p, and , who this is ecaule

he fermake I. S. freehold, then the law denieth him any fuch benefit.

for

ge

the

his wh

and

had

aft

the

diff pea

the

the

rin fen

life

life

ten

bec

ver

ren

con the

the

and

the

iffu

had

carr

die

he

rem

out

enfe

defe

tene

5

Lit. pl. 682.

AND therefore if the heir of the diffeifor make a leafe for years, the remainder in fee to the diffeisee, the disseisee is not remitted, and yet the remainder is in him without his own knowledge or affent; but because the freehold is not cast upon him by act in law, it is no remitter. Quod nota.

Lit. pl. 685.

So if the heir of the diffeifor infeoff the diffeifee and a stranger, and make him livery, although the stranger die before any ageement or taking of the profits by the diffeifee, yet he is not remitted; because though a moiety be cast upon him by furvivor, yet that is but jus accrescendi, and it is no casting of the freehold upon him by act in law, but he is still as an immediate purchaser, and therefore no remitter.

Semble in cest case clerement le ley deeme contrary. Lit. pl. 666.

So if the husband be seised in the right of his wife, and discontinue and dieth, and the feme takes another husband, who takes a feoffment from the discontinuee to him and his wife, the feme is not remitted; and the reason is, because fhe was once fole, and fo a lachefs in her for not pursuing her right: but if the feoffment taken back had been to the first husband and herself, she had been remitted.

2 M. condic. 3.

YET if the husband discontinue the lands of the wife, and the discontinuee make a feoffment to the use of the husband and wife, she is not remitted; but that is upon a special reason, upon the letter of the statute of 27 H. VIII. of uses, that wisheth that the cestui que use shall have the possession in quality and degree as he had the use; but that holdeth place only upon the first vesting of the use; for when the use is absolutely executed and vested, then it doth insue merely the nature 34 H. 8. Dy. 3. of possessions; as if the discontinuee had made a feofiment in fee to the use of I. S. for life, the remainder to the use of baron and seme, and lessee for life die, now the feme is remitted, causa qua supra. ALSO

49.

Also if the heir of the diffeisor make a lease for life, the remainder to the diffeifee, who chargeth the remainder, and the leffee for life dies, the disseisee is not remitted; and the reason is, his intermeddling with the wrongful remainder, whereby he hath affirmed the fame to be in him; and so accepted it: but if the heir of the disseisor had granted a rent-charge to the diffeifee, and afterwards made a lease for life, the remainder to the diffeisee, and the lessee for life had died, the disseisee had been remitted; because there appeareth no affent or acceptance of any estate in the freehold, but only of a collateral charge.

So if the feme be diffeifed and intermarry with the diffeifor, who makes a leafe for life, rendring rent, and dieth leaving a fon by the fame 6 Ed. 3. 17. feme, and the fon accepts the rent of the leffee for life, and then the feme dies, and the leffee for life dies, the fon is not remitted; yet the frank tenement was cast upon him by act in law, but 28H. 8 pl. 207, because he had agreed to be in the tortious reversion by acceptance of the rent, therefore no

remitter.

Be-

nake

dif-

the

e or

upon

ota.

dif-

, al-

t or

s not

upon

endi,

n by

pur-

f his

feme

ment the

cause

not

aken

rfelf,

ds of

ment

s not

upon

uies,

e the

e uie:

ing of

cuted

ature ade a

e re-

leffee Supra. ALSO

So if tenant in tail discontinue, and the discontinuee make a lease for life, the remainder to the iffue in tail being within age, and at full age the lessee for life surrendereth to the issue in tail, and tenant in tail dies, and lessee for life dies, yet the same issue is not remitted; and yet if the iffue had accepted a feoffment within age, and had continued the taking of the profits when he came of full age, and then the tenant in tail had died, notwithstanding his taking of the profits he had been remitted: for that which guides the remitter, is, if he be once in of the freehold without any laches: as if the heir of the diffeifor enteoffs the heir of the diffeifee who dies, and it descends to a second heir upon whom the frank tenement is cast by descent, who enters and takes

the profits, and then the disseisee dies, this is a

remitter, caufa qua supra.

Lir. pl. 3.6.

Also if tenant in tail discontinue for life, and take a surrender of the lessee, now is he remitted and feifed again by force of the tail, and yet he cometh in by his own act: but this case differeth from all other cases; because the discontinuance was but particular at first, and the new gained reversion is but by intendment and necessity of law; and therefore is but as it were ab initio, with a limitation to determine whenfoever the particular discontinuance endeth, and the estate cometh back to the ancient right.

To proceed from cases of remitter, which is

a great branch of this rule, to other cases: if executors do redeem goods pledged by their testa-6H. 8 pl.3. Dy. tor with their own money, the law doth convert

fo much goods as doth amount to the value of that they laid forth, to themselves in property, and upon a plea of fully administred it shall be

allowed: the reason is, because it may be matter of necessity for the well administring of the goods of the testator, and executing their trust that they

disburse money of their own: for else perhaps the goods would be forfeited, and he that had them in pledge would not accept other goods but

money; and fo it is a liberty which the law gives them, and they cannot have any fuit against them-

felves; and therefore the law gives them leave to retain fo much goods by way of allowance: and

if there be two executors, and one of them pay the money, he may likewise retain against his

companion if he have notice thereof.

Bur if there be an overplus of goods, above the value of that he shall disburse, then ought he by his claim to determine what goods he doth elect to have in value; or else before such election, if his companion do fell all the goods, he

hath no remedy but in spiritual court : for to say

3 Eliz. 187. pl. 8.

ye an be IC th

h

hi

th

co to an

use de

in act

on

ker

ma the nov wit my

tior clai pen feo

mai my may case

tent

the one poff

is as in e a

nd ed

he

eth

ace

red of

tio,

the

ate

1 is

fta-

vert e of

rty, 1 be

atter oods

they

haps

had

s but

gives

nemre to

and pay

t his

bove

ht he

doth

elec-

is, he

to fay

he

he should be tenant in common with himself and his companion pro rata of that he doth lay out, the law doth reject that course for intricateness.

So if I have a leafe for years worth 20 1. by the year, and grant unto I. D. a rent of 10 l. a year, and after make him my executor; now I. D. shall 19 H 8. pl. 7. be charged with affets 10 l. only, and the other in fine. 10 1. shall be allowed and considered to him; and Rec. in value the reason is because the not refusing shall be ac- 23. counted no lachess unto him, because an executorship is pium officium, and matter of conscience and trust, and not like a purchase to a man's own use.

LIKE law it is, where the debtor makes the 2H 4.21. debtee his executor, the debt shall be considered 2 H. 7. 5. in the affets, notwithstanding it be a thing in 37 H. 6. 32.

So if I have a rent-charge, and grant that up- 6 Ed. 6. cond. on condition, now though the condition be bro- Lit. pl. 135. ken, the grantee's estate is not defeated till I have made my claim; but if after such grant my father purchase the land, and it descend to me, now if the condition be broken, the rent ceafeth without claim: but if I had purchased the land myself, then I had extincted mine own condition, because I had disabled myself to make my claim, and yet a condition collateral is not fufpended by taking back an estate; as if I make a 20 H. 7. per feoffment in fee, upon condition that I. S. shall Pol. marry my daughter, and take a lease for life from Barr. 162. my feoffee, if the feoffee break the condition, I may claim to hold in by my fee-fimple; but the case of the charge is otherwise, for if I have a tent-charge issuing out of twenty acres, and grant the rent over upon condition, and purchase but one acre, the whole condition is extinct, and the possibility of the rent by reason of the condition, is as fully destroyed as if there had been no rent in effe.

30 H. 6. pl. Grants 91.

7 H. 6. 40.

So if the King grant to me the wardship of I. S. the fon and heir of I. S. when it falleth, because an action of covenant lieth not against the King, I shall have the thing myself in interest.

Bur if I let land to I. S. rendring a rent with a condition of re-entry, and I. S. be attainted. whereby the leafe cometh to the King, now the demand upon this land is gone, which should give me benefit of re-entry, and yet I shall not have it reduced without demand; and the reason of difference is, because my condition in this case is not taken away in right, but only suspended by the privilege of the possession; for if the King grant the leafe over, the condition is revived as it was.

Also if my tenant for life grant his estate to the King, now if I will grant my reversion over, the King is not compellable to atturn, therefore it shall pass by grant by deed without atturnment.

So if my tenant for life be, and I grant my reversion per auter vie, and the grantee die, living ceftui que vie, now the privity between tenant for life and me is not restored, and I have no tenant in effe to atturn; therefore I may pass my reversion without atturnment. Quod nota.

So if I have a nomination to a church, and another hath the presentation, and the presentation comes to the King, now because the King cannot be attendant, my nomination is turned to

an absolute patronage.

So if a man be feifed in an * advowson, and take a wife, and after a title of dower given her, join in impropriating the church, and dieth, now because the feme cannot have the turn because of the perpetual incumbency, she shall have all

* 6 Ed. 6. Dy. 72. Vide contra 2 E. 3. fo. 8. que per presentment del feme ladvowson est deveign disimpropriate a touts jours quel est agree in Snr. Cok. Rep. 7. fo. 8. a.

9 Fd. 2. Firz. Atturnments 18.

li

Q

n

te

b

a

Ca

W

po

ar

pr

be

be

W

en

th:

he

an

tha

rig

VI

in (

the turns during her life; for it shall not be disimpropriated to the benefit of the heir contrary to

the grant of tenant in fee-simple.

Bur if a man grant the third presentment to I. S. and his heirs, and impropriate the advowfon, now the grantee is without remedy, for he took his grant subject to that mischief at first; and therefore it was his lachefs, and therefore not like the case of the dower; and this grant of the third avoidance is not like tertia pars advocationis, or medietas advocationis upon a tenancy in common of the advowson: for if two tenants in common be, and an usurpation be had against them, and the usurper do impropriate, and one of the tenants in common do release, and the other bring his writ of right de medietate advocationis and recover; now I take the law to be, that because tenants in common ought to join in presentment, which cannot now be, he shall have the whole patronage: for neither can there be an apportionment that he should present all the turns, and his incumbent but to have a moiety of the profits, nor yet the act of impropriation shall not 45 Ed. 32 be defeated. But as if two tenants in common be of a ward, and they join in a writ of right of ward, and one release, the other shall recover the entire ward, because it cannot be divided: so shall it be in the other case, though it be an inheritance, and though he bring his action alone.

As if a diffeisor be diffeised, and the first difseisee release to the second disseisor upon condition, and a descent be cast, and the condition broken; now the mean disseifor, whose right is revived, shall enter notwithstanding this descent, because his

right was taken away by the act of a stranger.

But if I devise land by the statute of * 32 H. VIII. and the heir of the devisor enters and makes

E 3

a feoff

touts

the

r pre-

of

be-

the

ith

ed,

the

give

ave

of

le is

by

ing

as it

e to

ver,

ere-

at-

my

ving

t for

nant

re-

and

nta-

King

d to

and

her,

now

ause

e all

Le contrary fuit resolve in Martin Trott's case, pag. 32 Eliz. in Com. Banco, & Pa. 1 Jac. ib. vide 7 R. 2. Scire fac. 3. 41 E. 3. 14. per Finchden.

a feoffment in fee, and the feoffee dieth feifed, this descent binds, and there shall not be a perpetual liberty of entry, upon the reason that he never had seisin whereupon he might ground his action, but he is at a mischief by his own lachess: and like law is of the King's patentee; for I see no reasonable difference between them and him in the remainder, which is *Littleton*'s case.

But note, that the law by operation and matter in fact will never countervail and supply a title grounded upon a matter of record; and therefore if I be entitled unto a writ of error, and the land descend unto me, I shall never be remitted; no more shall I be unto an attaint, ex-

25 H. 8. Dy. 1. cept I may also have a writ of right.

So if upon my avowry for services, my tenant disclaim where I may have a writ of right as upon disclaimer, if the land after descend to me, I shall never be remitted.

2

0

t

f

a

R

Reg. 10. Verba generalia restringuntur ad habilitatem rei vel personæ.

It is a rule that King's grants shall not be taken or construed to a special intent; it is not so with the grants of a common person, for they shall be extended as well to a foreign intent as to a common intent; yet with this exception, that they shall never be taken to an impertinent or a repugnant intent: for all words, whether they be in deeds or statutes, or otherwise, if they be general and not express and precise, shall be restrained unto the sitness of the matter or person.

Perk. pl. 108.

As if I grant common in omnibus terris meis in D. and I have in D. both open grounds and feveral, it shall not be stretched to my common in several, much less in my gardens and orchards.

So if I grant to a man omnes arbores meas crefcentes supra terras meas in D. he shall not have apple-trees, or other fruit-trees growing in my gardens

14 H. 8. 2.

gardens or orchards, if there be any other trees

upon my ground.

fed,

pe-

he

his

ess:

fee

n in

nat-

ly a

and

rror,

r be

ex-

nant

up-

ne, I

ilita-

taken

with

ill be

com-

they

epug-

be in

neral

ained

s meis

So if I grant to I. S. an annuity of 10 1. a year 41 Ed. 3. 6. 19. pro confilio impenso & impendendo, if I. S. be a physician, it shall be understood of his counsel in physick; and if he be a lawyer, of his counsel in law.

So if I do let a tenement to I. S. near by my dwelling house in a borough, provided that he shall not erect or use any shop in the same without my licence, and afterwards I licence him to erect a shop, and I. S. is then a miller, he shall not by virtue of these general words erect a joi-

ner's shop.

So the statute of chanteries that willeth all 16 Eliz. 337. lands to be forfeited, given or employed to a fu- Dyer. perstitious use, shall not be construed of the glebe lands of parsonages: nay farther, if the lands be given to the Parson of D. to say a mass in his church of D. this is out of the statute, because it shall be intended but as an augmentation of his glebe; but otherwise had it been, if it had been to fay a mass in any other church but his

So in the statute of wrecks, that willeth that goods wreck'd where any live domestical creature remains in a veffel, shall be preserved to the use of the owner that shall make his claim by the space of one year, doth not extend to fresh victuals or the like, which is impossible to keep without perishing or destroying it; for in these and the like cases general words may be taken, as was faid, to a rare and foreign intent, but never to an unreasonable intent.

Reg. 11. Jura sanguinis nullo jure civili dirimi poffunt.

They be the very words of the civil law, which cannot be amended to explain this rule. Heres E 4 6/4

s and mmon hards. as crehave n my

ardens

21 Ed. 3. 17.

est nomen Juris, Filius est nomen Natura : therefore corruption of blood taketh away the privity of the one, that is, of the heir, but not of the other, that is, of the fon; therefore if a man be attainted and murdered by a stranger, the eldest 36 H 6. 57,58. fon shall not have the appeal, because the appeal is given to the heir, for the youngest sons who are equal in blood shall not have it; but if an attainted person be killed by his son, this is petty treafon, for that the privity of a fon remaineth: for I admit the law to be, that if the fon kill his father or mother it is petty treason, and that there remaineth fo much in our laws of the ancient footsteps of potestas patris and natural obedience, which by the law of God is the very instance itfelf; and all other government and obedience is taken but by equity, which I add because some have thought to weaken the law in that point.

So if land descend to the eldest son of a perfon attainted from his ancestor, of the mother held in knights fervice, the guardian shall enter, and oust the father, because the law giveth the father that prerogative in respect he is his son and heir; for of a daughter or a special heir in tail he shall not have it; but if the son be attainted, and the father covenant in confideration of natural love to stand seised of land to his use, this is good enough to raise an use, because the privity

of a natural affection remaineth.

So if a man be attainted and have a charter of pardon, and be returned of a jury between his fon and I. S. the challenge remaineth; for he may maintain any fuit of his fon, notwithstanding the blood be corrupted.

So by the statute of 21. the ordinary ought to commit the administration of his goods that was attainted, and purchase his charter of pardon to his children, though born before the pardon, for Ed. 6. Adm. it is no question of his inheritance: for if one brother of the half blood die, the administration ought

pa th be of. fhi

QU

th

th

vif tai ye the tar

blo per wh cot

ha the

tair his he prin

like Re

ings tion the

que than

difp

ought to be committed to his other brother of the half blood, if there be no nearer by the father.

ere-

vity

the

n be dest

peal

are

ain-

rea-

for

fa-

here

ient

nce,

e it-

ce is

ome

per-

ther

iter,

the

and

tail

ted,

na-

this

vity

er of

fon

may the

it to

was

n to

for

one

tion ught

t.

So if the uncle by the mother be attainted and 33 H. 6. 55. pardoned, and land descend from the father to the son within age, held in socage, the uncle shall be guardian in socage; for that sayoureth so little of the privity of heir, as the possibility to inherit shutteth not.

But if a feme tenant in tail affent to the ravisher, and have no issue, and her cousin is attainted, and pardoned, and purchaseth the re- 5 Ed. 4. 5. version, he shall not enter for a forfeiture. For though the law giveth it not in point of inheritance, but only as a perquisite to any of the blood, so he be next in estate; yet the recompence is understood for the stain of his blood, which cannot be considered when it is once wholly corrupted before.

So if a villain be attainted, yet the lord shall have the issues of his villain born before or after the attainder; for the lord hath them jure nature but as the increase of a flock.

QUERE, whether if the eldest son be at-F. N. Br. 829. tainted and pardoned, the lord shall have aid of his tenants to make him a knight, and it seemeth he shall; for the words of the writ hath filium primogenitum, and not filium & bæredem, and the like writ hath pur file marrier who is no heir. Register so. 87.

Reg. 12. Receditur a placitis juris, potius quam injuriæ & delicta maneant impunita.

The law hath many grounds and positive learnings, which are not of the maxims and conclusions of reason; but yet are learnings received with the law set down, and will not have called in question: these may be rather called placita juris than regulæ juris; with such maxims the law will dispense, rather than crimes and wrongs should be

be unpunished, quia salus populi suprema lex; and salus populi is contained in the repressing offences

by punishment.

THEREFORE if an advowson be granted to two, and the heirs of one of them, and an usurpation be had, they both shall join in a writ of right of advowson; and yet it is a ground in law, that a writ of right lieth of no less estate than a see-simple; but because the tenant for life hath no other several action in the law given him, and also that the jointure is not broken, and so the tenant in see-simple cannot bring his writ of right alone; therefore rather than he shall be deprived wholly of remedy, and this wrong unpunished, he shall join his companion with him, notwithstanding the seebleness of his estate.

But if lands be given to two, and to the heirs of one of them, and they lease in a præcipe by default, now they shall not join in a writ of right, because the tenant for life hath a several action, viz. a Quod ei deforciat, in which respect the join-

ture is broken.

So if tenant for life and his lessor join in a lease for years, and the lessee commit waste, they shall join in punishing this waste, and locus vastatus shall go to the tenant for life, and the damages to him in reversion; and yet an action of waste lieth not for tenant for life, but because he in the reversion cannot have it alone, because of the mean estate for life, therefore rather than the

waste shall be unpunished, they shall join.

So if two coparceners be, and they lease the land, and one of them die, and hath issue, and the lessee commit waste, the aunt and the issue shall join in punishing this waste, and the issue shall recover the moiety of the place wasted, and the aunt the other moiety and the entire damages; and yet actio injuriarum moritur cum persona, but in favorabilibus magis attenditur quod prodest, quam quod nocet.

46 Ed. 3. 21.

22 H. 6. 24.

45 Ed. 3. 3.

and is at agair fail i

So

ry in the ry in the ry arkill I made nor a cipal shall

of murcher murchender if the to the

So

maxi tivæ, lar e viola

A

horfi ceive fteal

case actio vitæ but

to be

for i

So

and

nces

wo,

tion

t of

at a

fee-

no al-

te-

ight

ived

hed,

ith-

neirs

by

ght, ion,

oin-

in a

they

atus

es to

rafte

the

the

the

the

and

iffue

iffue

and

iges;

but

nuam

So

So if a man recovers by erroneous judgment, 20 Ed. 2. and hath iffue two daughters, and one of them is attainted, the writ of error shall be brought against the parceners, notwithstanding the privity F. descent 16. fail in the one.

Also it is a positive ground, that the accessa- 33 Eliz. ry in felony cannot be proceeded against, until the principal be tried; yet if a man upon subtlety and malice fet a madman by some device to kill him, and he doth to; now forafmuch as the madman is excused because he can have no will nor malice, the law accounteth the inciter as principal, though he be absent, rather than the crime shall go unpunished.

So it is a ground of the law, that the appeal of murder goeth not to the heir where the party murdered hath a wife, nor to the younger brother where there is an elder; yet if the wife Fitz. Corone murder her husband, because she is the party of- 459. fender, the appeal leaps over to the heir; and fo Stant lib. 2. if the fon and heir murder his father, it goeth tol. 60. to the fecond brother.

But if the rule be one of the higher fort of maxims that are regulæ rationales, and not positive, then the law will rather endure a particular offence to escape without punishment, than violate fuch a rule.

As it is a rule that penal statutes shall not be taken by equity, and the statute of I Ed. VI. enacts that those that are attainted for stealing of horses shall not have their clergy, the judges conceived, that this did not extend to him that should steal but one horse, and therefore procured a new act for it in 2 Ed. VI. cap. 33. And they had reason for it, as I take the law; for it is not like the case upon the statute of Glocest. that gives the action of waste against him that holds pro termino Plow. 467. vitæ vel annorum. It is true, that if a man holds Lic. cap 46. but for a year he is within the statute; for it is to be noted, that penal statutes are taken strictly and

and literally only in the point of defining and fetting down the fact and the punishment, and in those clauses that do concern them, and not generally in words that are but circumstances and conveyance in the putting of the case, and so see the diversity; for if the law be, that for such an offence a man shall lose his right hand, and the offender hath had his right hand before cut off in the wars, he shall not lose his left hand, but the crime shall rather pass without the punishment which the law affigned, than the letter of the law should be extended; but if the statute of 1 Ed. VI. had been, that he that should steal one horse should be ousted of his clergy, then there had been no question at all, but if a man had stolen more horses than one, but that he had been within the statute, quia omne majus continet in se minus.

Reg. 13. Non accipi debent verba in demonstrationem falsam, quæ competuat in limitationem veram.

THOUGH falsity of addition or demonstration doth not hurt, where you give the thing a proper name, yet nevertheless if it stand doubtful upon the words, whether they import a false reference and demonstration, or whether they be words of restraint that limit the generality of the former name, the law will never intend error or fallehood.

12 Eliz 6. 291. 23 Eliz. Dyer

THEREFORE if the parish of Hurst do extend into the counties of Wilts. and Barks. and I 7Ed. 6. Dy. 56. grant my close called Callis, fituate and lying in the parish of Hurst in the county of Wiltsh. and the truth is, that the whole close lieth in the county of Barks. yet the law is, that it passeth well enough, because there is a certainty sufficient in that I have given it a proper name which the falle reference doth not destroy, and not upon the reason that these words, in the county of Wilth.

Wilt and : and a terra. I had had

Bu Callis to B lay in So

tenur dimi [where rest f nothi of I. in the I pur ture c

mons them intend those true.

I.D. Bu

Reg. tilis fort

TH

be a for the or of refts, incum merel Wilts. shall be taken to go to the parish only, and so be true in some fort, and not to the close, and so to be false: For if I had granted omnes terras meas in parochia de Hurst in com. Wilts. and I had no lands in Wilts. but in Barks. nothing had past.

But in the principal case, if the close called 9 Ed. 4. 7. Callis had extended part into Wiltsh. and part in- 21 Ed 3. 18. to Barksh. then only that part had passed which

lay in Wilt fb.

So if I grant omnes & fingulas terras meas in 29 Reg. tenura I. D. quas perquifivi de I. N. in indentura dimissionis fact I. B. specificat. if I have land wherein some of these references are true, and the rest salse, and no land wherein they are all true, nothing passeth: as if I have land in the tenure of I. D. and purchased of I. N. but not specified in the indenture to I. B. or if I have land which I purchased of I. N. and specified in the indenture of demise to I. B. and not in the tenure of I. D.

But if I have some land wherein all these demonstrations are true, and some wherein part of them are true, and part false, then shall they be intended words of true limitation to pass only those lands wherein all those circumstances are true.

Reg. 14. Licet dispositio de interesse futuro sit inutilis, tamen potest sieri declaratio præcedens quæ sortiatur effectum interveniente novo actu.

THE law doth not allow of grants except there be a foundation of an interest in the grantor; for the law that will not accept of grants of titles, or of things in action which are impersect interests, much less will it allow a man to grant or incumber that which is no interest at all, but merely future.

BUT

1

fee an the off

fet-

l in

ge-

and

the ent law

VI. ould no

the

atio-

oper upon ence ds of

alfe-

nd I ng in and the

cient the upon

ty of

deli

feof

den

fub:

diti

the

and

and

atto

con

are

in t

cor

S

bef

of of

to den

mai

my

cha

don

I

it is

of 1

yet

fion use

feof

COV

S

nan

afte pub

the

But of declarations precedent before any interest vested the law doth allow, but with this difference, so that there be some new act or conveyance to give life and vigour to the declaration precedent.

Now the best rule of distinction between grants and declarations is, that grants are never countermandable, nor in respect of the nature of the conveyance or instrument, though sometime in respect of the interest granted they are, whereas declarations evermore are countermandable in their natures.

20 Eliz. 19 H. 6. 62. And therefore if I grant unto you, that if you enter into an obligation to me of 100 l. and after do procure me such a lease, that then the same obligation shall be void, and you enter into such an obligation unto me, and afterwards do procure such a lease, yet the obligation is simple, because the deseasance was made of that which was not.

27 Ed. 3.

So if I grant unto you a rent-charge out of white acre, and that it shall be lawful for you to distrain in all my other lands whereof I am now seised, and which I shall hereafter purchase; although this be but a liberty of distress, and no rent save only of white acre, yet as to the lands afterwards to be purchased the clause is void.

29 Ed. 3. 6. 24 Eliz.

So if a reversion be granted to I. S. and I. D. a stranger by his deed do grant to I. S. that is he purchase the particular estate, he will atturn to the grant, this is a void atturnment, notwith standing he doth afterwards purchase the particular estate.

13, 14 Eliz. 20, 21 Eliz. 25 Eliz. But of declarations the law is contrary; as if the disseise make a charter of feoffment to I. S. and a letter of attorney to enter and make livery and seisin, and deliver the deed of feoffment, and afterwards livery and seisin is made accordingly, this is a good feoffment; and yet he had no other thing than a right at the time of the delivery

y in-

n this

con-

ration

grants

unter-

of the

me in

hereas

n their

if you

d after

fame

o fuch

rocure

e, be-

ch was

out of

or you
f I am

rchase; and no

e lands

that il

atturn ot with

e parti

nent to

d make

is made

e of the

delivery

id. id *I. D.*

delivery of the charter; but because a deed of scoffment is but matter of declaration and evi- M. 38. & dence, and there is a new act which is the livery 39 Eliz. Subsequent, therefore it is good in law.

So if a man make a feoffment to I. S. upon con- 36 Eliz. dition to enfeoff I. N. within certain days, and there are deeds made both of the first feoffment and the second, and letters of attorney accordingly, and both those deeds of feoffment, and letters of attorney are delivered at a time, so that the second deed of feoffment and letters of attorney are delivered when the first feoffee had nothing in the land; and yet if both liveries be made accordingly, all is good.

So if I covenant with I. S. by indenture, that before fuch a day I will purchase the manor of D. and before the same day I will levy a fine of the same land, and that the same fine shall be to certain uses which I express in the same indenture; this indenture to lewd uses being but matter of declaration and countermandable at my pleasure will suffice, though the land be purchased after; because there is a new act to be done, viz. the fine.

But if there were no new act, then otherwise 25 Eliz. it is; as if I covenant with my son, in considera-27 Eliz. it is; as if I covenant with my son, in considera-27 Eliz. it is; as if I covenant with my son, in considera-27 Eliz. it is; as if I covenant with my son, in considera-27 Eliz. it is; as if I covenant at the lands which I shall afterwards purchase, yet the use is void; and the reason is, because there is no new act, nor transmutation of possession following to perfect this inception; for the use must be limited by the seosffor, and not the seosses, and he had nothing at the time of the covenant.

So if I devise the manor of D. by special Com. Plowd.

name, of which at that time I am not seised, and Rigden's case, after I purchase it, except I make some new publication of my will, this devise is void; and the reason is, because that my death, which is the consummation of my will, is the act of God,

and not my act, and therefore no fuch new act

ci

du

by

the

bu

out act

int

the hin

not are

ano dot

I

fom

maf

trea

graa

Reg

In

a ma and

thor

fed, Bu

ther

excu

TI

I.S. 1

luage

and,

he do

of fec

feisin

as the law requireth.

But if I grant unto I. S. authority by my deed to demise for years, the land whereof I am now feised, or hereafter shall be seised; and after I purchase the lands, and I. S. my attorney doth demise them; this is a good demise, because the demise of my attorney is a new act, and all one

with a demise by myself.

21 Eliz.

Bur if I mortgage land, and after covenant with I. S. in confideration of money which I receive of him, that after I have entered for the condition broken, I will stand seised to the use of the same I. S. and I enter, and this deed is enrolled, and all within the fix months, yet nothing passeth away, because this enrollment is no new act, but a perfective ceremony of the first deed of bargain and fale; and the law is more strong in that case; because of the vehement relation which the enrolment hath to the time of the bargain and fail, at what time he had nothing but a naked condition.

6 Ed. 6. Br.

So if two jointenants be, and one of them bargain and fell the whole land, and before the enrolment his companion dieth, nothing paffeth of the moiery accrued unto him by furvivor.

Reg. 15. In criminalibus sufficit generalis malitia intentionis cum facto paris gradus.

ALL crimes have their conception in a corrupt intent, and have their confummation and issuing in fome particular fact; which though it be not the fact at which the intention of the malefactor levelled, yet the law giveth him no advantage of the error, if another particular enfue of as high a nature.

18 E iz. Sanders case com. 474.

THEREFORE if an impoisoned apple be laid in a place to impoison I. S. and I. D. cometh by chance and eateth it, this is murder in the principal cipal that is actor, and yet the malice in individuo was not against I. D.

v act

my

ami

after

doth

e the

1 oné

enant

I re-

r the

è use

ed is

t no-

is no

first

more

nt re-

me of

thing

them

e the

nalitia

upt in-

ing in

ot the

· level-

the er-

a na-

laid in

eth by

e principal So if a thief find the door open, and come in Cr. I. peace by night and rob an house, and be taken with f. 30. the manner, and break a door to escape, this is burglary; yet the breaking of the door was without any felonious intent, but it is one entire act.

So if a caliver be discharged with a murderous intent at I. S. and the piece break and strike into the eye of him that dischargeth it, and killeth him, he is felo de se, and yet his intention was not to hurt himself; for felonia de se and murder Cave. are crimina paris gradus. For if a man pursuade another to kill himself, and be present when he doth so, he is a murderer.

But quære, if I. S. lay impoisoned fruit for Cr. Just. peace some other stranger his enemy, and his father or master come and eat it, whether this be petty treason, because it is not altogether crimen paris gradus.

Reg. 16. Mandata licita recipiunt stristam interpretationem, sed illicita latam & extensam.

In committing of lawful authority to another, aman may limit it as strictly as it pleaseth him, and if the party authorized do transgress his authority, though it be but in circumstance expressed, it shall be void in the whole act.

But when a man is author and mover to another to commit an unlawful act, then he shall not excuse himself by circumstances not pursued.

THEREFORE if I make a letter of attorney to 10 H. 7. 19. I.S. to deliver livery and seisin in the capital mess. 15, 16. 16 El. Dy. 337. Stage, and he doth it in another place of the land, or between the hours of two and three, and he doth it after or before; or if I make a charter 15 El. Dy. 337. If seisin to be delivered to I. D. and my attorney 38H.8. Dy. 68.

deliver

deliver it to I. B. in all these cases the act of the attorney, as to execute the estate, is void; but if I say generally to I. D. whom I mean only to enseos, and my attorney make it to his attorney, it shall be intended, for it is a livery to him in law.

im

wi

an

an

wh

rec gai

off

it,

allo

det

tha

jud

err

cou

jud

be I

plea

belo

is ta

by 1

dete

men

tend

men

tried

men

men

de D

Sc

Sctried

Setena

S

18 El. Sanders case.Com. 175.

But on the other side, if a man command I. S. to rob I. D. on Shooters-bill, and he doth it on Gads-bill, or to rob him such a day, and he doth it the next day, or to kill I. D. and he doth it not himself but procureth I B. to do it; or to kill him by poison, and he doth it by violence; in all these cases, notwithstanding the fact be not executed in circumstance, yet he is accessary nevertheless.

Ibidem.

But if it be to kill I. S. and he killeth I. D. mistaking him for I. S. then the acts are distant in substance, and he is not accessary.

AND be it that the facts be of differing degrees,

and yet of a kind:

As if a man bid I. S. to pilfer away such things out of a house, and precisely restrain him to do it sometime when he is gotten in without breaking of the house, and yet he breaketh the house, yet he is accessary to the burglary: for a man cannot condition with an unlawful act, but he must at his peril take heed how he putteth himself into another man's hands.

18 Eliz. in Sanders case. pl. Com. 475.

But if a man bid one rob I. S. as he goeth to Sturbridge-fair, and he rob him in his house, the variance seems to be of substance, and he is not accessary.

Reg. 17. De fide & officio Judicis non recipitur quæstio; sed de scientia, sive error sit juris sive facti.

THE law doth so much respect the certainty of judgments, and the credit and authority of judges, as it will not permit any error to be assigned that impeacheth

the

but

7 to

iey,

in

and

h it

he

doth

to to

nce;

not

ne-

I. D.

ftant

rees,

hings

o do

reak-

oufe,

man

must

elf in-

eth to

e, the

is not

cipitur

ris five

inty of

udges,

ed that

acheth

39 Aff. 9. 5 Ed. 4. 3.

19 Ed. 4. 6.

impeacheth them in their trust and office, and in wilful abuse of the same; but only in ignorance, and mistaking either of the law or of the case and matter in fact.

AND therefore if I will affign for error, that F.N. br. fol. 21. whereas the verdict passed for me, the court 7 H. 7. 4. received it contrary, and so gave judgment against me, this shall not be accepted.

So if I will allege for error, that whereas I. S. 3 H. 6. Aff. 3. offered to plead a sufficient bar, the court refused it, and drove me from it, this error shall not be allowed.

Bur the greatest doubt is where the court doth 2 M. Dy. 114. determine of the verity of the matter in fact; fo that it is rather a point of trial than a point of judgment, whether it shall be re-examined in error.

As if an appeal of maim be brought, and the 1 Mar. 5. court, by the affiftance of the chirurgeons ad- 28 Aff. pl. 15. judge it to be a maim, whether the party grieved may bring a writ of error; and I hold the law to be he cannot.

So if one of the Prothonotaries of the common 8 H. 4. 3. pleas bring an affize of his office, and allege fees belonging to the same office in certainty, and iffue is taken upon these fees, this issue shall be tried 1 Mar. Dy. 89. by the judges by way of examination; and if they 5 Mar. Dy. 16. determine it for a plaintiff, and he have judgment to recover arrearages accordingly, the detendant can bring no writ of error of this judgment, though the fees in truth be other.

So if a woman bring a writ of dower, and the 8 H. 6. 23. tenant plead her husband was alive, this shall be 2 El. 285. Dy. tried by proofs and not by jury, and upon judg- 41 Aff. 5. ment given on either fide no error lies.

So if nul tiel record be pleaded, which is to be 9 H. 7. 2. tried by the inspection of the record, and judg- 19 H. 6. 52. ment be thereupon given, no error lieth.

So if in the affize the tenant faith, he is countee de Dale, & nient nosme countee in the writ, this 9 Aff. 8. F. N. Br. 21.

shall be tried by the records of the chancery,

and upon judgment given no error lieth.

So if a felon demand his clergy, and read well and distinctly, and the court who is judge thereof do put him from his clergy wrongfully, error shall never be brought upon the attainder.

So if upon judgment given upon confession for default, and the court do affess damages, the defendant shall never bring a writ, though the damage

be outragious.

AND it feemeth in the case of maim, and some other cases, that the court may dismiss themselves of discussing the matter by examination, and put it to a jury, and then the party grieved shall have his attaint; and therefore it feemeth that the court, that doth deprive a man of his action, should be fubject to an action; but that notwithstanding the law will not have, as was faid in the beginning, the judges called in question in the point of their office when they undertake to discuss the issue, and that is the true reason; for to say that the reason of these cases should be, because trial by the court should be peremptory as trial by certificate, (as by the Bishop in case of bastardy, or by the marshal of the King, &c.) the cases are nothing alike; for the reason of those cases of certificate is, because if the court should not give credit to the certificate, but should re-examine it, they have no other mean but to write again to the fame Lord Bishop, or the same Lord Marshal, which were frivolous, because it is not to be prefumed they would differ from their former certificate; whereas in these other cases of error the matter is drawn before a superior court, to reexamine the errors of an inferior court; and therefore the true reason is, as was said, that to examine again that which the court had tried, were in substance to attaint the court.

AND therefore this is a certain rule in error, that error in law is ever of fuch matters as do appear

21 Aff. 24. 11 H. 4. 41. 7 H. 6. 37.

no for inf

pe

fu

to

th

co

be by fin fha up

eri

rec

be

affi gar the ed

cle

an

err Re

. jun and tion allo

tion bro raif

Poff tion

pear upon record; and error in fact is ever of such matters as are not crossed by the record; as to allege the death of the tenant at the time of the judgment given, nothing appeareth upon record to the contrary.

So when the infant levies a fine, it appeareth F. N. Br. 21. not upon the record that he is an infant, therefore it is an error in fact, and shall be tried by

inspection during nonage. But if a writ of error be brought in the King's bench of a fine levied by an infant, and the court by inspection and examination doth affirm the fine, the infant, though it be during his infancy, hall never bring a writ of error in the parliament upon this judgment; not but that error lies after 2 R. 3. 20. error, but because it doth now appear upon the record that he is now of full age, therefore it can be no error in fact. And therefore if a man will F. N. Br. 21. affign for error that fact, that whereas the judges 9 Ed. 4.3. gave judgment for him, the clerks entered it in the roll against him, this error shall not be allowed; and yet it doth not touch the judges but the clerks; but the reason is, if it be an error, it is an error in fact; and you shall never allege an

Reg. 18. Persona conjuncta æquiparatur interesse proprio.

error in fact contrary to the record.

THE law hath that respect of nature and conjunction of blood, as in divers cases it compareth and matcheth nearness of blood with consideration of profit and interest; yea, and in some cases alloweth of it more strongly.

THEREFORE if a man covenant in considera- 7 & 8 Eliz. tion of blood, to stand seised to the use of his brother, or son, or near kinsman, an use is well raised of this covenant without transmutation of possession; nevertheless it is true, that consideration of blood is not to ground a personal contract

3

error, do appear

cery,

well

here-

error

or de-

efen-

mage

fome felves

d put

have court.

ild be

ig the

ning,

their

iffue,

at the

ertifi-

or by

e nof cer-

e cre-

ain to

e pre-

or the

to re-

there-

exa-

were

MAXIMS OF THE LAW.

upon; as if I contract with my son, that in confideration of blood I will give unto him such a sum of money, this is a nudum pactum, and no assumptit lieth upon it; for to subject me to an action, there needeth a consideration of benefit, but the use the law raiseth without suit or action; and besides, the law doth match real considerations with real agreements and covenants.

So if a fuit be commenced against me, my fon, or brother, I may maintain as well as he in remainder for his interest, or his lawyer for his fee; and if my brother have a fuit against my nephew or cousin, yet it is at my election to maintain the cause of my nephew or cousin, though the adverse party be nearer unto me in blood.

So in challenges of juries, challenge of blood is as good as challenge within diffress, and it is not material how far off the kindred be, so the pedigree can be conveyed in a certainty, whether it be of the half blood or whole.

So if a man menace me, that he will imprison or hurt in body my father, or my child, except I make such an obligation, I shall avoid this duresse, as well as if the duresse had been to mine own person: and yet if a man menace me, by taking away or destruction of my goods, this is no good duresse to plead; and the reason is, because the law can make me reparation of that loss, and so it cannot of the other.

So if a man under the years of twenty-one, contract for the nursing of his lawful child, this contract is good, and shall not be avoided by infancy, no more than if he had contracted for his own aliments or erudition.

19 Ed. 4. 5. 19 Ed. 4. 22. 22 H. 6. 35. 21 H. 6. 15, 16. 22 H. 6. 5. 20 H. 6. 14 H. 6. 6. 14 H. 7 2. 14 & 15 Eliz. 21 Ed. 4. 75. Com. 4. 25.

15 H. 6. 17. 39 H. 6. 50. 21 Ed. 4 13. 18 H. 6. 21. 15 Ed. 4. 1. 39 H. 6. 91. 7 Ed. 4. 21. 20 Aff. 14. Perk 4. D. cap. 28.

Reg.

R

no

tec

the

the

rog

the

po

tic

tw

ing

tra

lat

jud

do

is I

alte

the

if]

nev

fub

fuc

ly

fan

to

ry

or alth curr effic con the Reg. 19. Non impedit claufula derogatoria, quo minus ab eadem potestate res dissolvantur a quibus constituuntur.

Acts, which are in their natures revocable, cannot by strength of words be fixed or perpetuated; yet men have put in ure two means to bind themselves from changing or dissolving that which they have set down, whereof one is clausula derogatoria, the other interpositio juramenti, whereof the former is only pertinent to the present purpose.

This claufula derogatoria is by the common practical term called claufula non obfiante, and is of two forts, de præterito & de futuro, the one weakening and difannulling any matter past to the contrary, the other any matter to come; and this latter is that only whereof we speak.

THE clausula de non obstante de suturo, the law judgeth to be idle and of no force, because it doth dprive men of that which of all other things is most incident to human condition, and that is alteration or repentance.

THEREFORE if I make my will, and in the end thereof do add fuch like clause, Also my will is if I shall revoke this present will, or declare any new will, except the fame shall be in writing, subscribed with the hands of two witnesses, that such revocation or new declaration shall be utterly void, and by these presents I do declare the ame not to be my will, but this my former will to stand, any fuch pretended will to the contrary notwithstanding; yet nevertheless this clause or any the like never fo exactly penned, and although it do restrain the revocation but in circumstance and not altogether, is of no force or efficacy to fortify the former will against the second; but I may by parol without writing repeal the same will and make it anew.

ch a

d no

an

ion;

lera-

, my

he in

e his

t my

n to

ousin,

ne in

ood is

s not

pedi-

her it

orifon

cept I

s du-

mine

e, by

this is

s, be-

f that

y-one,

, this

by in-

for his

ele

rog

ble

law

fior

fcri

wit

fo

two

al!

VOC

the

gen

oth

foli

mad

cafe

it 1 of i

I

peri

Wit

new

and

yea

rep

tor

Wer

Voic null

8

vale V

reaf

fay

any befo

tion

gato

men

28 Ed. 3. cap.7. 24 Ed. 3. cap. 9. 2 H. 7. 6.

So if there be a statute made that no sheriff shall continue in his office above a year, and if any patent be made to the contrary it shall be void; and if there be any clausula de non abstante contained in fuch patent to dispense with this present act, that fuch clause also shall be void; yet nevertheless a patent of the sheriff's office made by the King for term of life, with a non obstante will be good in law contrary to fuch statute, which pretendeth to exclude non obstante's; and the reason is, because it is an inseparable prerogative of the crown to dispense with politick statutes, and of that kind; and then the derogatory clause hurteth not.

So if an act of parliament be made wherein there is a clause contained, that it shall not be lawful for the King, by authority of parliament, during the space of seven years, to repeal and determine the fame act, this is a void clause, and fuch act may be repealed within the feven years; and yet if the parliament should enact in the nature of the ancient lex regia, that there should be no more parliaments held, but that the king should have the authority of the parliament; this act were good in law, quia potestas suprema seipsum dissolvere pitest, ligare non potest: for as it is in the power of a man to kill a man, but it is not in his power to fave him alive, and to restrain him from breathing or feeling; fo it is in the power of a parliament to extinguish or transfer their own authority, but not whilft the authority remains entire to restrain the functions and exercises of the fame authority.

So in 28 of K. H. VIII. chap. 17. there was a statute made, that all acts that passed in the minority of Kings, reckoning the same under the years of twenty-four, might be annulled and revoked by their letters patent when they came to 14 El. Dy. 313. the same years; but this act in the first of K. Ed. VI. who was then between the years of ten and eleven

eleven, cap. 11. was repealed, and a new law furrogate in place thereof, wherein a more reasonable liberty was given: and wherein, though other laws are made revocable according to the provifion of the former law with some new form prescribed, yet that very law of revocation, together Pl. Com. 563. with pardons, is made irrevocable and perpetual, so that there is a direct contrariety between these two laws; for if the former stands, which maketh all latter laws during the minority of Kings revocable without exception of any law whatfoever, then that very law of repeal is concluded in the generality, and fo itself made revocable: on the other fide, that law making no doubt of the absolute repeal of the first law, though itself were made during the minority, which was the very case of the former law in the new provision which it maketh, hath a precise exception, that the law of repeal shall not be repealed.

Bur the law is, that the first law by the impertinency of it was void ab initio & ipso facto without repeal; as if a law were made, that no new statute should be made during seven years, and the same statute be repealed within the seven years, if the first statute should be good, then no repeal could be made thereof within that time; for the law of repeal were a new law, and that were disabled by the former law; therefore it is void in itself, and the rule holds, perpetua lex est nullam legem humanam ac positivam perpetuam esse; & clausula quæ abrogationem excludit initio non valet.

NEITHER is the difference of the civil law fo reasonable as colourable, for they distinguish and lay that a derogatory clause is good to disable any latter act, except you revoke the same clause before you proceed to establish any latter disposition or declaration; for they fay, that claufula derogatoria ad alias sequentes voluntates posita in testamento (viz. si testator dicat qd' si contigerit eum facers

rein : be ent, deand ars; na-

hall

any

id;

on-

ent

ver-

the

l be

ore-

fon

the d of

urt-

ould act difthe n his from

d be

of a auenthe

as a mithe d rene to . Ed.

and even

by

ou

or

ma

ch

no

ex

fed

bu

is

th

of

da

tra

gi

an

an

for

ter

ye

for be

di

a

pr

CO

di

th

a |

no

po

facere aliud testamentum non vult illud valere) operatur quod sequens dispositio ab ipsa clausula reguletur, & per consequens quod sequens dispositio duretur sine voluntate, & sic quod non sit attendendum. The sense is, that where a former will is made, and after a latter will, the reason why without an express revocation of the former will it is by implication revoked, is because of the repugnancy between the disposition of the former and the latter.

But where there is such a derogatory clause, there can be gathered no such repugnancy; because it seemeth that the testator had a purpose at the making of the first will to make some shew of a new will, which nevertheless his intention was should not take place: but this was answered before; for if that clause were allowed to be good until a revocation, then could no revocation at all be made; therefore it must needs be void by operation of law at first. Thus much of clausula derogatoria.

Reg. 20. Aslus incaptus, cujus perfectio pendet ex voluntate partium, revocari potest; si autem pendet ex voluntate tertiæ personæ, vel ex contingenti, revocari non potest.

In acts that are fully executed and confummate, the law makes this difference, that if the first parties have put it in the power of a third person, or of a contingency, to give a persection to their acts, then they have put it out of their own reach and liberty; therefore there is no reason they should revoke them: but if the confummation depend upon the same consent, which was the inception, then the law accountes it in vain to restrain them from revoking of it, for as they may srustrate it by omission, and nonfeasance, at a certain time, or in a certain fort or circumstance, so the law permitteth them to dissolve it

by an express consent before that time, or without that circumstance.

THEREFORE if two exchange land by deed, or without deed, and neither enter, they may F. N. Br. 36. make a revocation or dissolution of the same ex- 13 H. 7. 13, 14. change by mutual confent; fo it be by deed, but not by parol; for as much as the making of an exchange needeth no deed, because it is to be perfected by entry, which is a ceremony notorious in the nature of a livery; but it cannot be dissolved but by deed, because it dischargeth that which is but title.

So if I contract with I. D. that if he lay me E. 36 Eliz. into my cellar three tuns of wine before Mich. that I will bring into his garner twenty quarters of wheat before Christmas, before either of these days the parties may by affent dissolve the contract; but after the first day there is a perfection given to the contract by action on the one fide, and they may make crofs releases by deed or parol, but never dissolve the contract, for there is a difference between dissolving the contract, and release or surrender of the thing contracted for: as if leffee for twenty years make a leafe for ten years, and after he take a new leafe for five years, yet this cannot inure by way of furrender: for a petty lease derived out of a greater cannot be furrendered back again, but inureth only by diffolution of contract; for a lease of land is but a contract executory from time to time of the profits of the land, to arise as a man may sell his corn or his tithe to spring or to be perceived for divers future years.

But to return from our digression; on the other side, if I contract with you for cloth at such a price as I. S. shall name; there if I. S. refuse to name, the contract is void; but the parties cannot discharge it, because they have put it in the

power of the third person to persect.

So

withl it is epugr and clause, 7; beurpole e shew on was ed be-

e good

ion at

oid by

laufula

opera-

iletur,

er sine

made,

The

idet ex pendet nti, re-

onfumif the a third fection f their no reae conwhich h it in for as a fance,

circum-Nolve it by

II H. 7. 19. 1 R. 2. F. atturnment

So if I grant my reversion, though this be an imperfect act before aturnment; yet because the atturnment is the act of a stranger, this is not fimply revocable, but by a policy or circumstance in law, as by levying a fine, or making a bargain and fale, or the like.

te

fu

pu

no

m

to

th

th Vie

th

fit

hi

vi

of

ce

an

ufe

fpe

the yes

au

and

mj feo

me clar

Itar

fon

the pof

an

friv

the of :

and

31 Ed. 1. F.Q. Imp. 185. 14 Ed. 4. 2. 38 Ed. 3. 35.

So if I present a clerk to the Bishop, now can I not revoke this prefentation, because I have put it out of myfelf, that is, in the Bishop, by admission, to perfect my act begun.

14 Ed. 4. 2.

THE fame difference appeareth in nominations and elections; as if I enfeoff I. S. upon condition to enfeoff such a one as I. D. shall name within a year, and I. D. name I. B. yet before the feoffment, and within the year, I. D. may countermand his nomination, and name again, because no interest passeth out of him. But if I enfeoff I. S. to the use of such a one as I. D. shall name within a year, then if I. D. name I. B. it is not revocable, because the use passeth presently by operation of law.

So in judicial acts the rule of the civil law holdeth, sententia interlocutoria revocari potest, definitiva non potest; that is, that an order may be revoked, but a judgment cannot; and the reason is, because there is a title of execution or bar given prefently unto the party upon judgment; and so it is out of the judge to revoke in courts

ordered by the common law.

Reg. 21. Clausula vel dispositio inutilis per prasumptionem remotam vel causam, ex post facto non fulcitur.

CLAUSULA vel dispositio inutilis are said, when the act or the words do work or express no more than the law by intendment would have supplied; and therefore the doubling or iterating of that and no more, which the conceit of the law doth in a fort prevent and preoccupate, is reputed

ted nugation, and is not supported and made of substance either by a foreign intendment of some purpose, in regard whereof it might be material, nor upon any cause emerging afterwards, which may induce an operation of those idle words or

AND therefore if a man devise land at this day 32 H. 8. Goord to his fon and heir, this is a void devise, because 39 Ber. the disposition of the law did cast the same upon Br. devises 41. the heir by descent; and yet if it be knight-service land, and the heir within age, if he take by the devise, he shall have two parts of the profits to his own use, and the guardian shall have benefit but of the third; but if a man devise land to his two daughters, having no fons, then the devise is good, because he doth alter the disposition 29 H. 8. Dy. 12? of law; for by the law they shall take in coparcenary, but by the devise they shall take jointly; and this is not any foreign collateral purpose, but

in point of taking of estate.

is be

cause

this is

cum-

ing a

v can

e put

y ad-

ations

dition

thin a

feoff-

unter-

use no

ff I. S.

withot re-

by 0-

vil law

ft, de-

lay be

reason or bar

ment;

courts

er praacto non

e faid,

ress no

ive fup-

ting of

the law

is reputed

So if a man make a feoffment in fee, to the ule of his last will and testament, these words of special limitation are void, and the law reserveth the ancient use to the feoffor and his heirs; and yet if the words might stand, then might it be authority by his will to declare and appoint uses, and then though it were knight-fervice land, he might dispose the whole. As if a man make a feofiment in fee, to the use of the will and testament of a stranger, there the stranger may declare an use of the whole by his will, notwithstanding it be knight-service land; but the reason of the principal case is, because uses before the statute of 27 H. VIII. were to have been difposed by will; and therefore before that statute an use limited in the form aforesaid, was but a frivolous limitation, in regard of the old use that the law reserved was deviseable; and the statute

of 27. altereth not the law, as to the creating 19 H. 8. 11. and limiting of any use; and therefore after that 5 Ed. 4. 8.

statute,

statute, and before the statute of wills, when no land could have been devifed, yet was it a void limitation as before, and fo continueth to this

day!

Bur if I make a feoffment in fee, to the use of my last will and testament, thereby to declare an estate-tail and no greater estate; and after my Death, and after fuch estate declared shall expire, or in default of fuch declaration, then to the use of I. S. and his heirs, this is a good limitation; and I may by my will declare an use of the whole land to a stranger, though it be held in knight-service, and yet I have an estate in fee-simple by virtue of the old use during life.

19 H. 8. 11. 6 Ed. 4. 8.

32H, 8. 43. Dy. 20H, 8. 8. Dy.

So if I make a feoffment in fee to the use of 7 Eliz. 237. Dy. my right heirs, this is a void limitation; and the use reserved by the law doth take place; and yet if the limitation should be good the heir should come in by way of purchase, who otherwise cometh in by descent; but this is but a circumstance which the law respecteth not, as was proved be-

Devise, 9.

2 Ed. 3.29. 30 E. 3. Fitz.

Bur if I make a feoffment in fee to the use of my right heirs, and the right heirs of I. S. this 10Eliz.274.Dy, is a good use, because I have altered the dispofition of law; neither is it void for a moiety, but both our right heirs when they come in being shall take by joint purchase; and he to whom the first falleth shall take the whole, subject nevertheless to his companions titles, so it have not descended from the first heir to the heir of the heir: for a man cannot be joint-tenant claiming by purchase, and the other by descent, because they be feveral titles.

So if a man having land on the part of his mother make a feoffment in fee to the use of himfelf and his heirs, this use, though expressed, shall not go to him and the heirs of the part of his father as a new purchase, no more than it should have done if it had been a feoffment in fee naked-

4 M. 133. pl. 6. Dyer.

tio bot cor mu

ly

ret in

the

ma aft fur as : ted

yet WO if o OCC

acr iffu and this the

first plar ren S

that law cont tion entr

estat eth War

S knig fame the g

ly

ly without confideration, for the intendment is remote. But if baron and feme be, and they join in a fine of the feme's land, and express an use to the husband and wife and their heirs: this limitation shall give a joint estate by intierties to them both; because the intendment of law would have 5 Ed. 4. 8. conveyed the use to the seme alone. And thus 19 H. 8. 11. much touching foreign intendments.

For matter ex post facto, if a lease for life be made to two, and the furvivor of them, and they after make partition: now these words (and the survivor of them) should seem to carry purpose as a limitation, that either of them should be stated in his part for both their lives feverally; but yet the law at the first constructh the words but words of dilating to describe a joint estate; and 30 Ass. 8. Firz. if one of them die after partition there shall be no part. 16. occupant, but his part shall revert.

1 H. 8. 46. Pl. 7. Dy.

So if a man grant a rent-charge out of ten acres, and grant farther that the whole rent shall issue out of every acre, and distress accordingly, and afterwards the grantee purchase an acre: now this clause should seem to be material to uphold the whole rent; but yet nevertheless the law at first accepteth of these words but as words of explanation, and then notwithstanding the whole rent is extinct.

So if a gift in tail be made upon condition, 4E. 6. Com.33. that if tenant in tail die without issue, it shall be per Hinde lawful for the donor to enter, and the donee difcontinue and die without issue: now this condition should seem material to give him benefit of entry, but because it did at the first limit the estate according to the limitation of law, it worketh nothing upon this matter emergent after-

So if a gift in tail be made of lands held in knight-service with an express reservation of the lame service, whereby the land is held over, and 22 Ass. Pl. 52. the gift is with warranty, and the land is evicted,

and

use of S. this dispoy, but being whom Et neive not

of the

aiming

n no

void

this

e use

clare

r my

l ex-

o the

mita-

fe of

held

tc in

fe of

d the

nd yet

hould

com-

Stance

ed be-

fe.

pecaule of his of himd, shall his fafhould

nakedly ward.

and other land is recovered in value against the donor, held in socage, now the tenure which the law makes between the donor and donee shall be in socage, and not in knight-service; because the first reservation was according to the ovelty of service, which was no more than the law would have reserved.

But if a gift in tail had been made of lands held in focage with a refervation of knight-fervice tenure, and with warranty, then because the intendment of law is altered, the new land shall be held by the same service the lost land was, without any regard at all to the tenure paramount: and thus much of matter ex post facto.

This rule faileth where that the law faith as much as the party, but upon foreign matter not pregnant and appearing upon the same act or conveyance, as if lessee for life be, and he lets for twenty years, if he lives so long; this limitation (if he live so long) is no more than the law saith, but it doth not appear upon the same conveyance or act, that this limitation is nugatory, but it is foreign matter in respect of the truth of the state whence the lease is derived: and therefore if lessee for life make a feossiment in see, yet the state of the lessee for years is not enlarged against the feossee; otherwise had it been if such limitation had not been, but that it had been lest only to the law.

So if tenant after possibility make a lease for years, and the donor confirms to the lessee to hold without impeachment of waste during the life of tenant in tail, this is no more than the law saith; but the privilege of tenant after possibility is foreign matter, as to the lease and confirmation: and therefore if tenant after possibility do surrender, yet the lessee shall hold dispunishable of waste; otherwise had it been if no such confirmation at all had been made.

16 H. 7. 4. per Keble. 24 Ed 3. 28. Fitz. pl. 98. fai

the

fer

the

and

rat

far

rul

tho

are

up

cle

no

the

not

WO

cor

are if

to

par tak

for

wh

is a

1

diti

die

ter

cau

the

tha

Wit

Also heed must be given that it be indeed the same thing which the law intendeth, and which the party expresseth, and not only like or resembling, and such as may stand both together: for if I let land for life rendring a rent, and by my deed warrant the same land, this war- 20 Ed.3. Firz 7. ranty in law and warranty in deed are not the 21 E.1. Zouch. same thing, but may both stand together.

THERE remaineth yet a great question on this

rule.

the

vhich

shall

o the

n the

lands t-fer-

le the

fhall

was,

para-

ith as

r not

e lets

limine law

con-

atory,

ith of

theree, yet

larged f fuch

en left

fe for

o hold

life of

faith;

ility is

ation:

urren-

waste;

tion at

Eto.

be-

A principal reason, whereupon this rule is built, should feem to be because such acts or clauses are thought to be but declaratory, and added upon ignorance of the law, and ex consuetudine clericorum upon observing of a common form, and not upon purpose or meaning, and therefore whether by particular and precise words a man may not controul the intendment of the law.

To this I answer, that no precise or express words will controul this intendment of law; but as the general words are void, because they say contrary to that the law saith; so are they which are thought to be against the law: and therefore if I devise my land being knight-service tenure to my heir, and express my intention to be, that the one part should descend to him as the third part appointed by statute, and the other he shall take by devise to his own use, yet this is void; for the law saith, he is in by descent of the whole, and I say he shall be in by devise, which is against the law.

But if I make a gift in tail, and say upon condition, that if tenant in tail discontinue, and after die without issue, it shall be lawful for me to enter; this is a good clause to make a condition, because it is but in one case, and doth not cross the law generally: for if the tenant in tail in that case be disseised, and a descent cast, and die without issue, I that am the donor shall not enter.

ALSO

Bur

Lit. pl. 362.

But if the clause had been, provided that if tenant in tail discontinue, or suffer a descent, or do any other act whatsoever, that after his death without issue it shall be lawful for me to enter: now this is a void condition, for it importeth a repugnancy to law; as if I would over-rule that where the law saith I am put to my action; I nevertheless will reserve to myself an entry.

Reg. 22. Non videtur consensum retinuisse si quis ex præscripto minantis aliquid immutavit.

ALTHOUGH choice and election be a badge of confent, yet if the first ground of the act be duresse, the law will not construe that the duresse doth determine, if the party duressed do make

any motion or offer.

THEREFORE if a party menace me, except I make unto him a bond of 40 l. and I tell him that I will do it, but I will make unto him a bond of 20 l. the law shall not expound this bond to be voluntary, but shall rather make construction that my mind and courage is not to enter into the greater bond for any menace, and yet that I enter by compulsion notwithstanding into the lesser.

But if I will draw any consideration to myself, as if I had said, I will enter into your bond of 40 l. if you will deliver me that piece of plate, now the duresse is discharged; and yet if it had been moved from the duressor, who had said at the first, you shall take this piece of plate, and make me a bond of 40 l. now the gift of the plate had been good, and yet the bond shall be avoided by duresse.

Reg

R

th

Pa

fee

thi

the

av

no

is

me

tha

to

ou

but

8

hei

wh

tan

5

wil

this

of

fes

aml

the

heir post

hold mat Reg. 23. Ambiguitas verborum latens verificatione Zero heysuppletur; nam quod ex facto oritur ambiguum ve- perificatione facti tollitur.

THERE be two forts of ambiguities of words, the one is ambiguitas patens, and the other Latens. Patens is that which appears to be ambiguous upon the deed or instrument; Latens is that which seemeth certain and without ambiguity, for any thing that appeareth upon the deed or instrument; but there is some collateral matter out of the deed, that breedeth the ambiguity.

AMBIGUITAS patens is never holpen by averment, and the reason is, because the law will not couple and mingle matter of specialty, which is of the higher account, with matter of averment, which is of inferior account in law; for that were to make all deeds hollow, and subject to averments, and so in effect, that to pass without deed, which the law appointeth shall not pass but by deed.

THEREFORE if a man give land to I. D. & I. S. & bæredibus, and do not limit to whether of their heirs, it shall not be supplied by averment to whether of them the intention was, the inheritance should be limited.

So if a man give land in tail, though it be by will, the remainder in tail, and add a proviso in this manner: Provided that if he, or they, or any of them do any, &c. according to the usual clauses of perpetuities, it cannot be averred upon the ambiguities of the reference of this clause, that the intent of the devisor was, that the restraint should go only to him in the remainder, and the heirs of his body; and that the tenant in tail in possession was meant to be at large.

OF these infinite cases might be put, for it holdeth generally that all ambiguity of words by matter within the deed, and not out of the deed,

fhall

Reg

at if

t, or

leath iter:

eth a

that n; I

a quis

dge of

act be

luresse

make

cept I

m that

ond of

to be

on that

to the

that I

to the

myfelf,

ond of

f plate,

f it had

faid at

ate, and

t of the

shall be

shall be holpen by construction, or in some case by election, but never by averment, but rather

shall make the deed void for uncertainty.

But if it be ambiguitas latens, then otherwise it is: as if I grant my manor of S. to I. F. and his heirs, here appeareth no ambiguity at all; but if the truth be, that I have the manors both of South S. and North S. this ambiguity is matter in fact; and therefore it shall be holpen by averment, whether of them was that the party intended should pass.

So if I fet forth my land by quantity, then it shall be supplied by election, and not averment.

As if I grant ten acres of wood in fale, where I have an hundred acres, whether I fay it in my deed or no, that I grant out of my hundred acres, yet here shall be an election in the grantee, which ten he will take.

And the reason is plain, for the presumption of the law is, where the thing is only nominated by quantity, that the parties had indifferent intentions which should be taken, and there being no cause to help the uncertainty by intention, it

shall be holpen by election.

But in the former case the difference holdeth, where it is expressed, and where not; for if I recite, Whereas I am seized of the manor of North S. and South S. I lease unto you unum manerium de S. there it is clearly an election. So if I recite, Where I have two tenements in St. Dunstan's, I lease unto you unum tenementum, there it is an election, not averment of intention, except the intent were of an election, which may be specially averred.

ANOTHER fort of ambiguitas latens is correlative unto these: for this ambiguity spoken of before, is when one name and appellation doth denominate divers things, and the second, when the

fame thing is called by divers names.

ar

in

m

W

th

do

int

fta

an

tel

th

no

th

un

Re

alt

yet

fee

this

bot

par

firm

dee

S

and

tar le

per f

ment

40.

16. 8

As if I give lands to Christ-Church in Oxford, and the name of the corporation is Ecclesia Christi in universitate Oxford, this shall be holpen by averment, because there appears no ambiguity in the words: for this variance is matter in fact, but the averment shall not be of intention, because it doth stand with the words.

For in the case of equivocation the general intent includes both the special, and therefore stands with the words: but so it is not in variance, and therefore the averment must be of matter, that do endure quantity, and not intention.

As to fay of the precinct of Oxford, and of the university of Oxford is one and the same, and not to say that the intention of the parties was, that the grant should be to Christ-Church in that university of Oxford.

Reg. 24. Licita bene miscentur, formula nisi juris obstet.

THE law giveth that favour to lawful acts, that although they be executed by several authorities, yet the whole is good.

As when tenant for life is the remainder in fee, and they join in a livery by deed or without, this is one good entire livery drawn from them both, and doth not inure to a furrender of the particular estate, if it be without deed *, or confirmation of those in the remainder, if it be by deed, but they are all parties to the livery.

So if tenant for life the remainder in fee be, and they join in granting a rent, this is one folid

G 3

rent

elative before, enomien the

e cafe

rather

erwise

F. and

1; but

oth of

tter in

aver-

ty in-

then it

where

in my

undred

gran-

mption

inated ent in-

being

ion, it

oldeth,

recite,

orth S.

rium de

recite,

an's, 1

t is an

pt the

special-

ent.

As

^{*} Semble clerement le ley d'estre contrary in ambideux cases. car lou est sans fait est livery solement de cestui in le rem' & surr' de partic' ten' auterment serra forseiture de son estate, & lou est per fait le livery passa solement de tenant, car il ad le franktenement, vide accordant Sur Co. l. 1. 79. b. 77. a. Com. Plow. 59. A. 40. 2 H. 5. 7. 13 H. 7. 14. 13 E. 4. 4. a. 27 H. 8. 13 M. 16. & 17. El. Dy. 339.

MAXIMS OF THE LAW.

rent out both their estates, and no double rent.

or rent by confirmation.

So if tenant in tail be at this day, and he make a lease for three lives, and his own, this is a good leafe, and warranted by the statute of 32 H. VIII. and yet it is good in part by the authority which tenant in tail hath by the common law, that is, for his own life, and in part by the authority which he hath by the statute, that is, for the other three lives.

So if a man feised of lands deviseable by cuftom, and of other land held in knight-fervice, and devise all his lands, this is a good devise of all the land customary by the common law, and of two parts of the other land by the statutes.

So in the star-chamber a fentence may be good, grounded in part upon the authority given the court by the statute of 3 H. VII. and in part upon that ancient authority which the court hath by the common law, and fo upon feveral commissions.

Bur if there be any form which law appointeth to be observed, which cannot agree with the diversities of authorities, then this rule faileth.

As if three coparceners be, and one of them alien her purparty, the feoffee and one of the Vide 1. Instit. fisters cannot join in a writ de part' facienda, because it behoveth the feoffee to mention the statute in his writ.

> Reg. 25. Præsentia corporis tollit errorem nominis, & veritas nominis tollit errorem demonstratiomis.

THERE be three degrees of certainty.

- I. PRESENCE.
- 2. NAME.

3. DEMONSTRATION or reference.

WHEREOF the presence the law holdeth of greatest dignity, the name in the second degree, and

Quære.

166. b.

rii an

ar ar

th

pr

is

W

liv

I

OU

bu

th

all by inc

the ter

da

ter the

the mi of

is :

Wh mo

ten ger

tha

and yel and the demonstration or reference in the lowest, and always the error or falsity in the less worthy.

And therefore if I give a horse to I. D. being present, and say unto him, I. S. take this; this is a good gift, notwithstanding I call him by a wrong name: but so had it not been if I had delivered him to a stranger to the use of I. S. where I meant I. D.

So if I say unto I. S. here I give you my ring with the ruby, and deliver it with my hand, and the ring bear a diamond and no ruby, this is a good gift notwithstanding I name it amis.

So had it been if by word or writing, without the delivery of the thing itself, I had given the ring with the ruby, although I had no such, but only one with a diamond which I meant, yet it would have passed.

So if I by deed grant unto you by general words, all the lands that the King hath passed unto me by letters patent dated 10 May, unto this present indenture annexed, and the patent annexed have date 10 July; yet if it be proved that that was the true patent annexed, the presence of the patent maketh the error of the date recited not material; yet if no patent had been annexed, and there had been also no other certainty given, but the reference of the patent, the date whereof was missrecited, although I had no other patent ever of the King, yet nothing would have passed.

LIKE law is it, but more doubtful, where there is not a presence, but a kind of representation, which is less worthy than a presence, and yet more worthy than a name or reference.

As if I covenant with my ward, that I will tender unto him no other marriage, than the gentlewoman whose picture I delivered him, and that picture hath about it Ætatis suæ anno 16. and the gentlewoman is seventeen years old; yet nevertheless if it can be proved that the

G 4 picture

minis, stratio-

rent,

nake

good

VIII.

hich

t is,

ority

he o-

v cu-

rvice,

fe of

and

good,

n the

part

hath

com-

inteth

he di-

them

of the

a, be-

e sta-

h.

es.

eth of legree, and picture was made for that gentlewoman, I may, notwithstanding this mistaking, tender her well

enough.

So if I grant you for life a way over my land, according to a plot intended between us, and after I grant unto you and your heirs a way according to the first plot intended, whereof a table is annexed to these presents, and there be some special variance between the table and the original plot, yet this representation shall be certainty sufficient to lead unto the first plot; and you shall have the way in see nevertheless, according to the first plot, and not according to the table.

So if I grant unto you by general words the land which the King hath granted me by his letters patent, Quarum tenor sequitur in hac verba, &3c. and there be some mistaking in the recital and variance from the original patent, although it be in a point material; yet the representation of this whole patent shall be as the annexing of the true patent, and the grant shall not be void

by this variance.

Now for the second part of this rule touching the name and the reference, for the explaining thereof, it must be noted what things sound in demonstration or addition: as first in lands, the greatest certainty is, where the land hath a name proper, as the manor of Dale, Grandfield, &c. the next is equal to that, when the land is set forth by bounds and abuttals, as a close of pasture bounding on the East part upon Emsdenwood, on the South upon, &c. It is also a sufficient name to lay the general boundary, that is, some place of larger precinct, if there be no other land to pass in the same precinct, as all my lands in Dale, my tenement in S. Dunstan's parish, &c.

A farther fort of denomination is to name land by the attendancy they have to other lands more notorious, as parcel of my manor of D.

be-

bel

ban

tion

the

but

and

acc

tar

in 1

grai

ftru

I. 1

mis,

it i

tho

and

exa 7

the and

of]

in t

cel i

hur

nam

a pr

men

purp

extr

gate

gran mini

S

belonging to fuch a college lying upon Thames

ay,

nd,

af-

ac-

ta-

be

the

er-

and

ac-

the

the

his

rba.

ital

ugh

of

roid

ich-

ain-

und

nds,

ield,

d is

e ot

denfuf-

t is,

her

nds

3c.

ame

nds

D.

All these things are notes found in denomination of lands, because they be signs to call, and therefore of property to signify and name a place; but these notes that sound only in demonstration and addition, are such as are but transitory and accidental to the nature of the place.

As modo in tenura & occupatione of the proprietary tenure or possession is but a thing transitory in respect of land; Generatio venit, generatio migrat, terra autem manet in æternum.

So likewise matter of conveyance, title, or in-

As, quæ perquisivi de I. D. quæ descendebant a I. N. patre meo, or, in prædicta indentura dimissionis, or, in prædictis literis patentibus specificat.

So likewise continent' per aftimationem 20 acras, or if (per aftimationem) be left out, all is one, for it is understood, and this matter of measure, although it seem local, yet it is indeed but opinion and observation of men.

THE distinction being made, the rule is to be examined by it.

THEREFORE if I grant my close called Dale in the parish of Hurst, in the county of Southampton, and the parish likewise extendeth into the county of Barkshire, and the whole close of Dale lyeth in the county of Barkshire; yet because the parcel is especially named, the falsity of the addition hurteth not, and yet this addition is found in name, but (as it was said) it was less worthy than a proper name.

So if I grant tenementum meum, or omnia tenementa mea (for the univerfal and indefinite to this purpose are all one) in parochia Sancti Butolphi extra Aldgate (where the verity is extra Bishopsgate) in tenura Guilielmi, which is true, yet this grant is void, because that which sounds in denomination is false, which is the more worthy; and

that

that which founds in addition is true, which is the less; * and though in tenura Guilielmi, which is true, had been first placed, yet it had been all one.

Vide ib. quæ contraria est faux.

But if I grant tenementum meum quod perquifivi de R. C. in Dale, where the truth was T. C. and lex, car icy de R. C. in Daie, where the primer I have no other tenements in D. but one, this grant is good, because that which soundeth in name, (viz. in Dale) is true, and that which founded in addition (viz. quod perquifivi, &c.) is only false.

So if I grant prata mea in Dale continentia 10 acras, and they contain indeed twenty acres, the

whole twenty pass.

So if I grant all my lands, being parcels manerii de D. in prædictis literis patentibus (pecificat', and there be no letters patent, yet the grant is good

enough.

THE like reason holds in demonstrations of perfons that have been declared in demonstration of lands and places, the proper name of every one is in certainty worthieft: next are fuch appellations as are fixed to his person, or at least of continuance, as fon of fuch a man, wife of fuch a husband; or addition of office, as clerk of fuch a court, &c. and the third are actions or accidents, which found no way in appellation or name, but only in circumstance, which are less worthy, although they may have a poor particular reference to the intention of the grant.

AND therefore if an obligation be made to I. S. filio & bæredi G. S. where indeed he is a bastard,

yet this obligation is good.

So if I grant land Episcopo nunc Londinensi qui me erudivit in pueritia, this is a good grant although he never instructed me.

b

ul

gı

fh

do

ti

es

ti

W

di

fo

be

bo

u

ta

th

u

th

th

tic

Cin

git

W

of

no go

la

th

^{*} Semble icy le grant ust este assets bon, coe suit resolu per cur', Co. lib. 3. fo. 10. a. vid. 33 H. 8. Dy. 50. b. 12 El. ib. 292. b. & Co. lib. 2. fo. 33. a.

Bur e converso, if I grant land to I. S. filio & hæredi G. S. and it be true that he is son and heir unto G. S. but his name is Thomas, this is a void grant.

OR if in the former grant it was the Bishop of Canterbury who taught me in my childhood, yet shall it be good (as was said) to the Bishop of Lon-

don, and not to the Bishop of Canterbury.

THE same rule holdeth of denomination of times, which are such a day of the month, such a day of the the week, such a Saint's day or eve, to day, to morrow; these are names of times.

Bur the day that I was born, the day that I was married; these are but circumstances and ad-

dition of times.

ch is

vhich

en all

mistoi

and

this

th in

which

3c.) is

ia Io

, the

anerii

, and

good

f per-

ion of

y one

pella-

aft of

f fuch

f fuch

acci-

on or

re less

articu-

o I. S.

aftard,

nsi qui

nt al-

folu per

2 El. ib.

AND therefore if I bind myself to do some personal attendance upon you upon Innocent's day, being the day of your birth, and you were not born that day, yet shall I attend.

THERE resteth two questions of difficulty yet upon this rule: first, of such things whereof men take not so much note as that they shall fail of

this distinction of name and addition.

As, my box of ivory lying in my study sealed up with my seal of arms, my suit of arras with the story of the Nativity and Passion; of such things there can be no name, but all is of description, and of circumstance, and of these I hold the law to be, that precise truth of all recited circustances is not required.

But in such things ex multitudine signorum colligitur identitas vera, therefore though my box were sealed, and although the arras had the story of the Nativity, and not of the Passion, if I had no other box, nor no other suit, the gifts are good; and there is certainty sufficient, for the law doth not expect a precise description of such

things as have no certain denomination.

BUT

MAXIMS OF THE LAW!

SECONDLY, of fuch things as do admit the diftinction of name and addition, but the notes fall out to be of equal dignity all of name or addition.

As, prata mea juxta communem fossam in D. whereof the one is true, the other false, or tenementum meum in tenura Guilielmi quod perquisivi de R. C. in prædict' Indent' specificat', whereof one is true, and two are false; or two are true, and one false.

So ad curiam quam tenebat die Mercurii tertio die Martii, whereof the one is true, the other false.

Vide livers avant dit pur cest auxi. In these cases the former rule ex multitudine signorum, &c. holdeth not; neither is the placing of the falsity or verity first or last material, but all must be true, or else the grant is void; always understood, that if you can reconcile all the words, and make no falsity, that is quite out of this rule, which hath place only where there is a direct contrariety, or falsity not to be reconciled to this rule.

As if I grant all my land in D. in tenura I. S. which I purchased of I. N. specified in a devise to I. D. and I have land in D. whereof in part of them all these circumstances are true, but I have other lands in D. wherein some of them fail, this grant will not pass all my land in D. for there these are references, and no words of falsity or error, but of limitation and restraint.

P

THE

U S E

OF THE

L A W;

FOR

Preservation of our Persons, Goods, and good Names, according to the practice of the Laws and Customs of this Land.

The Use of the Law, and wherein it principally consisteth.

HE use of the law consisteth principally in these three things:

1. To fecure mens persons from death and violence.

2. To dispose the property of their goods and lands.

3. For prefervation of their good names from shame and infamy.

For fafety of persons, the law provideth that Surety to keep any man standing in sear of another, may take his the peace.

oath before a justice of peace, that he standeth in sear of his life, and the justice shall compel the other

die lse. figcing but

diffall ion.

D.
enei de
one
and

the t of is a ciled

vays

I. S. evise part ut I hem

for lity

HE

USE OF THE LAW.

other to be bound with fureties to keep the

Action for flander, battery, &c.

Ir any man beat, wound, or maim another. or give false scandalous words that may touch his credit, the law giveth thereupon an action of the case, for the slander of his good name; and an action of battery, or an appeal of maim, by which recompence shall be recovered, to the value of the hurt, damage or danger.

Appeal of mur-

Is any man kill another with malice, the law der given to the next of kin. giveth an appeal to the wife of the dead, if he had any, or to the next of kin that is heir, in default of a wife, by which appeal the defendant convicted is to fuffer death, and to lose all his lands and goods; but if the wife or heir will not fue, or be compounded withal, yet the King is to punish the offence by indictment or presentment of a lawful inquest and trial of the offenders before competent judges; whereupon being found guilty he is to fuffer death, and to lose his lands and goods.

Man-flaughter, when a forfeiture of Goods, and when not.

Ir one kill another upon a fudden quarrel, this is man-flaughter, for which the offender must die, except he can read; and if he can read, yet must he lose his goods, but no lands.

And if a man kill another in his own defence, he shall not lose his life, nor his lands, but he must lose his goods, except the party slain did first affault him, to kill, rob, or trouble him by the highway fide, or in his own house, and then he shall lose nothing.

Felon de se.

AND if a man kill himself, all his goods and chattels are forfeited, but no lands.

Felony by mifchance.

IF a man kill another by misfortune, as shooting an arrow at a butt or mark, or casting a stone over an house, or the like, this is loss of his goods and chattels, but not of his lands, nor life.

Deodand.

Ir a horse, or cart, or a beast, or any other thing do kill a man, the horse, beast, or other thing is forfeited to the crown, and is called a Deodand,

and

and the

kill

out

offe

g00

Bu

be

rea

par

in

inf

tha

per

his

unt

kee

for fta

cha

to

ma ing

1

and usually granted and allowed by the King to the Bishop almoner, as goods are of those that kill themselves.

THE cutting out of a man's tongue, or putting Cutting out out his eyes maliciously, is felony; for which the tongues, and offender is to suffer death, and lose his lands and eyes, relony. goods.

But for that all punishment is for example's sake, it is good to see the means whereby offenders are drawn to their punishment; and first for matter of the peace.

THE antient laws of England, planted here by the Conqueror, were, that there should be officers of two forts in all the parts of this realm to preserve the peace:

1. CONSTABULAR II Pacis. 2. CONSERVATOR ES Pacis.

The office of the constable was, to arrest the The office of parties that he had seen breaking the peace, or the constables in sury ready to break the peace, or was truly informed by others, or by their own confession, that they had freshly broken the peace; which persons he might imprison in the stocks, or in his own house, as his or their quality required, until they had become bounden with sureties to keep the peace; which obligation from thenceforth was to be sealed and delivered to the constable to the use of the King. And that the constable was to send to the King's exchequer or chancery, from whence process should be awarded to levy the debt, if the peace were broken.

But the constable could not arrest any, nor make any put in bond upon complaint of threatening only, except they had seen them breaking the

peace,

rrel, nder ead,

the

ner,

his

the an hich

the

law

f he

lant

not

g is

ders

ands

t he first the n he

nce,

and

tone goods

thing ng is dand, and

peace, or had come freshly after the peace was broken. Also, these constables should keep watch about the town for the apprehension of rogues and vagabonds, and night-walkers, and evesdroppers, fcouts, and fuch like, and fuch as go armed. And they ought likewise to raise hue and cry against murderers, man-flayers, thieves and rogues.

High constables for every hundred. for every village.

Or this office of constable there were high constables, two of every hundred; petty consta-Petty constable bles one in every village; they were in antient time all appointed by the sheriff of the shire yearly in his court called the sheriff's Tourn, and there they received their oath. But at this day they are appointed either in the law-day of that precinct wherein they ferve, or elfe by the high constable in the fessions of the peace.

The King's Bench first instituted, and its jurisdiction.

THE sheriff's Tourn is a court very antient, incident to his office. At the first it was erected by the Conqueror, and called the King's Bench, appointing men studied in the knowledge of the laws to execute justice, as substitutes to him in his name, which men are to be named justiciarii ad placita coram rege assignati: one of them being capitalis justiciarius, called to his fellows; the rest in number as pleaseth the King; of late but three justiciarii, holden by patent. In this court every man above twelve years of age was to take his oath of allegiance to the King; if he were bound, then his lord to answer for him. In this court the constables were appointed and sworn; breakers of the peace punished by fine and imprisonment; the parties beaten or hurt recompensed upon complaints of damages; all appeals of murder, maim, robbery, decided; contempts against the crown, publick annoyances against the people, treasons and felonies, and all other matters of wrong betwixt party and party for lands and goods.

Bur

n

CC

m

ar

m

di CO

th

in

by

di

in

die

the ch

no

tal

for

kee

pea

An

vie

tata

cafi

City

whi

divi

hun

of d

year

which

for 1

a ba

4

was atch gues evess go hue ieves

high nstatient early here they prehigh

t, inected ench, f the m in ciarii being e reit three every e his ound, court

enfed ls of ots ast the other

reak-

rifon-

Bur

y for

Bur the King feeing the realm grow daily Court of Marmore and more populous, and that this one court and its jurifdiccould not dispatch all, did first ordain that his tion within 12 marshal should keep a court, for controversies chief tunnel, arifing within the verge, which is within twelve &c. miles of the chiefest tunnel of the court, which did but ease the King's Bench in matters only concerning debts, covenants, and fuch like, of those of the King's houshold only, never dealing in breaches of the peace, or concerning the crown by any other persons, or any pleas of lands.

Insomuch, as the King for farther ease having Sheriff's tourn instituted upon divided this kingdom into counties, and commit- the divition of ing the charge of every county to a lord or earl, England into counties, &c. did direct, that those earls, within their limits, Likewise called should look to the matter of the peace, and take Curia visus fra. pleg. charge of the constables, and reform public annoyances, and swear the people to the crown, and take pledges of the freemen for their allegiance; for which purpose the county did once every year keep a court, called the sheriff's Tourn; at which all the county (except women, clergy, children under twelve, and not aged above fixty) did appear to give or renew their pledges for allegiance. And the court was called, Curia franci plegii, a view of the pledges of freemen; or, Turnus comi-

Ar which meeting or court there fell, by oc-Subdivision of casion of great assemblies, much blood-shed, scar-court into city of victuals, mutinies, and the like mischiefs, hundreds. which are incident to the congregations of people, by which the King was moved to allow a fubdivision of every county into hundreds, and every hundred to have a court, whereunto the people of every hundred should be affembled twice a year for survey of pledges, and use of that justice which was formerly executed in that grand court for the county; and the count or earl appointed a bailiff under him to keep the hundred court.

la

to

to

ai

CC

fe

is

ta

fic

gi ft

gi

pu

m

er for

at

ma

th

Wa

rep

tak

bui ma

alli

fw

can

ind

felo

cui

me

day

and

Ital furi

upo

The charge of the county tatheriff.

Bur in the end, the Kings of this realm found ken from the it necessary to have all execution of justice imearls, and commediately from themselves, by such as were more bound than earls to that fervice, and readily fubject to correction for their negligence or abuse; and therefore took to themselves the appointing of a sheriff yearly in every county, calling them Vicecomites, and to them directed fuch writs and precepts for executing justice in the county, as fell out needful to have been dispatched, committing to the fheriff cuftodiam comitatus; by which the earls were spared of their toils and The sheriff is labours, and that was laid upon the sheriffs. as now the sheriff doth all the King's business in the county, and that is now called the sheriss's Tourn; that is to fay, he is judge of this grand court for the county, and also of all hundred courts not given away from the crown.

judge of all hundred courts, &c.

County court kept monthly by the theriff.

He hath another court called the county court belonging to his office, wherein men may fue monthly for any debt or damages under 40 k and may have writs for to replevy their cattle distrained and impounded by others, and there try the cause of their distress; and by a writ called justicies, a man may fue for any fum; and in this court the sheriff by a writ called an exigent dorh proclaim men fued in courts above to render their bodies, or elfe they be outlawed.

The office of the theriff.

THIS sheriff doth serve the King's writs of process, be they summons, attachments to compel men to answer to the law, and all writs of execution of the law, according to judgments of fuperior court, for taking of mens goods, lands, or bodies, as the cause requireth.

Hundred granted.

THE hundred courts were most of them grantwhom at first ed to religious men, noblemen, and others of great place. And also many men of good quality have attained by charter, and some by usage within manors of their own, liberty of keeping law-days, and to use there justice appertaining to a law-day.

und

im-

ore

lub-

ise;

ting

nem

and , as

om-

by

and

So

s in

riff's

rand

dred

court

fue

40%

cattle

there writ

fum;

ed an

above

out-

its of

ompel

exe-

its of

lands,

grant-

ers of

uality

usage eeping law-

WHOSOEVER is lord of the hundred court, is Lord of the to appoint two high constables of the hundred, point two high and also is to appoint in every village a petty constables. constable with a tithing-man to attend in his abfence, and to be at his commandment when he is present in all services of his office for his affis-

THERE have been by use and statute law (befides surveying of the pledges of freemen, and giving the oath of allegiance, and making constables) many additions of powers and authority given to the stewards of leets and law-days to be put in ure in their courts; as for example, they may punish inn-keepers, victuallers, bakers, butchers, poulterers, fishmongers, and tradesmen of all forts, felling with under-weights or measures, or at excessive prices, or things unwholesome, or ill made in deceit of the people. They may punish those that do stop, straiten, or annoy the highways, or do not according to the provision enacted, repair or amend them, or divert water-courses, What matters or destroy fry of fish, or use engines or nets to they enquire of in leets and take deer, conies, pheasants, or partridges, or law-days. build pigeon-houses; except he be lord of the manor, or parson of the church. They may also take presentment upon oath of the twelve fworn jury before them of all felonies; but they cannot try the malefactors, only they must by indenture deliver over those presentments of felony to the judges, when they come their circuits into that county. All those courts before mentioned are in use, and exercised as law at this day, concerning the theriff's law-days and leets, and the offices of high constables, petty constables, and tithing-men; howbeit, with some further additions by flatute laws, laying charge upon them for taxation for poor, for foldiers,

USE OF THE LAW.

and the like, and dealing without corruption, and the like.

Confervators of the peace by writ for term of life, or at the King's pleafure.

What their office was.

Conservators of the peace were in antient times certain, which were affigned by the King to fee the peace maintained, and they were called to the office by the King's writ, to continue for term of their lives, or at the King's pleafure.

For this fervice, choice was made of the best men of calling in the country, and but few in the They might bind any man to keep the peace, and to good behaviour, by recognizance to the King with fureties, and they might by warrant fend for the party, directing their warrant to the sheriff or constable, as they please, to arrest the party and bring him before them. This they used to do, when complaint was made by any that he stood in fear of another, and so took his oath; or elfe, where the confervator himself did, without oath or complaint, see the disposition of any man inclined to quarrel and breach of the peace, or to mis-behave himself in fome outragious manner of force or fraud: there by his own discretion he might send for such a fellow, and make him find fureties of the peace, or of his good behaviour, as he should see cause; or elfe commit him to the gaol if he refused.

Confervators of the peace by virtue of their office.

Justices of peace ordained in lieu of confervators. to the Chancellor.

THE judges of either bench in Westminster, barons of the exchequer, mafter of the rolls, and justices in eire and affizes in their circuits, were all without writ conservators of the peace in all shires of England, and continue to this day.

But now at this day conservators of the peace are out of use, and in lieu of them there are ordained justices of peace, assigned by the King's cing delegated commissions in every county, which are moveable at the King's pleasure; but the power of placing and displacing justices of the peace is by use delegated from the King to the Chancellor.

THAT

co

ma

by

rei

ye

are

and

bre

not

refl

am

fold

rog

are

ers ftal

ferv mu

that fron

take

ano

his I

atta

and

cogn

also

at v peac

ces the .

both

and

ent

ing

lled

for

best

the

the

ince

by

var-

, to

em.

ade

d fo

ator

the

and

f in

here

ch a

ace,

use;

after,

were

all

eace

e or-

ing's

eable

acing

e de-

THAT there should be justices of peace by commissions, it was first enacted by a statute made I Edw. III. and their authority augmented by many statutes made fince in every King's reign.

THEY are appointed to keep four sessions every fenders to the year; that is, every quarter one. These sessions crown, but not are a fitting of the justices to dispatch the affairs to recompense of their commissions. They have power to hear ved. Parl, itat. and determine in their fessions, all felonies, & v. Dyer 69.b. breaches of the peace, contempts and trespasses, ils ount poier de so far as to fine the offender to the crown, but muider car ce not to award recompence to the party grieved.

THEY are to suppress riots and tumults, to Authority of restore possessions forcibly taken away, to ex-the Justices of amine all felons apprehended and brought before them; to fee impotent poor people, or maimed foldiers provided for, according to the laws; and rogues, vagabonds, and beggars punished. They are both to license and suppress ale-houses, badgers of corn and victuals, and to punish forestallers, regrators, and engrossers.

THROUGH these, in effect, run all the county fervices to the crown, as taxations of subsidies, mustring men, arming them, and levying forces, that is done by a special commission or precept from the King. Any of these justices by oath taken by a man, that he standeth in fear that another man will beat him, or kill him, or burn Beating, kilhis house, are to fend for the party by warrant of ling, burning of houses. attachment directed to the sheriff or constable, Attachments and then to bind the party with sureties by re-the peace. cognizance to the King to keep the peace, and Recognizance allo to appear at the next sessions of the peace; livered by the

ces so taken, then the parties are called, and the cause of binding to the peace examined, and both parties being heard, the whole bench is to

To fine of-

at which next sessions, when every justice of justices at their peace hath therein delivered all their recognizan- fessions.

CHAT

H 3 determine

determine as they see cause, either to continue the party fo bound, or elfe to discharge him.

Quarter-feffions held by the peace.

THE justices of peace in their fessions are atthe justices of tended by the constables and bailiffs of all hundreds and liberties within the county, and by the sheriff or his deputy, to be employed as occasion shall serve in executing the precepts and directions of the court. They proceed in this fort; the sheriff doth summon twenty-four freeholders, discreet men of the faid county, whereof some fixteen are selected and sworn, and have their charge to serve as the grand jury, the party indicted is to traverse the indictment, or else to confess it, and so submit himself to be fined as the court shall think meet (regard had to the offence) except the punishment be certainly appointed (as often it is) by special statutes.

The authority their fessions.

THE justices of peace are many in every of justices of the peace out of county, and to them are brought all traitors, felons, and other malefactors of any fort upon their first apprehension; and that justice to whom they are brought examineth them, and heareth their accusations, but judgeth not upon it; only if he find the fuspicion but light, then he taketh bond with fureties of the accused to appear either at the next affizes, if it be a matter of treason or felony; or else at the quarter-fessions, if it be concerning riot or mif-behaviour, or fome other small offence. And he also then bindeth to appear those that give testimony and prosecute the accusation, all the accusers and witnesses, and so fetteth the party at large. And at the affizes or fessions (as the case falleth out) he certifieth the recognizances taken of the accused, accusers, and witnesses, who being there are called, and appearing, the cause of the accused is debated according to law for his clearing or condemning.

But if the party accused seem, upon pregnant matter in the accusation, and to the justice to be guilty, and the offence heinous, or the offender

taken

ta

CC

CC

th

ar

pe

th

ce

CC

ca

ef

R

OV

th

CO

an

tic

for

re

lea

We

cir

be

of

fitt

COI

COI

gri

taken with the manner, then the justice is to commit the party by his warrant called a mittimus, to the goaler of the common goal of the county, there to remain until the affizes. then the justice is to certify his accusation, examination, and recognizance taken for the appearances and profecution of the witnesses, so as the judges may, when they come, readily proceed with him as the law requireth.

THE judges of the affizes as they be now be- Judges of afcome into the place of the antient justices in eyre, tize in place of called justiciarii itinerantes, which in the prime judges in eyre Kings after the Conquest, until H. III. time Temp. R. II. especially, and after in lesser measure even to R. II. time, did execute the justice of the realm;

they began in this fort.

nue

at-

un-

the

fion

rec-

ort;

lers,

ome

heir

arty

e to

d as

the

ap-

very

tors,

upon

hom

reth

only

keth

ither

eason

it be other

o ap-

e the

nd fo

zes or

a the

and

d ap-

d ac-

gnant

to be

ender taken

ng.

THE King, not able to dispatch business in his King's Bench, own person, erected the court of King's Bench; marshal's court, county that not able to receive all, nor meet to draw court, sheriffs the people all to one place, there were ordained dred leets, and counties, and the sheriffs tourns, hundred courts, law days, deale and particular leets, and law-days, as before men- only in crown matters; justitioned, which dealt only with crown matters for ces in eyre the publick; but not the private titles of lands, dealt in private or goods, nor the trial of grand offences of trea- or goods, and fons and felonies, but all the counties of the and felonies, realm were divided into fix circuits. And two which the learned men well read in the laws of the realm, meddle not in. were affigned by the King's commission to every circuit, and to ride twice a year through those shires allotted that circuit, making proclamation beforehand, a convenient time, in every county, of the time of their coming, and place of their fitting, to the end the people might attend them in every county of that circuit.

THEY were to stay three or four days in every county, and in that time all the causes of that county were brought before them by the parties grieved, and all the prisoners of the said goal in

H 4

every shire, and whatsoever controversies arising concerning life, lands, or goods.

cer

the

is :

of

exa

nef

ver

tio

cal

pea

me

gra

the

and

1911

gra

the

bill

eve

and

if I

he

be

the

twe

hol

the

me

fpe pri

ma

An

Gu

rec

upo to 1

pre

The authority of judges in eyre, translated to justices of affize.

THE authority of these judges in eyre is in part translated by act of parliament to justices of affize, which be now the judges of circuits, and they to use the same course that justices in eyre did, to proclaim their coming every half year, and the place of their fitting.

Justices of asfize much leffened by the III. time.

THE business of the justices in eyre, and of the justices of affize at this day is much lessened, court of Com- for that in H. III. time there was erected the mon Pleas, H. court of Common Pleas at Westminster, in which court have been ever fince, and yet are, begun and handled the great fuits of lands, debts, benefices and contracts, fines for affurance of lands and recoveries, which were wont to be either in the King's Bench, or else before the justices in eyre. But the statute of Mag. Chart. cap. 11. 5. is negative against it, viz. Communia placita non sequantur curiam nostram, sed teneantur in aliquo loco certo; which locus certus must be the Common Justices of as- Pleas; yet the judges of circuits have now five commissions by which they sit.

fize fit by five commissions.

Oyer and terminer, in which the judges are of the quorum, Stc.

THE first is a commission of over and terminer, directed unto them, and many others of the best account, in their circuits; but in this commission the judges of affize are of the Quorum, fo as without them there can be no proceeding.

This commission giveth them power to deal with treasons, murders, and all manner of felonies and misdemeanors whatsoever; and this is

the largest commission that they have.

Goal-delivery directed only to the judges and clerk of the affize.

THE fecond is a commission of goal-delivery, that is only to the judges themselves, and the clerk of the affize affociate: and by this commission they are to deal with every prisoner in the goal, for what offence foever he be there, and to proceed with him according to the laws of the realm, and the quality of his offence; and they cannot by this commission do any thing concerning fing es of ear, d of ned, the hich gun ands r in s in 1. 5. 72012 liquo mon five iner, best ffion vithdeal felonis is very, the comer in here, laws and con-

s in

and

eyre

be-

ning

cerning any man, but those that are prisoners in the goal. The course now in use of execution of this commission of goal-delivery, is this. There is no prisoner but is committed by some justice of peace, who before he committed him took his examination, and bound his accusers and witneffes to appear and profecute at the goal-delivery. This justice doth certify these examinations and bonds, and thereupon the accuser is called folemnly into the court, and when he appeareth, he is willed to prepare a bill of indictment against the prisoner, and go with it to the grand jury, and give evidence upon their oaths, he and the witnesses; which he doth: and then the grand jury write thereupon either billa vera, and then the prisoner standeth indicted, or else ignoramus, and then he is not touched. The The manner of grand jury deliver these bills to the judges in the proceedtheir court, and so many as they find indorsed justices of cirbilla vera, they fend for those prisoners, then is of the judges every man's indictment put and read to him, for the goaland they ask him whether he be guilty or not: if he faith Guilty, his confession is recorded; if he fay Not guilty, then he is asked how he will be tried; he answereth, By the country. Then the sheriff is commanded to return the names of twelve freeholders to the court, which freeholders be fworn to make true delivery between the King and the prisoner; and then the indictment is again read, and the witnesses sworn to speak their knowlege concerning the fact, and the prisoner is heard at large what defence he can make, and then the jury go together and confult. And after a while they come in with a verdict of Guilty or Not guilty, which verdict the judges do record accordingly. If any prisoner plead Not guilty upon the indictment, and yet will not put himself to trial upon the jury (or stand mute) he shall be pressed.

THE judges, when many prisoners are in the

tin

we

of

tut

mu

fte

by

Ita

are

bei

tak

bu

ou

Bil

wit

no

cui

on

wh

off

cal

Wr

nu

bro

for

rec

by

titl

Ni

the

the

Pri

for

Kin

her

var

act

goal, do in the end, before they go, peruse every one. Those that were indicted by the grand jury, and found Not guilty by the felect jury, they judge to be quitted, and fo deliver them out of the goal. Those that are found Guilty by both juries, they judge to death, and command the sheriff to see execution done. Those that refuse trial by the country, or stand mute upon the indictment, they judge to be pressed to death: fome, whose offences are pilfering under twelve pence value, they judge to be whipped. that confess their indictments, they judge to death, whipping, or otherwise, as their offence requireth. And those that are not indicted at all, but their bill of indictment returned with ignoramus by the grand jury, and all other in the goal, against whom no bills at all are preferred, they do acquit by proclamation out of the goal; that one way or other they rid the goal of all the prifoners in it. But because some prisoners have their books, and be burned in the hand, and fo delivered, it is necessary to shew the reason thereof. This having their books is called their clergy, which in antient time began thus.

Books allowed to clergy, &c.

For the scarcity of the clergy in the realm of England, to be disposed in religious houses, or for priests, deacons, and clerks of parishes, there was a prerogative allowed to the clergy, that if any man, that could read as a clerk, were to be condemned to death, the bishop of the diocese might, if he would, claim him as a clerk, and he was to sce him tried in the face of the court.

WHETHER he could read or not, the book was prepared and brought by the Bishop, and the judge was to turn to some place as he should think meet; and if the prisoner could read, then the Bishop was to have him delivered over unto him, to dispose of in some places of the clergy, as he should think meet: but if either the Bishop would not demand him, or that the prisoner could not read, then was he to be put to death,

AND this clergy was allowable in the ancient Clergyallowed times and law, for all offences, whatfoever they except treason were, except treason, and the robbing of churches and robbing of churches; now of their goods and ornaments. But by many sta- taken away, tutes made fince, the clergy is taken away for I. In murder. murder, burglary, robbery, purse-cutting, horse- 3. Robbery. stealing, and diverse other felonies, particularized 4. Purse-cut-by the statutes to the judges; and lastly, by a stealing, and in statute made 18 Elizabeth, the judges themselves diverse other offences. By are appointed to allow clergy to fuch as can read, the ftat. of 18 being not such offenders, from whom clergy is Eliz.judges are taken away by any statute, and to see them gy, and to see burned in the hand, and so discharge them, with-them burned in the hand, and out delivering them to the Bishop; howbeit, the to discharge Bishop appointeth the deputy to attend the judges the prisoners without the with a book, to try whether they can read or Bishop.

THE third commission, that the judges of circuits have, is a commission directed to themselves only, and the clerk of affize to take affizes, by which they are called justices of affize; and the office of those justices is to do right upon writs called affizes, brought before them by fuch as are wrongfully thrust out of their lands. Of which number of writs there was far greater store brought before them in ancient times than now; for that mens feizins and possessions are sooner recovered by fealing leafes upon the ground, and by bringing an ejectione firmæ, and trying their title fo, than by the long fuits of affizes.

THE fourth commission is a commission to take 4. Commission Nist Prius, directed to none but to the judges to take Nili themselves and their clerks of assizes, by which to two judges they are called justices of Nisi Prius. These Nisi and the clerk of the affize. Prius happen in this fort; when a fuit is begun Nifi Prius. for any matter in one of the three courts, the King's Bench, Common Pleas, or the Exchequer here above, and the parties in their pleadings do

vary in a point of fact; as for example, if in an action of debt upon obligation the defendant de-

nies

re was if any e conmight, was to ok was judge meet; Bishop

to dil-

should

ild not

t read,

AND

very

jury,

they

ut of both

1 the

efuse 1 the

eath: welve

Chose ge to

ffence at all,

mora-

goal,

they that

e pri-

have

ereof.

lergy,

lm of

or for

nies the obligation to be his debt; or in any action of trespass grown for taking away goods, the defendant denieth that he took them, or in action of the case for slanderous words, the de-

the

on

to 1

day

the

is C

fac

iud

fou

the

fho

evi

hav

try

abo

not

the

upo

to

circ

in

just

mer

atte

any

him

fher

atte

low

the

fail.

befo

the

turi

fendant denieth that he spake them, &c.

THEN the plaintiff is to maintain and prove that the obligation is the defendant's deed, that he either took the goods, or spake the words; upon which denial and affirmation the law faith. that iffue is joined betwixt them, which iffue of the fact is to be tried by a jury of twelve men of the county, where it is supposed by the plaintiff to be done, and for that purpose the judges of the court do award a writ of Venire facias in the King's name to the sheriff of that county, commanding him to cause four and twenty discreet freeholders of his county, at a certain day, to try this issue so joined, out of which four and twenty, only twelve are chosen to ferve. And that double number is returned, because some may make default, and fome be challenged upon kindred, alliance, or partial dealing.

THESE four and twenty the sheriff doth name

and certify to the court, and withal, that he hath warned them to come at the day according to their writ. But because at the first summons there falleth no punishment upon the four and twenty if they come not, they very feldom or never appear upon the first writ; and upon their default there is another writ * returned to the sheriff, The manner of commanding him to distrain them by their lands justices of cir. to appear at a certain day appointed by the writ, which is the next term after, Nisi prius justiciarii judges hold in nostri ad assisas capiendas venerint, &c. of which words the writ is called a Nisi Prius, and the judges of the circuit of that county in that vacation, and mean time, before the day of appearance appointed for the jury above, here by their commission of Nisi Prius, have authority to take the appearance of the jury in the county before them,

* Diftringas. proceeding of cuits. The course the the taking of Nifi Piius.

them, and there to hear the witnesses and proofs on both fides, concerning the iffue of fact, and to take the verdict of the jury, and against the day they should have appeared above, to return the verdict read in the court above, which return is called a Postea.

AND upon this verdict, clearing the matter in fact, one way or other, the judges above give judgment for the party for whom the verdict is found, and for fuch damages and costs as the ju-

ry do affess.

y ac-

oods,

or in de-

rove

that rds;

aith,

ue of

en of

intiff

es of

n the

com-

creet

y, to

and

And

Come

upon

name

hath

ig to

there

enty r ap-

fault

eriff, lands

writ,

ciarii

which

d the

t vapear-

their

take

efore

hem,

By those trials called Nisi Prius, the juries and the parties are eased much of the charge they hould be put to, by coming to London with their evidences and witnesses; and the courts of Westminster are eased of much trouble they should have, if all the juries for trials should appear and try their causes in those courts; for those courts above have little leifure now: though the juries come not up, yet in matters of great weight, or where the title is intricate or difficult, the judges above, upon information to them, do retain those causes to be tried there, and the juries do at this day, in such causes, come to the bar at Westminster.

THE fifth commission that the judges in their 5. Commission circuits do sit by, is the commission of the peace of the peace. in every county of their circuit. And all the The justices of justices of the peace, having no lawful impedi- the sheriff are ment, are bound to be present at the assizes to to attend the attend the judges, as occasion shall fall out: if county. any make default, the judges may fet a fine upon him at their pleasure and discretions. Also the heriff in every shire through the circuit, is to attend in person, or by a sufficient deputy allowed by the judges, all that time they be within the county, and the judges may fine him if he fail, or for negligence or misbehaviour in his office before them; and the judges above may also fine the sheriff, for not returning, or not sufficient returning of writs before them.

Postes.

is a commission

Property

Property in lands, how gotten or transferred.

tint

for for

to

any

ano hei

viz

of

teff

ma

the

eth

dui

for

by

tim

it f

hol

fha

int

OW

he

by

hin

diff

bef

dot

the

ful

the

aft

and the

the

COT Ar

- 1. By entry.
- 2. By descent.
- 2. By escheat.
- 4. Most usually by conveyance.

ry of lands to be gained by entry.

All lands in England were 1. Religious and church lands. 2. The lands of the men of Kent.

Summing C

Land left by eth to the King.

Of the proper. I. DROPERTY by entry is, where a man findeth a piece of land that no other possesseth, or hath title unto, and he that so findeth it doth enter, this entry gaineth a property; this law feemeth to be derived from this text, Terra dedit filiis bominum, which is to be understood, to those that will till and manure it, and so make it yield fruit: and that is he that entereth into it, where no man had it before. But this manner of gaining lands was in the first days, and is not now of use in England, for that by the conquest, all the land of this nation was in the Conqueror's hands, the Conque-ror's, and held and appropriated unto him; except religious and of him, except church lands, and the lands in Kent, which by composition were left to the former owners, as the Conqueror found them; fo that no man but the bishopricks, churches, and the men of Kent, can at this day make any greater title than from the conquest, to any lands in England; and lands possessed without any such title, are in the crown, and not in him that first entereth, as it is by land left by the fea; this land belongeth to the the sea belong. King, and not to him that hath the lands next adjoining, which was the ancient sea-banks; this is to be understood of the inheritance of lands, viz. that the inheritance cannot be gained by the first entry. But an estate for another man's life by out-laws, may at this day be gotten by entry. As a man called A. having land conveyed unto him for the life of B. dieth without making any estate of it, there, whosoever first entereth into the land after the decease of A. getteth the property in the land for time of the continuance rred.

ndeth Meth, doth s law dedit those yield vhere gainow of Il the ands, s and

h by rs, as n but Kent, from lands rown,

is by o the xt ad-

; this lands, ed by

man's en by nvey-

t malt enget-

con-

uance

tinuance of the estate which was granted to A. for the life of B. which B. yet liveth, and therefore the faid land cannot revert till B. die. And to the heir of A. it cannot go, for that it is not any estate of inheritance, but only an estate for another man's life; which is not descendable to the heir, except he be specially named in the grant, viz. to him and his heirs. As for the executors of A. they cannot have it, for it is not an estate testamentary, that it should go to the executors as goods and chattels should, so as in truth no man can entitle himself unto those lands; and therefore the law preferreth him that first entereth, and he is called occupans, and shall hold it Occupancy. during the life of B. but must pay the rent, perform the conditions, and do no waste: and he may by deed affign it to whom he please in his lifetime. But if he die before he affign it over, then it shall go again to whomfoever first entereth and holderh; and so all the life of B. so often as it shall happen.

LIKEWISE, if any man doth wrongfully enter into another man's possession, and put the right owner of the freehold and inheritance from it; he thereby getteth the freehold and inheritance by diffeifin, and may hold it against all men, but him that hath right, and his heirs, and is called a diffeifor. Or if any one die seised of lands, and before his heir doth enter, one that hath no right doth enter into the lands, and holdeth them from the right heir, he is called an abator, and is lawful owner against all men but the right heir.

And if such person abator or disseifor (so as the diffeifor hath quiet possession five years next after the diffeisin) do continue their possession, and die seised, and the land descend to his heir, they have gained the right to the possession of the land against him that hath right, till he recover it by fit action real at the common law. And if it be not fued for at the common law,

within

USE OF THE LAW.

within threescore years after the diffeilin, or abate. ment committed, the right owner hath loft his right by that negligence. And if a man hath diverse children, and the elder, being a bastard. doth enter into the land, and enjoyeth it quietly during his life, and dieth thereof fo feifed, his heirs shall hold the land against all the lawful children, and their issues.

PROPERTY of lands by descent is, where a man

hath lands of inheritance and dieth, not difpo-

F

a

B

tl

to

fo

25

ki

be

0

fo

T

CU

fe

ha

CO

B

va

th

et

an

mo

for

in

an

an

bir

cal

the

ty,

firf hin

fore

Property of lands by defcent.

fing of them, but leaving it to go (as the law casteth it) upon the heir. This is called a descent of law, and upon whom the descent is to light, is the question. For which purpose, the law of inheritance preferreth the first child before all others, and amongst children the male before the female; and amongst males the first born. If there be no children, then the brother; if no brother, then fifters; if neither brothers nor fifters, then uncles, and for lack of uncles, aunts; if none of them, then cousins in the nearest degree of confanguinity, with these three rules of diversities. 1. That the eldest male shall folely inherit; but if it come to females, then they being all in an

Of descent : three rules.

equal degree of nearness shall inherit all together, and are called parceners, and all they make but Brother or fif. one heir to the ancestor. 2. That no brother nor ter of the half fifter of the half blood shall inherit to his brother blood shall not fifter of the half blood shall inherit to his brother inherit to his or fifter, but as a child to his parents: as for exbrother or fif-ter, but only as ample, if a man have two wives, and by either a child to his wife a fon, the eldest fon over living his father, is to be preferred to the inheritance of the father, being fee-simple; but if he entereth and dieth without a child, the brother shall not be his heir, because he is of the half blood to him, but the uncle of the eldest brother or sister of the whole blood: yet if the eldest brother had died, or had not entered in the life of the father, either by fuch entry or conveyance, then the youngest brother should inherit the land that the father had,

although it were a child by the fecond wife, be-

fore any daughter by the first. The third rule bateabout descents. That land purchased so by the t his party himself that dieth, is to be inherited; first, hath by the heirs of the father's side, then if he have stard, none of that part, by the heirs of the mother's fide. Descent ietly But lands descended to him from his father or 1, his mother, are to go to that fide only from which awful they came, and not to the other fide.

THOSE rules of descent mentioned before are to be understood of fee-simples, and not of entailed lands, and those rules are restrained by some particular customs of some particular places: Customs of as namely, the customs of Kent, that every male certain places. of equal degree of childhood, brotherhood, or kindred, shall inherit equally (as daughters shall being parceners;) and in many borough towns of England, the custom alloweth the youngest fon to inherit, and fo the youngest daughter. The custom of Kent is called Gavelkind.

custom of boroughs, Burgh-English. AND there is another note to be observed in fee-simple inheritance, and that is, that every heir having fee-simple land or inheritance, be it by common law or by custom, of either Gavelkind or Burgh-English, is chargeable so far forth as the value thereof extendeth, with the binding acts of the ancestors from whom the inheritance descendeth; and these acts are collateral incumbrances, and the reason of this charge is, Qui sentit commodum, sentire debet & incommodum sive onus. for example, if a man bind himself and his heirs Every heir haz in an obligation, or do covenant by writing for him bound by the and his heirs, or do grant an annuity for him binding acts of and his heirs, or do make a warranty of land, if he be nat binding him and his heirs to warranty: in all these med. cases the law chargeth the heir after the death of the ancestor with this obligation, covenant, annuity, and warranty; yet with these three cautions: first, that the party must by special name bind himself and his heirs, or covenant, grant and war-

ft bror had, e, be-

fore

man

lifpo-

e law

escent

light,

w of

all ohe fe-

there

other, then

one of

con-

rsities. ; but

in an

ether, ce but

r nor

rother

or ex-

either

ather,

ather, dieth heir, ut the

whole

or had

er by

rant

Ö

a

b

d

k

d

0

h

0

ti

of

Dver 114. Plowd.

rant for himself and his heirs; otherwise the heir is not to be touched. Secondly, that some action must be brought against the heir, whilst the land or other inheritance resteth in him unaliened away: for if the ancestor die, and the heir, before an action be brought against him upon those bonds, covenants, or warranties, do alien away the land, then the heir is clean discharged of the burden; except the land was by fraud conveyed away of purpose to prevent the suit intended against him. Thirdly, that no heir is farther to be charged than the value of the land descended unto him from the same ancestor that made the instrument of charge, and that land also, not to Dayand Pepp's be fold out-right for the debt, but to be kept in extent, and at a yearly value, until the debt or damage be run out. Nevertheless, if an heir that is fued upon fuch a debt of his ancestor do not deal clearly with the court when he is fued, that is, if he come not in immediately, and by way of confession set down the true quantity of his inheritance descended, and so submit himself there-

fore, as the law requireth, then that heir that o-

therwise demeaneth himself, shall be charged of

his own lands or goods, and of his money, for this deed of his ancestor. As for example; if a man bind himself and his heirs in an obligation of one hundred pounds, and dieth leaving but ten acres of land to his heir, if his heir be fued upon

the bond, and cometh in, and denieth that he

Dyer 149. Plowd.

cafe.

Heir charged for his false plea.

> hath any lands by descent; and it is found against him by the verdict that he hath ten acres, this heir shall be now charged by his false plea of his own lands, goods and body, to pay the hundred pound, although the ten acres be not worth ten pound. PROPERTY of lands by escheat, is where the owner died feised of the lands in possession with-

out child or other heir, thereby the land, for lack of other heir, is faid to escheat to the lord

Property of lands by efcheat.

heir

tion

the

ened

hofe

way

the

eyed

d a-

to be

nded

the

t to

ot in

ot or

that

not

that

way

f his

nere-

at o-

ed of

, for

if a

ation

t ten

upon

at he rainst

this

of his

ndred

h ten

e the

with-

, for

lord

of whom it is holden. This lack of heir happeneth principally in two cases: First, where the Two causes of land's owner is a bastard. Secondly, where he is escheat.
Bastardy. attainted of felony or treason. For neither can a 2. Attainder of bastard have any heir, except it be his own child, treason, sciony. nor a man attainted of treason, although it be his own child.

UPON attainder of treason the King is to have Attainder of the land, although he be not the lord of whom teason entitle the King, it is held, because it is a royal escheat. But for though lands felony it is not fo, for there the King is not to be not holden of him: otherhave the escheat, except the land be holden of wise in attainhim: and yet where the land is not holden of der of felony, for the e him, the King is to have the land for a year and the King that a day next enfuing the judgment of the attainder, have be an with a liberty to commit all more for a liberty to commit all more for all with a liberty to commit all manner of waste vattum. all that year in houses, gardens, ponds, lands, and woods.

In these escheats two things are especially to In escheats, be observed; the one is, the tenure of the lands, 1. The tenure. because it directeth the person to whom the ef- of the attaincheat belongeth, viz. the lord of the manor of der. whom the land is holden. 2. The manner of fuch attainder which draweth with it the escheat. Concerning the tenures of lands, it is to be underflood, that all lands are holden of the crown either mediately or immediately, and that the efcheat appertaineth to the immediate lord, and not to the mediate. The reason why all land is holden of the crown immediately, or by mesne

THE Conqueror got by right of conquest all The Conque? the land of the realm into his own hands in ror got all the demesne, taking from every man all estate, tenure, realm into his property and liberty of the same, (except religi-hands, and re-ferved rents ous and church lands, and the land in Kent:) and services, and still as he gave any of it out of his own hand, he reserved some retribution of rents, or services, or both, to him and to his heirs; which refervation is that which is called the tenure of land.

Knight-fervice in capite The refervati conqueror. ons in knightfervice. the wards. 2. Horfe for

war.

In which refervation he had four institutions. first instituted. exceeding politick and suitable to the state of a

I. SEEING his people to be part Normans, and 1. Marriage of part Saxons, the Normans he brought with him. s. Homage and purpose ordains, that if the contact himself to purpose ordains, that if the contact himself to purpose ordains. the Saxons he found here; he bent himself to 4. Primer seisin. knights, and gentlemen, to whom he gave great The policy of the Conqueror rewards of lands should die, leaving their heir in the referva- within age, a male within twenty-one, and a tion of services. female within fourteen years, and unmarried, then that his tenant the King should have the bestowing of such heirs thould keep a in marriage in such a family, and to such persons horse of ser- in marriage in such a family, and to such persons vice, and serve as he should think meet; which interest of marupon him him-felf, when the riage went still implyed, and doth at this day in King went to every tenure called knight-fervice.

THE fecond was, to the end that his people should still be conserved in warlike exercises and able for his defence. When therefore he gave any good portion of lands, that might make the party of abilities or strength, he withal referved this fervice, that that party and his heirs having fuch lands, should keep a horse of service continually, and ferve upon him himfelf when the King went to wars; or else having impediment to excuse his own person, should find another to ferve in his place: which fervice of horse and man, is a part of that tenure called knight-fer-

vice at this day.

Bur if the tenant himself be an infant, the King is to hold this land himself until he come to full age, finding him meat, drink, apparel, and other necessaries, and finding a horse and a man with the overplus, to ferve in the wars as the tenant himself should do if he were at full age.

But if this inheritance descend upon a woman that cannot ferve by her fex, then the King is not to have the lands, she being of fourteen

years

ye

hı

of

bi

Wa is th

ea

bo

Ki

CO

ni

ce

th

w

til

th

CO

ca

he

ter

mı

be

a

ma eve

fee

twe

by

Wei

te |

years of age, because she is then able to have an husband that may do the service in person.

ons, of a

and

nim,

fto

that oles,

reat heir

da hen

eirs

lons

nar-

in

ople and

ave

the

ved

ing

nti-

the t to

to

and

fer-

the

e to

and

man

the

nan

is

een ears

2.

* THE third institution, that upon every gift 3. Institution of the Conqueof land the King referved a vow and an oath to ror was, that bind the party to his faith and loyalty; that vow his tenants by was called homage, the oath fealty. Homage vow, is to be done kneeling, holding his hands between 1. Homage. 2. Fealty. the knees of the lord, faying in the French tongue, I become your man of life and limb, and of earthly honour. Fealty is to take an oath upon a book, that he will be a faithful tenant to the King, and do his fervice, and pay his rents according to his tenure.

THE fourth institution was, that for recog- was for recognition of the King's bounty by every heir fuc- nition of the ceeding his ancestor in those knight-service lands, King's bounty, every heir to the King should have primer seisin of the lands, pay one year's which is one year's profit of the lands; and un-profit of the lands, called til this be paid, the King is to have possession of primer seisin, the land, and then to restore it to the heir; which continueth at this day in use, and is the very cause of fuing livery, and that as well where the heir hath been in ward as otherwise.

THESE before-mentioned be the rights of the Knight service tenure, called knight-service in capite, which is as in capite is a much as to fay, tenure de persona regis, and caput sona regis. being the chiefest part of the person, it is called a tenure in capite, or in chief.

knight fervice

Aid money to make the King's eldest fon a knight, or to marry his eldest daughter, is likewise due to his Majesty from every one of his tenants in knight-service, that hold by a whole fee 20 s. and from every tenant in socage, if his land be worth twenty pound per ann. 20 s. Vide N. 3.

† Escuage was likewise due unto the King from his tenant by knight-fervice: when his Majesty made a voyage royal to war against another nation, those of his tenants that did not attend him there for forty days with horse and furniture fit for service, were to be affested in a certain sum by act of parliament, to te paid unto his Majesty; which assessment is called escuage.

Tenants by And it is also to be noted, that as this tenure value of the lands fo held.

we co pay in capite by knight-service generally was a great relief at the safety to the crown, so also the Conqueror instiry her, which tuted other tenures in capite necessary to his estate: was one year's as namely, he gave divers lands to be holden of him by fome special fervice about his person, or Grand serjean- by bearing some special office in his house, or in the field, which have knight-fervice and more in Petty serjeanty. them, and these he called tenures by grand serjeanty. Also he provided upon the first gift of lands, to have revenues by continual fervice of ploughing his land, repairing his houses, parks, pales, castles, and the like. And sometimes to a yearly provision of gloves, spurs, hawks, horses, hounds and the like; which kind of refervations are called also tenures in chief, or in capite of the King; but they are not by knight-fervice, because they required no personal service, but such things as the tenants may hire another to do, or provide The institution for his money. And this tenure is called a tenure ot socage in ca by socage in capite, the word socagium signifying it is now turn- the plough; howbeit in this latter time, the fered into money vice of ploughing the land is turned into money rent, and so of harvest works, for that the Kings do not keep their demesne in their own hands, as they were wont to do; yet what lands were de antiquo dominio coronæ, it well appeareth in the records of the exchequer called the book of Doomsday. And the tenants by ancient demesne, have many immunities and privileges at this day, that in ancient times were granted unto those tenants by the crown; the particulars whereof are too long to fet down.

THESE tenures in capite, as well that by focage, as the others by knight-service, have this property; that the tenants cannot alien their lands without license of the King: if they do, the King is to have a fine for the contempt, and may feize the land, and retain it until the fine be

paid.

rents.

paid. And the reason is, because the King would have a liberty in the choice of his tenant, fo that no man should presume to enter into those lands, and hold them (for which the King was to have those special services done him) without the King's leave; this license and fine as it is now digested is easy and of course.

THERE is an office called the office of aliena- Office of alietion, where any man may have a license at a A license of areasonable rate, that is, at the third part of one licnation is the year's value of the land moderately rated. A te-third part of one year's value nant in capite by knight-service or grand serjean- of the land moty, was restrained by ancient statute, that he derately rated. should not give nor alien away more of his lands, than that with the rest he might be able to do the fervice due to the King; and this is now out of use.

AND to this tenure by knight-fervice in chief, Aid, what. was incident that the King should have a certain knight-service fum of money called aid, due to be ratably levi- in capite, paid ed amongst all those tenants proportionably to his it to make the lands, to make his eldest fon a knight, or to marry fon a knight, his eldest daughter.

And it is to be noted, that all those that hold ter. lands by the tenure of socage in capite (although focage in canot by knight-service) cannot alien without li-pite. cense, and they are to sue livery, and pay primer seisin, but not to be in ward for body or land.

By example and refemblance of the King's po- How manors licy in these institutions of tenures, the great men were at first created. and gentlemen of this realm did the like so near Manorscreated as they could; as for example, when the King in imitation of had given to any of them two thousand acres of the King in the land, this party purposing in this place to make tenures. A mahis dwelling, or (as the old word is) his mansion-nere, the word house, or his manor-house, did devise how he night make his land a complete habitation to supply him with all manner of necessaries; and for that purpose, he would give of the uttermost pirts of those two thousand acres, 100 or 200

or to marry his eldeft daugh-

ocage, prone be

paid.

nure great institate; en of n, or or in

l ferift of ce of parks, toa

ore in

ories, ations of the caule

hings ovide enure

fying e sernoney

Kings ands, were

in the ok of neine,

s day, fe teof are

lands , the i may Knight-Service tenure referved to common persons. Relief is 5 l. to be paid by eveknight-fervice

acres, or more or less, as he should think meet, to one of his most trusty servants, with some refervation of rent to find a horse for the wars. and go with him when he went with the King to ry tenant by the wars, adding vow of homage, and the * oath to his lord, &c. of fealty, wardship, marriage, and relief. This relief is to pay five pound for every knight's fee, or after the rate for more or less at the entrance of every heir; which tenant so created and placed, was and is to this day called a tenant by knightfervice, and not by his own person, but of his manors; of thefe he might make as many as he Then this lord would provide that the referred by the land which he was to keep for his own use, should be ploughed, and his harvest brought home, his house repaired, his park paled, and the like: and for that end he would give some lesser parcels to fundry others, of twenty, thirty, forty, or fifty acres: referving the fervice of ploughing a certain quantity, or fo many days of his land, and certain harvest works or days in the harvest to labour, or to repair the house, park pale, or otherwise, or to give him for his provision, capons, hens, pepper, cumin, rofes, gilliflowers, spurs, gloves, or the like; or to pay him a certain rent, and to

Socage tenure lord.

Relief of tehant in focage, tenant.

vices are turned into money rents. THE tenants in focage at the death of every tenant were to pay relief, which was not as knightone year's rent tenant were to pay relief, which was not as knight and no ward fervice is, five pound a knight's fee: But it was, thip, or other and so is still, one year's rent of the land; and profit upon the dying of the no wardship or other profit to the lord. The remainder of the two thousand acres he kept to

be fworn to be his faithful tenant, which tenure was called a focage tenure, and is fo to this day,

howbeit most of the ploughing and harvest ser-

hi

m

m

of

ad

ta

na

tr

ta

CL

n

th

or

ta

rı

ft

th

h

hi

po

by

re h

Ca

ar or

ar

pa

de di ho

nt

CO pa

to

ur

it

^{*} Knight-service tenure created by the lord, is not a tenue by knight-service of the person of the lord, but of his manor † Aid money and escuage money is likewise due unto the lods of their tenants, vide N. 3.

himself, which he used to manure by his bondmen, and appointed them at the courts of his manor how they should hold it, making an entry of it into the roll of the remembrances of the acts of his court, yet still in the lord's power to take it away; and therefore they were called tenants at will, by copy of court-roll; being in Villenage or truth bond-men at the beginning: but having ob- tenure by copy tained freedom of their persons, and gained a of count roll. custom by use of occupying their lands, they now are called copyholders, and are fo privileged, that the lord cannot put them out, and all through custom. Some copyholders are for lives, one, two, or three fuccessively; and some inheritances from heir to heir by custom; and custom ruleth these estates wholly, both for widows estates, fines, heriots, forfeitures, and all other things.

MANORS being in this fort made at the first, Court baron, reason was that the lord of the manor should with the use of hold a court, which is no more than to affemble his tenants together at a time by him to be appointed; in which court he was to be informed by oath of his tenants, of all fuch duties, rents, reliefs, wardships, copy-holds, or the like, that had happened unto him; which information is called a prefentment, and then his bailiff to feize and distrain for those duties if they were denied or with-holden, which is called a court-baron: and herein a man may fue for any debt or trefpass under forty pound value, and the freeholders are to judge of the cause upon proof produced upon both fides, And therefore the free- Suit to the holders of these manors, as incident to their te-court of the nures, do hold by fuit of court, which is to to the tenure come to the court, and there to judge between of the freeparty and party in those petty actions; and also to inform the lord of duties, rents, and fervices unpaid to him from his tenants. By this course it is different who be the lords of lands, fuch as,

hm-

eet,

e re-

ars,

g to

oath

This

fee,

ance

iced,

ght-f his

s he

the

ould

his

and

els to

fifty

rtain

rtain

oour,

wife,

hens,

oves,

nd to

enure

day, fer-

every

ight-

wai,

and

The

pt t)

tenue anor

ie lords

What attain-

By out-lawry.

lawry.

if the tenants die without heir, or be attainted of felony or treason, shall have the land by escheat.

Now concerning what attainders shall give the ders shall give escheat to the lord; it is to be noted, that it must the lord. At either be by judgment of death given in some tainders, 1. By judgment. 2. court of record against the felon sound guilty by By verdict or verdict, or confession of the felony, or it must be

confession. 3. by out-lawry of him.

THE out-lawry groweth in this fort; a man is give the lands Of an a tain- indicted for felony, being not in hold, fo as he der by out- cannot be brought in person to appear and to be tried, infomuch that process of capias is therefore awarded to the sheriff, who not finding him, returneth, non est inventus in balliva mea; and thereupon another capias is awarded to the sheriff. who likewise not finding him maketh the same return; then a writ called an exigent is directed to the sheriff, commanding him to proclaim him. in his county-court five feveral court-days, to yield his body; which if the sheriff do, and the party yield not his body, he is faid, by the default, to be out-lawed, the coroners there adjudging him out-lawed, and the sheriff making the return of the proclamations, and of the judgment of the coroners upon the backfide of the writ. This is an attainder of felony, whereupon the offender doth forfeit his lands by an escheat to the lord of whom they are holden.

Prayer of the clergy.

Bur note, that a man found guilty of felony by verdict or confession, and praying his clergy, and thereupon reading as a clerk, and fo burnt in the hand and discharged, is not attainted; because he by his clergy preventeth the judgment of death, and is called a clerk convict, who loseth not his lands, but all his goods, chattels, leases, and debts.

He that standeth mute forfeiteth no lands, except for treason.

So a man indicted, that will not answer nor put himself upon trial, although he be by this to have judgment of preffing to death, yet he doth forfeit no lands, but goods, chattels, leafes, and

debts,

de

fo

la Sc or

et

he

th

hi

pr

do

th

no

as

or

m

W

ati

in

lar

na

tre

his

fel

w

ch

is

the

to

is

the

an

debts, except his offence be treason, and then he forfeiteth his lands to the crown.

So a man that killeth himself shall not lose his He that killeth lands, but his goods, chattels, leases, and debts. himself forfeit-So of those that kill others in their own defence, chattels. or by misfortune.

A man that being purfued for felony, and fly-Flying for feeth for it, loseth his goods for his flying, although ture of goods. he return and is tried, and found not guilty of the fact.

So a man indicted of felony, if he yield not He that yieldhis body to the sheriff until after the exigent of eth his body proclamation is awarded against him, this man gent for felodoth forfeit all his goods for his long stay, al-ny, forfeiteth though he be not found guilty of the felony; but none is attainted to lose his lands, but only such as have judgments of death by trial upon verdict, or their own confession, or that they be by judgment of the coroners out-lawed, as before.

Besides the escheats of lands to the lords of Lands entailed whom they be holden for lack of heirs, and by eccheat to the attainder for felony (which only do hold place fon. in fee-simple lands) there are also forfeiture of lands to the crown by attainder of treason; as namely, if one that hath entailed lands commit Stat. 26 H. 8. treason, he forfeiteth the profits of the lands for his life to the crown, but not to the lord.

AND if a man having an estate for life of him- Tenant for life felf, or of another, commit treason or felony, the committeth treason or felowhole estate is forfeited to the crown, but no es-ny, there shall cheat to the lord.

But a copy-hold, for fee-simple, or for life, is forfeited to the lord, and not to the crown; and if it be entailed, the lord is to have it during the life of the offender only, and then his heir is to have it.

THE custom of Kent is, that Gavelkind land is not forfeitable nor escheatable for felony: for they have an old faying; the father to the bough, and the fon to the plough,

be no escheat to the lord.

IF

who attels, or put nis to doth , and debts,

d of

eat.

the

nust ome

v by

t be

an is

he

o be

nerehim,

and eriff,

fame

ected

him.

, to

d the

e ad-

aking

judg-

f the

upon

cheat

elony

ergy,

ent in

; be-

ment

The wife loing the hufband be atlony.

Attainder in fon by verdict, fence committed.

If the husband was attainted, the wife was to seth no dower, notwithstand- lose her thirds in cases of felony and treason, but yet she is no offender; but at this day it is holden tainted of fe by statute law, that she loseth them not for the husband's felony. The relation of these forfeits are these:

I. THAT men attainted of felony or treason. felony or trea- by verdict or confession, do forfeit all the lands confession or they had at the time of their offence committed. out-lawry, for- and the King or the lord, who oever of them had from the hath the escheat or forseiture, shall come in and time of the of- avoid all leases, statutes, or conveyances done by the offender, at any time fince the offence done. And so is the law clear also, if a man be attainted for treason by out-lawry; but upon attainder of felony by out-lawry, it hath been much doubted by the law books, whether the lord's title by efcheat shall relate back to the time of the offence done, or only to the date or test of the writ of exigent for proclamation, whereupon he is outlawed; howbeit, at this day it is ruled, that it shall reach back to the time of his fact; but for goods, chattels, and debts, the King's title shall And so it is look no further back than to those goods, the tainder of out- party attainted by verdict or confession had at lawry; other the time of the verdict and confession, given or wife it is in the made, and in out-lawries at the time of the exigent, as well in treasons as felonies: wherein it is to be observed, that upon the parties first appreto their rela- hension, the King's officers are to seize all the goods and chattels, and preserve them together, dispending only so much out of them, as is fit The King's of for the fustentation of the person in prison, withficers to feize a out any wasting, or disposing them until conviction; and then the property of them is in the crown, and not before.

A person attainted may purchase, but King's use.

upon an at-

attainder by

verdict, confession, and

out-lawry, as

tion for the

forfeiture of

felon's gords

and chattels.

goods and chattles.

Ir is also to be noted, that persons attainted for felony or treason, have no capacity in them to it shall be to the take, obtain or purchase, save only to the use of the King, until the party be pardoned. Yet the

party

part

a sp

ftor

if a

lony lanc

the

he

WOI

but

firft

der.

bv

fon

fath

the if t

the

nor the

ed

che

afte

the

Pr

wh

are

gre

the

tak

mo

and

be

to

but

den

the

eits

on,

inds

ted,

nem

and

by

one.

ted

r of

ted

ef-

nce

: of

out-

t it

for

hall the

at n or

exi-

it is

prethe

her,

fit

ith-

vic-

the

for

1 to

e of

the arty party giveth not back his lands or goods, without There can be a special patent of restitution, which cannot re- in blood withftore the blood without an act of parliament. So out act of parif a man have a fon, and then is attainted of fe- a pardon enalony or treason, and pardoned, and purchaseth bleth a man to lands, and then hath issue another son, and dieth; the heir begotthe fon he had before he had is pardon, although ten after shall inherit those he be his eldest son, and the patent have the lands. words of restitution to his lands, shall not inherit, but his fecond fon shall inherit them, and not the first; because the blood is corrupted by the attainder, and cannot be restored by patent alone, but by act of parliament. And if a man have two fons, and the eldest is attainted in the life of his father, and dieth without iffue, the father living, the fecond fon shall inherit the father's lands; but if the eldest fon have any iffue, though he die in the life of his father, then neither the second son, nor the iffue of the eldest, shall inherit the father's lands, but the father shall there be accounted to die without heir; and the land shall escheat, whether the eldest son have issue or not, afterward or before, though he be pardoned after the death of his father.

no restitution

Property of lands by conveyance, is first distributed into estates, for years, for life, in tail, and fee-simple.

THESE estates are created by word, by wri- Property of ting, or by record. For estates of years, land by conting, or by record. which are commonly called leafes for years, they ded into, are thus made; where the owner of the land a- 1. Estates in greeth with the other by word of mouth, that 2. In rail. the other shall have, hold, and enjoy the land, to 3. For life. take the profits thereof for a time certain of years, months, weeks or days, agreed between them; and this is called a lease parol; such a lease may be made by writing poll or indented of devise, grant,

Leafes for to the executo the heirs. Leafes are to atainder. 1. In treason. 2. Felony. 3. Premunire. 4. By killing himfelf. 5. For flying. 6. Standing out, &c. 7. By conviction. ny. 9. Going beyond the fea without licence. Extents upon stat. staple, merchant, or elegit. Ward-ship of body and lands are chattels, and forfeitable.

grant, and to farm let, and so also by fine of record; but whether any rent be referved or no, it is not material. Unto these leases there may be annexed fuch exceptions, conditions, and coveyears, they go nants, as the parties can agree on. They are tors, and not called chattels real, and are not inheritable by the heirs, but go to the executors, and administrabe forfeited by tors, and be faleable for debts in the life of the owner, or in the executors or administrators hands by writs of execution upon statutes, recognizances, judgments of debts or damages. They be also forfeitable to the crown by out-lawry, by attainder for treason, felony, or premunire, killing himself, flying for felony, although not guilty of the fact, standing out, or refusing to be tried by 8. Petty larce- the country, by conviction of felony, by verdict without judgment, petty larceny, or going beyond the fea without licence.

THEY are forfeitable to the crown, in like manner as leases for years, or interest gotten in other mens lands, by extending for debt upon judgment in any court of record, statute merchant, statute staple, recognizances; which being upon statutes, are called tenants by statute merchant, or staple, the other tenants by elegit, and by wardship of body and lands: for all these are called chattels real, and go to the executors and administrators, and not to the heirs; and are faleable and forfeitable as leases for years are.

Lease for life how forfeitable.

livery, &cc.

LEASES for lives are also called free-holds: they may also be made by word or writing. There must be livery and seisin given at the making of the leafe by him, whom we call the leffor; who cometh to the door, backfide, or garden, it it be a house; if not, then to some part of the land, and there he expresseth, that he doth grant unto the taker, called the lessee, for term of his life: and in feifin thereof, he delivereth to him a turt, Indorsement of twig, or ring of the door: and if the lease be by writing, then commonly there is a note written on

liv by ter It of

th

wi

tio der on che

hol ny, not

ma

hei

by

firf fore F by : nan

mar afte E live

bod be d fem dy c fath

E Ed. ftren put :

conv it, 1 the backfide of the leafe, with the names of those witnesses who were present at the time of the livery of feifin made. This estate is not saleable Lease for life by the sheriff for debt, but the land is to be ex- not to be fold by the sheriff tended for a yearly value, to fatisfy the debt. for debt, but It is not forfeitable by out-lawry, except in cases extended of felony, nor by any of the means before mentioned, of leases for years; saving in an attainder for felony, treason, premunire, and then only to the crown, and not to the lords by efcheat.

And though a nobleman or other have liberty A man that by charter, to have all felons good; yet a tenant hath bona felon. by charholding for term of life, being attainted of felo- ter shall not ny, doth forfeit unto the King, and not to this have the effare, nobleman.

If a man have an estate in lands for another man's life, and dieth; this land cannot go to his heir, nor to his executors, but to the party that first entreth; and he is called an occupant, as be-Occupant: fore hath been declared.

A lease for years or for life may be made also Of estate rails, by fine of record, or bargain and fale, or cove- and how fuch an effate may nant to stand seized upon good considerations of be limited. marriage, or blood; the reasons whereof are hereafter expressed.

ENTAILS of lands are created by a gift, with livery and feifin to a man, and to the heirs of his body; this word (body) making the entail, may be demonstrated and restrained to the males or females, heirs of their two bodies, or of the body of either of them, or of the grandfather or father.

ENTAILS of lands began by a statute made in By the stat. of Ed. I. time, by which also they are so much in Ed. I. time, frengthened, as that the tenant in tail could not estates in tail put away the land from the heir by any act of were fo threngthened, conveyance or attainder; nor let it, nor incumber that they were it, longer than his own life.

by an attainder.

re-, it be veare

the

tra-

the nds an-

atling y of by dict

ond nan-

ther nent tute utes,

aple, p of ittels tors,

rfeitolds: iting. mafor; en, it

f the grant life: turt, be by

en on the The great inconvenience that enfued thereof.

Bur the inconvenience thereof was great, for by that means, the land being fo fure tied upon the heir as that his father could not put it from him, it made the fon to be disobedient, negligent, and wastful; often marrying without the father's confent, and to grow infolent in vice, knowing, that there could be no check of disinheriting him. It also made the owners of the land less fearful to commit murders, felonies, treasons, and manflaughters; for that they knew none of these acts could hurt the heir of his inheritance. It hindered men that had entailed lands, that they could not make the best of their lands by fine and improvement, for that none upon fo uncertain an estate as for term of his own life, would give him a fine of any value, nor lay any great flock upon the land, that might yield rent improved.

The prejudice the crown re-

LASTLY, those entails did defraud the crown, ceived thereby, and many subjects of their debts; for that the land was not liable longer than his life-time; which caused, that the King could not fafely commit any office of account to fuch whose lands were entailed, nor other men trust them with loan of money.

THESE inconveniencies were all remedied by acts of parliament; as namely, by acts of parlia-The flar. 4 H ment later than the acts of entails, made 4 H. VII. and 32 H. VII. 32 H. VIII. A tenant in tail may difinestates tail by herit his son by a fine with proclamation, and may by that means also make it subject to his debts and fales.

26 H. VIII.

VIII. to bar

32 H. VIII.

By a statute made 26 H. VIII. a tenant in tail doth forfeit his lands for treason; and by another act of parliament, 32 H. VIII. he may make leases good against his heir for one and twenty years, or three lives; fo that it be not of his chief houses, lands, or demesne, or any lease in reversion, nor less rent reserved than the tenants have paid most part of one and twenty years before,

the fon rai jars

pri

fuit

b

in

V

K

13

ag

it

or

fo

de

cu

ble

do

pe

pr

aw for

fho

ve

the

for

fta

fell

del

con the OCC: of 1

ing to

mer hav it f before, nor have any manner of discharge for doing wastes and spoils: by a statute made 33 H. 33 H. VIII. VIII. tenants of entailed lands are liable to the entails two pri-King's debts by extent, and by a statute made vileges. 13 and 39 Eliz. they are faleable for the arrearages upon his account for his office; fo that now it resteth, that entailed lands have two privileges only, which be these. First, not to be forfeited 1. Not forfeite for felonies. Secondly, not to be extended for able for felony. debts after the parties death, except the entails be able for the debts of the

cut off by fine and recovery.

for

pon

rom

ent,

ier's

ing,

min.

arful

nanacts

der-

ould

im-

an

give

tock

pro-

own,

me;

afely

ands

with

d by

arlia-

4 H.

difin-

may

debts

n tail

other

make

venty

f his

fe in

nants

years efore,

Bur it is to be noted, that fince these nota-death: proviso, ble statutes, and remedies provided by statutes, do not to exclude his next heir. dock entails, there is ftart up a devise called per- if he do, to petuity, which is an entail with an addition of a forfeir his estate, and the proviso conditional, tied to his estate, not to put next heir must away the land from his next heir; and if he do, to of a perpetuiforfeit his own estate. Which perpetuities, if they ty, which is an should stand, would bring in all the former incon- entail with an addition. veniencies subject to entails, that were cut off by These perpethe former mentioned statutes, and far greater; tuities would bring in all the for by the perpetuity, if he that is in possession former inconftart away never so little, as in making a lease, or estates tail. felling a little quillet, forgetting after two or three The inconvedescents, as often they do, how they are tied; those perpetuis the next heir must enter, who peradventure is his ties. ion, his brother, uncle, or kiniman: and this raifeth unkind fuits, fetting all that kindred at jars, some taking one part, some another, and the principal parties wasting their time and money in fuits of law. So that in the end they are both constrained by necessity to join both in a sale of the land, or a great part of it, to pay their debts, occasioned through their suits: and if the chiefest of the family for any good purpose of well feating himself, by selling that which lieth far off, is to buy that which is near, or for the advancement of his daughters or younger fons, should have reasonable cause to sell, this perpetuity, if it should hold good, restraineth him. And more

party after his

than that, where many are owners of inheritance of land not entailed, may, during the minority of his eldest fon, appoint the profits to go to the advancement of the younger fons and daughters, and pay debts; but by entails and perpetuities, the owners of these lands cannot do it, but they must suffer the whole to descend to the eldest son. and so to come to the crown by wardship all the time of his infancy.

Quære, whether it be betperpetuities zard the undoby unthrifty posterity.

WHEREFORE, feeing the dangerous times and ter to restrain untowardly heirs, they might prevent those mismen by these chiefs of undoing their houses, by conveying the from alienati- land from fuch heirs, if they were not tied to the ons, or to ha- stake by those perpetuities, and restrained from ing of houses forfeiting to the crown, and disposing it to their own, or to their children's good; therefore it is worthy of confideration, whether it be better for the subject and sovereign to have the lands secured to mens names and bloods by perpetuities, with all the inconveniencies above-mentioned, or to be in hazard of undoing his house by unthrifty posterity.

p

y

t

n 3

Î

0

b

b

gi

m

di

ar

m

ot

ab

H

th CO

an

lif

or

fer

is

made

The last and fimple.

THE last and greatest estate of lands is feegreatest estate simple, and beyond this there is none of the former for lives, years, or entails; but beyond them is fee-simple. For it is the greatest, last and uttermost degree of estates in land; therefore he that maketh a leafe for life, or a gift in tail, may appoint a remainder when he maketh another for life or in tail, or to a third in fee-simple; but after a fee-simple he can limit no other estate. And if a man do not dispose of the fee-simple by way of remainder, when he maketh the gift in tail, or for lives, then the fee-simple resteth in himself The difference as a reversion. The difference between a reverbetween a re- fion and a remainder is this. The remainder is always a fucceeding effate, appointed upon the gifts of a precedent estate, at the time when the precedent is appointed. But the reversion is an eftate left in the giver, after a particular estate

A remainder cannot be limited upon an estare in feesimple.

version and a remainder.

CE

of

id-

rs,

es,

ley

on,

the

ind

iif-

the

the

om

neir

t is

for

fe-

ries,

, or

ifty

fee-

for-

hem

ter-

that ap-

for

after

nd if

ay of

l, or

mielt

ever-

er is

the

n the

is an

estate made

made by him for years, life, or intail; where the remainder is made with the particular estates, then it must be done by deeds in writing, with livery and feifin, and cannot be by words; and if the giver will dispose of the reversion after it remain- A reversion eth in himself, he is to do it by writing, and not cannot be by word, and the tenant is to have notice of it, word. and to atturn it, which is to give his affent by Atturnment must be had to word, or paying rent, or the like; and except the the grant of the tenant will thus atturn, the party to whom the reversion. reversion is granted cannot have the reversion, compellable to neither can he compel him by any law to at- atturn, but turn, except the grant of the reversion be by reversion is fine; and then he may by writ provided for that granted by purpose: and if he do not purchase that writ, yet by the fine the reversion shall pass; and the tenant shall pay no rent, except he will himself, nor be punished for any wastes in houses, woods, Ba unless it be granted by bargain and fale by indenture enrolled; these fee-simple estates lie open to all perils of forfeitures, extents, incumbrances and fales.

LANDS are conveyed by these six means; first, Lands may be by feoffment, which is, where by deed lands are conveyed, By reoffgiven to one and his heirs, and livery and feifin ment. made according to the form and effect of the 2. By fine. deed; if a lesser estate than fee-simple be given, 4. By use. and livery of seisin made, it is not called a feosf- 6. By will. ment, except the fee-simple be conveyed, but is otherwise called a lease for life or gift entail as above-mentioned.

2. A fine is a real agreement, beginning thus, What a fine is, Hac est finalis concordia, &c. This is done before and now lands may be conthe King's judges in the court of Common Pleas, veyed hereby. concerning lands that a man should have from another to him and his heirs, or to him for his life, or to him and the heirs males of his body, or for years certain, whereupon rent may be referved, but no condition or covenants. This fine is a record of great credit; and upon this fine are

K 2

tour

b

d

ta

n

fi

T

tl

W

th

re

la

th

re

fe

re

of

ul

ra

an

th

an

m

do

de

do

tha

me

bu

for

har

thi

1. An infant.

3. Mad man.

What recoveries are.

Common the court.

four proclamations made openly in the Common Pleas; that is, in every term one, for four terms together; and if any man having right to the Five years non fame, make not his claim within five years after claim barreth the proclamations ended, he lofeth his right for ever, except he be an infant, a woman covert, a 2. Feme covert. mad-man, or beyond the feas, and then his right 4. Beyond sea. is faved; so that he claim within five years after the death of her husband's full age, recovery of his wits, or return from beyond the feas. Fine is a feoff fine is called a feoffment of record, because that ment of record it includeth all that the feoffment doth, and worketh farther of his own nature, and barreth entails peremptorily, whether the heir doth claim within five years or not, if he claim by him that levied the fine.

3. RECOVERIES are where for affurances of lands the parties do agree, that one shall begin an action real against the other, as though he had good right to the land, and the other shall not enter into defence against it, but allege that he bought the land of I. H. who had warranted unto him, and pray that I. H. may be called in to defend the title, which I. H. is one of the criers of the Common Pleas, and is called the common voucher one of voucher. This I. H. shall appear and make as if he would defend it, but shall pray a day to be affigned him in his matter of defence; which being granted him, at the day he maketh default, and thereupon the court is to give judgment against him; which cannot be for him to lose his lands, because he hath it not, but the party that he hath fold it to, hath that who vouched him to warrant it.

THEREFORE the demandant, who hath no dethe demandant fence made against it, must have judgment to have the land against him that he fued (who is tenant to reco. called the tenant) and the tenant is to have judgver fo much ment against I. H. to recover in value so much land in value of land of his, where in truth he hath none, nor never

Judgment for tenant in tail. Judgment for voucher.

never will. And by this device, grounded upon the strict principles of law, the first tenant loseth the land, and hath nothing for it; but it is by his own agreement for affurance to him that bought it.

This recovery barreth entails, and all remain- A recoverybarders and reversions that should take place after the reth an escheat entails, faving where the King is giver of the en-reversions and tail, and keepeth the reversion to himself; then thereupon. neither the heir, nor the remainder, nor rever-

fion, is barred by the recovery.

n

ns

he

er

or

a ht

ter of

his

nat

nd

th

im

nat

of

an

ad

not

he

nto de-

of

non

if

be

be-

ult,

a-

his

hat

1 to

de-

to

o is

dg-

uch

nor

ever

THE reason why the heirs, remainders, and The reason reversions are thus barred, is because in strict law why a comthe recompence adjudged against the crier that barreth those was vouchee, is to go in fuccession of estate as and reversion. the land should have done, and then it was not reason to allow the heir the liberty to keep the land itself, and also to have recompence; and therefore he loseth the land, and is to trust to the recompence.

This fleight was first invented, when entails The many fell out to be so inconvenient as is before decla- inconveniences red, so that men made no conscience to cut them tail brought in off, if they could find law for it. And now by rice, which are use, those recoveries are become common assu- made now rances against entails, remainders, and reversions, conveyances and are the greatest security purchasers have for and affurances their money; for a fine will bar the heir in tail, for land. and not the remainder, nor reversion, but a com-

mon recovery will bar them all.

Upon feoffments and recoveries, the estate Upon fines, doth fettle as the use and intent of the parties is feoffments, declared by word or writing, before the act was the estate doth done: as for example, if they make a writing, fettleaccording to the intent of that one of them shall levy a fine, make a feoff- the parties. ment, or fuffer a common recovery to the other; but the use and intent is, that one should have it for his life, and after his decease a stranger to have it in tail, and then a third in fee-simple. In this case the land settleth in an estate according

in remainder

to

to the use and intent declared. And that by reafon of the statute made 27 H. VIII. conveying the land in possession to him that hath interest in the use, or intent of the fine, feoffment, or recovery, according to the use and intent of the

parties.

Bargains, fales, and covenants to a use, are all grounded upon one statute.

Upon this statute is likewise grounded the fourth to stand seised and fifth of the six conveyances viz. bargains. fales, covenants to stand seized to uses; for this statute, wheresoever it findeth an use, conjoineth the possession to it, and turneth it into like quality of estate, condition, rent, and the like, as the use hath.

What a use is.

4. THE use is but the equity and honesty to hold the land in conscientia boni viri. As for example; I and you agree that I shall give you money for your land, and you shall make me asfurance of it. I pay you the money, but you made me no affurance of it. Here although the estate of the land be still in you, yet the equity and honesty to have it is with me; and this equity is called the use, upon which I had no remedy but in chancery, until this statute was made of 27 H. VIII. and now this statute conjoineth and containeth the land to him that hath the use. I, for my money paid to you, have the land itself, without any other conveyance from you; and it is called a bargain and fale.

f

a

0

21 b

W

if

01

u

la

ria

m

fc

th

re

for

gu

he

no

where

Before 27 H. 8 there was no remedy for a use, but in chancery.

The stat, of 27 H. 8 doth not money without and enrolled.

Bur the parliament that made that statute did pass land upon foresee, that it would be mischievous that mens the payment of lands should so suddenly upon the payment of a adeed indented little money be conveyed from them, peradventure in an alehouse or a tavern upon strainable advantages, did therefore gravely provide another act in the same parliament, that the land upon payment of this money should not pass away, ex-The star. of 27 cept there were a writing indented, made between H.8. extendeth the faid two parties, and the faid writing also not to places within fix months involled in some of the courts at Westminster, or in the sessions rolls in the shire

enroll deeds.

where the land lieth; unless it be in cities or corporate towns where they did use to enroll deeds, and there the statute extendeth not.

5. THE fifth conveyance of a fine is a convey- A conveyance ance to stand seized to uses: it is in this fort; a to stand seized to a use. man that hath a wife and children, brethren, and kinsfolks, may by writing under his hand and feal agree, that for their or any of their preferment, he will stand feized of his lands to their ules, either for life in tail or fee, so as he shall fee cause; upon which agreement in writing, there ariseth an equity or honesty, that the land should go according to those agreements; nature and Upon an agreereason allowing these provisions; which equity ting to stand and honesty is the use. And the use being creatuse of any of ted in this fort, the statute of 27 H. VIII. be- his kindred, a fore mentioned, conveyeth the estate of the land, use may be created, &c. as the use is appointed.

AND fo this covenant to stand seized to uses, is A covenant to at this day, fince the faid statute, a conveyance a use needeth of land, and with this difference from a bargain no enrollment and fale; in that this needeth no enrollment as a and fale to a bargain and sale doth, nor needeth it to be in use doth, &cc. writing indented, as bargain and fale must: and if the party, to whose use he agreeth to stand feized of the land, be not wife, or child, coufin, or one that he meaneth to marry, then will no use rife, and so no conveyance; for although the law alloweth fuch weighty confiderations of marriage and blood to raife uses, yet doth it not admit so trifling considerations, as of acquaintance, ichooling, fervices, or the like.

But where a man maketh an estate of his land Upon a fine, to others by fine, feoffment, or recovery, he may recovery, a man then appoint the use to whom he lifteth, without may limit the respect of marriage, kindred, or other things; he listeth, for in that case his own will and declaration without consiguideth the equity of the estate. It is not so when blood, or mohe maketh no estate, but agreeth to stand seized, ney. Othernor when he hath taken any thing, as in the gain and fale,

cases or covenant.

K 4

ıg eft or he

a

th ns, his eth

laas

to exvou af-

vou the uity

uity but H. con-

for ithit is

e did mens of a ven-

nable other upon , ex-

ween

courts fhire where cases of bargain and sale and covenant to stand to uses.

eff

th

th

WE

gr

me

Wa

for

to

bri

wi of

fhi

his for

hir

wh

old

tak

of

yer

the

the

COL

hei fall

an

cre

nar

it 1

aga the

Le

god VI

16

dea

Of the continuance of land by will.

6. THE last of the fix conveyances is a will in writing, which course of conveyance was first ordained by a statute made 32 H. VIII. before which statute no man might give land by will, except it were in a borough town, where there was an especial custom that men might give their lands by will; as in London, and many other places.

The not dispocommon law.

THE not giving of land by will, was thought fing of lands to be a defect at common law, that men in wars, by will, was or fuddenly falling fick, had not power to dispose a derect at the of their lands, except they could make a feoffment, or levy a fine, or fuffer a recovery; which lack of time would not permit: and for men to do it by these means, when they could not undo it again, was hard; besides, even to the last hour of death, mens minds might alter upon further proofs of their children or kindred, or encrease of children or debt, or defect of servants or friends to be altered.

The court that was invented a conveyance of lands to feofwill.

For which cause, it was reason that the law before the star. should permit him to reserve to the last instant of 32 H. 8. first the disposing of his lands, and to give him means gave power to dispose it, which seeing it did not fitly serve, will, which was men used this devise.

THEY conveyed their full estates of their lands fees in trust, in their good health, to friends in trust, properly to such persons called feosses in trust; and then they would by declare in their their wills declare how their friends should dispose of their lands; and if those friends would not perform it, the court of chancery was to compel them by reason of trust; and this trust was called the use of the land, so as the feoffees had the land, and the party himself had the use; which use was in equity, to take the profits for himself, and that the feoffees should make such an estate as he should appoint them; and if he appointed none, then the use shall go to the heir, as the estate

estate itself of the land should have done; for the use was to the estate like a shadow following

the body.

nd

in

rft

ore

ill,

ere

eir

her

ght

ars,

ofe

off-

ich

to

ndo

our

her afe

nds

law

ant

ans

ve,

nds

erly

by

oofe

not

npel cal-

the hich

felf,

tate

rted the tate

By this course of putting lands into use there The inconvewere many inconveniencies, (as this use which ring land into grew first for a reasonable cause,) viz. to give use. men power and liberty to dispose of their own, was turned to deceive many of their just and reafonable rights; as namely, a man that had cause to fue for his land, knew not against whom to bring his action, nor who was owner of it. The wife was defrauded of her thirds; the husband of being tenant by curtefy; the lord of his wardship, relief, heriot, and escheat; the creditor of his extent for debt; the poor tenant of his leafe; for thefe rights and duties were given by law from him that was owner of the land, and none other; which was now the feoffee of trust, and so the old owner, which we call the feoffor, should take the profits, and leave the power to dispose of the land at his discretion to the feoffee; and yet he was not fuch a tenant as to be feized of the land, fo as his wife could have dower, or the lands be extended for his debts, or that he could forfeit it for felony or treason, or that his heir could be ward for it, or any duty of tenure fall to the lord by his death, or that he could make any leases of it.

Which frauds, by degrees of time as they en- The frauds of creased, were remedied by divers statutes; as conveyances to namely, by a statute of I H. VI. and 4 H. VIII. of time, as they it was appointed that the action may be tried increased, were against him which taketh the profits, which was the statutes. then cestuy que use; by a statute made I R. III. Leases and estates made by cestur que use are made good, and estates by him acknowledged. VII. the heir of ceftuy que use is to be in ward; 16 H. VIII. the lord is to have relief upon the

death of any cestur que use.

27 H. 8. taking reduceth the ment, fine, and secovery.

WHICH frauds nevertheless multiplying daily, away all uses, in the end 27 H. VIII. the parliament purposing law to the ant to take away all those uses, and reducing the law cient form of to the ancient form of conveying of lands by publand, by feoff lick livery of feifin, fine, and recovery, did ordain, that where lands were put in trust or use. there the possession and estate should be presently carried out of the friends in trust, and settled and invested on him that had the uses, for such term and time as he had the use.

In what manby will.

By this statute of 27 H. VIII. the power of ner the flat. of disposing land by will, is clearly taken away apower to di mongst those frauds; whereupon 32 H. VIII. spose of lands another statute was made, to give men power to give lands by will in this fort. First, it must be by will in writing. Secondly, he must be seized of an estate in see-simple; for tenant for another man's life, or term in tail, cannot give land by will; by that statute 32 H. VIII. he must be solely feized, and not jointly with another; and then feized of capite being thus feized, for all the land he holdeth in lands and fo- focage tenure, he may give it by will, except he nor devise but hold any piece of land in capite by knight-service the whole. of the King; and then laving all together he can The third part give but two parts by will; for the third part of must descend to the heir to the whole, as well in focage as in capite, must deanswer guard feend to the heir, to answer wardship, livery, and primer feisin to the crown.

If a man be feifin to the grown.

AND so if he hold lands by knight-service of a subject, he can devise of the land but two parts, and the third the lord by wardship, and the heir

by descent is to hold.

AND if a man that hath three acres of land A conveyance holden in capite by knight-fervice do make a joincapite lands to ture to his wife of one, and convey another to any of his children, or to friends, to take the &c. void for a profits, and to pay his debts or legacies, or daughthird part, by ters portions, then the third acre or any part thereof he cannot give by will, but must suffer it to descend

the wife for

fhi CO in

de

nf be ot ha

an

ba

he CO fet the

an no no it i

fee

Ki COL fet cep

WI fhi hay cer

por and thi

An tha

as l

descend to the heir, and that must satisfy ward-

ily,

fing law

ubor-

use, ntly

and erm

r of

y a-

III.

er to

It be

eized other d by

folethen

th in

pt he

rvice e can

art of ft de-

and

ice of

parts,

e heir

f land

a join-

her to

ke the

daugh-

thereer it to escend

YET a man having three acres as before, may But a convey? convey all to his wife or children by conveyance ance by act in his life-time, as by feoffment, fine, recovery, life-time of the bargain and fale, or covenant to stand seized to lands to such uses, and to disinherit the heir. But if the heir uses is not void, be within age when his father dieth, the King, or part: but if the other lord shall have that heir in ward, and shall heir be within have one of the three acres during the wardship, have one of and to fue livery and feifin. But at full age the the acres to be in ward. heir shall have no part of it, but it shall go according to the conveyance made by the father.

IT hath been debated how the thirds shall be Entailed lands fet forth. For it is the use, that all lands which part of the thirds. The the father leaveth to descend to the heir, being King nor lord fee-simple, or in tail, must be part of the thirds; meddle if a full and if it be a full third, then the king, nor heir, third part be nor lord, can intermeddle with the rest; if it be to the heir. not a full third, yet they must take it so much as

it is, and have a supply out of the rest.

This fupply is to be taken thus; if it be the The manner of King's ward, then by a commission out of the when the part court of wards, whereupon a jury by oath must of the heir is fet forth fo much as shall make up the thirds, ex- not a full third. cept the officers of the court of wards can otherwife agree with the parties. If there be no wardship due to the King, then the other lord is to have this supply by a commission out of the chancery, and jury thereupon.

Bur in all these cases, the statutes do give The statutes power to him that maketh the will, to fet forth the testator to and appoint of himself which lands shall go for set out the thirds, and neither King nor lord can refuse it. third himself, And if it be not enough, yet they must take that in part, and only have a supply in manner

as before is mentioned out of the rest,

Property in goods.

Of the feveral ways whereby a man may get property in goods or chattels.

1. By gift. 2. By fale.

3. By stealing.

4. By waving. 5. By straying.

6. By shipwreck.

7. By forfeiture.

8. By executorship.

9. By administration.

10. By legacy.

1. Property by gift.

A deed of gift of goods to deceive his creditors, is void against against the executors, administrators. or vendee of the party himfelf.

DY gift, the property of goods may be passed D by word or writing; but if there be a general deed of gift made of all his goods, this is futhem, but good spicious to be done upon fraud, to deceive the creditors.

AND if a man who is in debt make a deed of gift of all his goods to protract the taking of them in execution for his debt, this deed of gift is void, as against those to whom he stood indebted; but as against himself, his own executors or administrators, or any man to whom afterwards he shall fell or convey them, it is good,

2. By Sale,

bona fide, and what nor, when 1 vate refervation of trust between the parties.

What is a fale Roperty in goods by fale. By fale, any man may convey his own goods to another; and there is a pri- although he may fear execution for debts, yet he may fell them out-right for money at any time before the execution ferved; fo that there be no refervation of trust between them, paying the money, he shall have the goods again; for that trust truf to p exe

ther as a fair, prop hor

for i to a or e ther bar ty,

or f

exar Smit but West by t

ufua

flesh S fhop favir plate

pear per's imit fic in

Y

teth feize

exce

trust in fuch case doth prove plainly a fraud, to prevent the creditors from taking the goods in execution.

3. By theft or taking in jest.

DRoperty of goods by theft, or taking in jest. How a fale in If any man steal my goods or chattels, or take a bar to the them from me in jest, or borrow them of me, or owner. as a trespasser or felon carry them to the market or fair, and fell them, this fale doth bar me of the property of my goods, faving, that if he be a horse he must be ridden two hours in the market or fair, between ten and five a clock, and tolled for in the toll-book, and the feller must bring one to avouch his fale, known to the toll-book-keeper, or else the sale bindeth me not. And for any other goods, where the fale in a market or fair shall bar the owner, being not the feller of his property, it must be fale in a market or fair, where usually things of that nature are fold. example; if a man steal a horse and sell him in Smithfield, the true owner is barred by this fale; Of markets; but if he fell the horse in Cheapside, Newgate, or kets such a sale Westminster market, the true owner is not barred ought to be by this fale; because these markets are usually for made in. flesh, fish, &c. and not for horses.

So whereas by the custom of London in every shop there is a market all the days of the week, faving Sundays and Holidays; yet if a piece of plate or jewel that is loft, or chain of gold or pearl that is stolen or borrowed, be fold in a draper's or scrivener's shop, or any others but a goldlmith, this fale barreth not the true owner, &

sic in similibus.

YET by stealing alone of goods, the thief get- The owner teth not fuch property, but that the owner may goods after feize them again wherefoever he findeth them; they are stolen. except they were fold in fair or market, after

on.

ffed enefuthe

l of hem t is ebt-

s or ards

man and t he time

no the that trust

USE OF THE LAW.

they were stolen; and that bona fide without fraud.

ca

th

joi

do

in

is

ftr

elf

the

wh

the

the

cep

hir cha

ind

it,

by

or

fuff

tho

ove at t

cep in 1

be the

Kin

If the thief be felony, or outfeit the stoln goods to the crown, the owner is without remedy. When the

fame felony, he

Bur if the thief be condemned of the felony, condemned for or out-lawed for the fame, or out-lawed in any lawed, or for personal action, or have committed a forfeiture of goods to the crown, then the true owner is without remedy,

NEVERTHELESS, if fresh after the goods were stolen, the true owner maketh pursuit after the owner may thief and goods, and taketh the goods with the from the thief, thief, he may take them again: and if he make If he convict no fresh pursuit, yet if he prosecute the felon, the thief of the fo far as justice requireth, that is, to have him shall have his arraigned, indicted, and found guilty (though he goods again by be not hanged, nor have judgment of death) or a writ of resti-have him out-lawed upon the indictment; in all these cases he shall have his goods again, by a writ of restitution to the party in whose hands they are.

4. By waving of goods.

BY waving of goods, a property is gotten thus.

A thief having stoln goods being pursued, flyeth away and leaveth the goods. This leaving is called waving, and the property is in the King; except the lord of the manor have right to it, by custom or charter.

But if the felon be indicted, adjudged, or found guilty, or out-lawed, at the fuit of the owner of these goods, he shall have restitution of these goods, as before.

5. By straying.

BY straying, property in live cattel is thus gotten. When they come into other mens grounds straying from the owners, then the party or lord, into whose grounds or manors they come, causeth causeth them to be seized, and a wythe put about their necks, and to be cried in three markets adjoining, shewing the marks of the cattel; which done, if the true owner claimeth them not within a year and a day, then the property of them is in the lord of the manor whereunto they did stray, if he have all strays by custom or charter, else to the King.

6. Wreck, and when it shall be faid to be.

BY shipwreck, property of goods is thus gotten. When a ship loaden is cast away upon the coasts, so that no living creature that was in it when it began to sink escaped to land with life, then all those goods are said to be wrecked, and they belong to the crown if they be sound; except the lord of the soil adjoining can entitle himself unto them by custom, or by the King's charter.

7. Forfeitures.

D'y forfeitures, goods and chattels are thus gotten. If the owner be out-lawed, if he be indicted of felony, or treason, or either confess it, or be found guilty of it, or refuse to be tried by peers or jury, or be attainted by judgment, or sly for felony; although he be not guilty, or suffer the exigent to go forth against him; although he be not out-lawed, or that he go over the seas without licence, all the goods he had at the judgment, he forfeiteth to the crown; except some lord by charter can claim them. For in those cases prescripts will not serve, except it be so ancient, that it hath had allowance before the justices in eyre in their circuits, or in the King's Bench in ancient time.

come,

thus

mens

party

hout

ony,

any re of

vith-

were

the

make elon,

him

h he

i) or

in all

by a

nands

thus.

aving King;

it, by

d, or

of the

ion of

The de and the divide a fine some see

8. By executorship.

B g

200

Va

he

to

ca di

fo

th

ing

ma

the fha

fo firf

ftar

bill

to

con nift

or c

or (

by

Wor

gair

whe

reco he v

if fi

judg

E

DY executorship goods are gotten. When a D man possessed of goods maketh his last will and testament in writing or by word, and maketh one or more executors thereof, these Executors have by the will and death of the parties, all the property of their goods, chattels, leafes for years, wardships and extents, and all right concerning those things.

Executors may for any debt.

Those executors may meddle with the goods, dispose of the and dispose them before they prove the will, but goods, but not they cannot bring an action for any debt or duty before they have proved the will.

What probat and in what manner it is made.

THE proving of the will is thus. They are to of the will is, exhibit the will into the Bishop's court, and there they are to bring the witnesses, and there they are to be fworn, and the Bishop's officers are to keep the will original, and certify the copy thereof in parchment under the Bishop's seal of office; which parchment so sealed is called the will proved.

9. By letters of administration. owner be out-lawed, it

Y letters of administration property in goods b is thus gotten. When a man possessed of goods dieth without any will, there fuch goods as the executors should have had, if he had made a will, were by ancient law to come to the Bishop of the diocefe, to dispose for the good of his foul that died, he first paying his funerals and debts, and giving the rest ad pios usus.

Pii ufus.

This is now altered by statute laws, fo as the Bishops are to grant letters of administration of the goods at this day to the wife if she require it, or children, or next of kin; if they refuse it, as often they do, because the debts are greater than the estate will bear, then some creditor or some other will take it as the Bishop's officers shall think

think meet. It groweth often in question what Bishop shall have the right of proving wills, and

granting administration of goods.

In which controverly the rule is thus; that if Where the inthe party dead had at the time of his death bona na notabilia in notabilia in diverse dioceses of some reasonable diverse diovalue, then the Archbishop of the province where Archbishop of he died is to have the probat of his will, and that province to grant the administration of his goods as the is to commit case falleth out; otherwise the Bishop of the the administradiocese where he died is to do it.

If there be but one executor made, yet he may Executor may refuse the executorship coming before the Bishop, the Bishop, if fo that he hath not intermeddled with any of he have the goods before, or with receiving debts, or pay- with the goods.

1 a

vill

eth

ors

the

ars,

ing

ds,

but

uty

10

ere

hev

10

ere-

ice;

ved.

oods

epoo

the

will, the

that

and

s the

n of

re it,

t, as than

fome

shall hink

AND if there be more executors than one, fo Executor ought to pay, many as lift may refuse; and if any one take it i. Judgments. upon him, the rest that did once resuse may when 2. Stat. recogn.
3. Debra by they will take it upon them; and no executor bonds and bills shall be further charged with debts or legacies, sealed. 4. Rent unpaid. 5. Serthan the value of the goods come to his hands; vants wages. for that he foresee that he pay debts upon record, 6. Head work-first debts to the King then upon indemen. 7. Shopfirst debts to the King, then upon judgments, book and constatutes, recognizances, then debts by bond and tracts by word. bill sealed, rent unpaid, servants wages, payment to head workmen, and laftly, shop-books, and contracts by word. For if an executor, or administrator pay debts to others before to the King, or debts due by bond before those due by record, or debts by shop-books and contracts before those by bond, arrearages of rent, and fervants or workmens wages, he shall pay the same over again to those others in the faid degrees.

Bur yet the law giveth them choice, that Debts due in where diverse have debts due in equal degree of equal degree record or specialty, he may pay which of them executor may he will, before any suit brought against him; but pay which of them he please if suit be brought he must first pay them that get before suit

judgment against him.

t

O

b

g

0

de

pa

0

P

CC

OI

W

ſe

ga

ha

fp

lea

m

or

mi

tal

Wi

CUI

Ex

the

ed the

] alie

tem

Any one executor may do leased and asfets wanting, he shall only be charged.

Otherwise of

Executor dieth cond executor stator. tor to the first the administrahis executor, or if administration be committed of his goods. In ordinary shall commit administration of the goods of the first intestate.

Executors or administrators may retain.

Any one executor may convey the goods, or as much as all release debts without his companion, and any one together; but by himself may do as much as all together; but if a debt be reone man's releasing of debts or felling of goods, shall not charge the other to pay so much of the goods, if there be not enough to pay debts; but it shall charge the party himself that did so release or convey.

But it is not so with administrators, for they administrators. have but one authority given them by the Bishop over the goods, which authority being given to many is to be executed by all of them joined together.

AND if an executor die making an executor, making his ex- the fecond executor is executor to the first te-

But if an administrator die intestate, then his testator. But administrator shall not be executor or administrator to the first; but in that case the Bishop, for die making whom we call the ordinary, is to commit the administration of the first testator's goods to his wife, or next of kin, as if he had died intestate; always provided, that that which the executor both cases the did in his life-time, is to be allowed for good. And so if an administrator die and make his executor, the executor of the administrator shall not be executor to the first intestate; but the ordinary must new commit the administration of the goods of the first intestate again.

If the executor or administrator pay debts, or funerals, or legacies of his own money, he may retain so much of the goods in kind, of the testator or intestate, and shall have property of it in kind.

10. Property by legacy.

Roperty by legacy, is where a man maketh a will and executors, and giveth legacies, he or they to whom the legacies are given must have the the affent of the executors or one of them to Executors or have his legacy, and the property of that legacy administrators may retain; or other goods bequeathed unto him, is faid to because the be in him; but he may not enter nor take his le-charged to pay gacy without the affent of the executors or one forme debts be; of them, because the executors are charged to pay debts before legacies; and if one of them affent to pay legacies, he shall pay the value thereof of his own purse, if there be not otherwise sufficient to pay debts.

But this is to be understood by debts of re-Legacies are to be paid before cord to the king, or by bill and bond fealed, debts by shopor arrearages of rent, or fervants or workmens books, bills unfealed, or wages; and not debts of shop-books, or bills un-contracts by fealed, or contract by word; for before them le-word.

gacies are to be paid.

7

e

it

S

e ıt

ſe

qc

to

ed

r,

e-

nis

ni-

p, id-

his te;

tor

od. his

hall orof

, or may

fta-

t in

th a

, he

have the

And if the executors doubt that they shall not Executor may have enough to pay every legacy, they may pay gacy he will which they lift first; but they may not fell any first. If the execufpecial legacy which they will to pay debts, or a tors do want lease of goods to pay a money legacy. But they they may sell lease of goods to pay a money legacy to may fell any legacy which they will to pay debts, pay debts. if they have not enough besides.

If a man make a will and make no executors, When a will is or if the executors refuse, the ordinary is to com- executor namit administration cum testamento annexo, and med, admini-take bonds of the administrators to perform the committed will, and he is to do it in fuch fort, as the exe-cum testamencutor should have done, if he had been named.

Ex Autogr. W. Sancroft Archiep. Cantuar.

fune 3. 1629. Sam. Maunsell utter-barritter of the Middle-Temple having perus'd this book, attested it to be very useful to all young students of the law, and worthy to be imprinted: and then

Lambethæ Junii 4º 1629. Ut in aliena arte alieno nixus judicio libelli bujus imprimendi potestatem facio.

OHANNES EFFERAY.

CASES

tr

cu

cu

fal

fu

fti

for

of

the

ten

it i

dra

mif

trea

ed

Eli

of 1

lege

fix |

two

the

OF

TREASON.

WRITTEN BY

Sir FRANCIS BACON, Knight,

His MAJESTY's Solicitor-General.

CHAP. I.

HERE a man doth compass or imagine the death of the King, the King's wise, the King's eldest son, and heir apparent, if it appear by any overt-act, it is treason.

WHERE a man doth violate the King's wife, the King's eldest daughter unmarried, the wife of the King's eldest son, and heir apparent, it is treason.

WHERE a man doth levy war against the King in the realm, it is treason.

WHERE a man is adherent to the King's enemies, giving them aid and comfort, it is treafon.

WHERE a man counterfeiteth the King's great feal, privy fignet, fign manual, it is treason: likewise his money.

Where a man bringeth into this realm false money, counterfeited to the likeness of English, with intent to merchandize or make payment thereof,

thereof, and knowing it to be falle money, it is treason.

WHERE a man counterfeiteth any coin current in payment within this realm, it is treason.

WHERE a man doth bring in any money being current within the realm, the same being false and counterfeit, with intent to utter it, and knowing the same to be false, it is treason.

WHERE a man doth clip, waste, round, or file any of the King's money, or any foreign coin, current by proclamation, for gain's sake, it is treason.

WHERE a man doth any way impair, diminish, falsify, scale, or lighten money current by proclamation, it is treason.

WHERE a man killeth the chancellor, the treafurer, the King's justices in eyre, the King's justices of affizes, the justices of oyer and terminer, being in their feveral places, and doing their offices, it is treason.

WHERE a man procureth or consenteth to treafon, it is treason.

ne

fe,

a-

fe,

ife

ng

e-

ea-

eat

ce-

lfe

fb,

ent

of,

WHERE a man doth persuade or withdraw any of the King's subjects from his obedience, or from the religion by his Majesty established, with intent to withdraw any from the King's obedience, it is treason.

WHERE a man is absolved, reconciled, or withdrawn from his obedience to the King, or promiseth obedience to any foreign power, it is treason.

WHERE any jesuit, or any other priest ordained fince the first year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth, shall come into, or remain in any part of this realm, it is treason.

Where any person being brought up in a college of jesuits, or seminaries, shall not return within six months after proclamation made, and within two days after his return submit himself to take the oath of supremacy, if otherwise he do return,

L 3

and not within fix months after proclamation made, it is treason.

WHERE a man committed for treason, doth

voluntarily break prison, it is treason.

WHERE a jaylor doth voluntarily permit a man committed for treason to escape, it is treason.

WHERE a man relieveth or comforteth a traitor, and knoweth of the offence, it is treason.

WHERE a man doth affirm or maintain any authority of jurisdiction spiritual, or doth put in ure or execute any thing for the advancement or setting forth thereof, the third time, it is treafon.

WHERE a man refuseth to take the oath of supremacy, being tendered by the Bishop of the diocese, if he be any ecclesiastical person; or by commission out of the chancery, if he be a temporal person; such offence the second time is treason.

CHAP. II.

The punishment, trial, and proceedings in cases of treason.

IN treason the corporal punishment is by drawing on a hurdle from the place of the prison to the place of execution, by hanging and being cut down alive, bowelling and quartering, and in women, burning.

In treason there ensueth a corruption of blood

in the line afcending and defcending.

In treason, lands and goods are forfeited, and inheritances, as well intailed as fee-simple, and the profits of estates for life.

In treason, the escheats go to the King, and

not to the lord of the fee.

In treason, the land forfeited shall be in the King's actual possession without office.

pri

ver

all

ba

oa

th

th

W

tic

vi

tu

sh

W

ch

is

ſ

In treason there be no accessaries, but all are principals.

In treason, no sanctuary, nor benefit of cler-

gy, or peremptory challenge is allowed.

In treason, if the party stand mute, yet nevertheless judgment and attainder shall proceed all one as upon verdict.

In treason no counsel is to be allowed, nor

bail permitted to the party.

In treason no witnesses shall be received upon

oath for the parties justification.

In treason, if the fact be committed beyond the seas, yet it may be tried in any county where

the King will award his commission.

In treason, if the party be non sanæ memoriæ, yet if he had formerly confessed it before the King's counsel, and that it be certified that he was of good memory at the time of his examination and confession, the court may proceed to judgment without calling or arraigning the party.

In treason, the death of the party before conviction dischargeth all proceedings and forsei-

tures

n

n

1-

re

or

a-

1-

1e

y

is

of

V-

n

ıg

in

d

nd

nd

nd

10

In treason, if the party be once acquitted, he should not be brought in question again for the same fact.

In treason, no new case not expressed in the statute of 25 E. 3. or made treason by any special statute since, ought to be judged treason, without consulting with the parliament.

In treason, there can be no prosecution but at the King's suit, and the King's pardon dis-

chargeth.

In treason, the King cannot grant over to any

subject power and authority to pardon it.

In treason, a trial of a peer of the kingdom is to be by special commission before the lord high steward, and those that pass upon him to be none but peers: the proceeding is with great solemnity, the lord-steward sitting under a cloth

L 4

. a cio

of estate with a white rod of justice in his hand; and the peers may confer together, but are not any ways shut up; and are demanded by the lord-steward their voices one by one, and the plurality of voices carries it.

In treason, it hath been an ancient use and favour from the Kings of this realm to pardon the execution of hanging, drawing, and quartering; and to make warrant for their beheading.

THE proceeding in case of treason with a common subject is in the King's Bench, or by commission of over and terminer.

CHAP. III.

Cases of misprision of treason.

WHERE a man concealeth high treason only, without any consorting or abetting, it is misprission of treason.

WHERE a man counterfeiteth any foreign coin of gold or filver not current in the realm, it is misprission of treason.

WHERE a man fixes an old feal to a new patent, it is misprisson of treason.

CHAP. IV.

The punishment, trial, and proceedings in cases of misprision of treason.

THE punishment of misprission of treason is by perpetual imprisonment, loss of the issues and profits of their lands during life, and loss of goods and chattels.

THE proceeding and trial is as in cases of high treason.

In misprision of treason bail is not admitted.

Tobnii garrar in

CHAP.

prela

faith

hath

and fway reafo

N

mist:

The

1 d wom In

with In

cafe

break felon

CHAP. V.

t

e

d

n

1-

2-

in

15

W

of

by

ues of

of

1.

P.

Cases of petty treason.

WHERE a fervant killeth his master, the wife the husband, the spiritual man his prelate, to whom he is subordinate, and oweth faith and obedience, it is petty treason.

WHERE a fon killeth the father or mother, it hath been questioned whether it be petty treason, and the late experience and opinion seemeth to sway to the contrary, though against law and reason in my judgment.

WHERE a fervant killeth his or her master or mistress after they are out of service, it is petty treason.

CHAP. VI.

The punishment, trial, and proceeding in cases of petty treason.

IN petty treason, the corporal punishment is by drawing on an hurdle, and hanging, and in a woman burning.

In petty treason, the forfeiture is the same with the case of felony.

In petty treason, all accessaries are but in case of felony.

CHAP. VII.

Cases of felony.

WHERE a man committeeth murder or homicide of malice prepented, it is felony.

WHERE a man committeeth murder (that is)

breaking of an house with an intent to commit

breaking of an house with an intent to commit felony, it is felony.

WHERE

WHERE a man committeth manslaughter, that is, homicide of fudden heat, and not of malice prepensed, it is felony.

WHERE a man rideth armed with a felonious

intent, it is felony.

WHERE a man doth maliciously and feloniously burn any man's house, it felony.

WHERE a man doth maliciously, &c. burn corn upon the ground, or in stack, it is felony.

WHERE a man doth maliciously cut out another man's tongue, or put out his Eyes, it is felony.

WHERE a man robbeth or stealeth, viz. taketh away another man's goods, above the value of 12 d. out of his possession, with intent to conceal it, it is felony.

WHERE a man embezzeleth and withdraweth any of the King's records at Wesiminster, where-

by a judgment is reversed, it is felony.

WHERE a man having the custody of the King's armour, munition, or other habiliments of war, doth maliciously convey away the same, it is felony, if it be to the value of twenty shillings.

WHERE a servant hath goods of his master's, delivered unto him, and goeth away with them,

it is felony.

WHERE a man conjures, or invokes wicked

spirits, it is felony.

WHERE a man doth use or practise witchcraft, whereby any person shall be killed, wast-

ed, or lamed, it is felony.

WHERE a man practifeth any witchcraft, to discover treasure hid, or to discover stoln goods, or to provoke unlawful love, or to impair or hurt any man's cattle or goods the fecond time, having been once before convicted of like offence, it is felony.

Where a man useth the craft of multiplica-

tion of gold or filver, it is felony.

WHERE

M

kno

her

won

or h

felor

man

twel

put

tuals

it is

rage

they

after

confi

any

felon

perfi

gain

or a

abjui

W ling

W

or ot

laws,

Warr difgu

ceale

W

W

W King

W

N

N

M

N

WHERE a man receiveth a feminary priest, knowing him to be such a priest, it is felony.

WHERE a man taketh away a woman against her will, not claiming her as his ward or bondwoman, it is felony.

WHERE a man or woman marrieth again, his or her former husband or wife being alive, it is felony.

WHERE a man committeth buggery with a

man or beast, it is felony.

WHERE any persons, above the number of twelve, shall assemble themselves with intent to put down inclosures, or bring down prices of victuals, &c. and do not depart after proclamation, it is felony.

Where a man shall use any words to encourage or draw any people together, ut supra, and they do assemble accordingly, and do not depart

after proclamation, it is felony.

Where a man being the King's fworn fervant, conspireth to murder any lord of the Realm, or any privy counsellor, it is felony.

WHERE a foldier hath taken any parcel of the King's wages, and departeth without licence, it is

felony.

at

ce

us

ı[-

rt

y.

10fe-

eth

of

eal

eth

re-

the

nts

me,

hil-

er's,

em,

ked

tch-

aft-

, to

ods,

r or

ime,

ence,

lica-

HERE

Where a recufant, which is a feducer, and persuader, and inciter of the King's subjects against the King's authority in ecclesiastical causes, or a persuader of conventicles, or shall resuse to abjure the realm, it is felony.

Where vagabonds be found in the realm, cal-

ling themselves Ægyptians, it is felony.

Where a purveyor doth take without warrant, or otherwise doth offend against certain special

laws, it is felony.

WHERE a man hunts in any forest, park, or warren, by night or by day, with vizard or other disguisements, and is examined thereof and concealeth his fact, it is felony.

WHERE

CASES OF FELONY.

WHERE one stealeth certain kind of hawks, it is felony.

WHERE a man committeth forgery the second time, having been once before convicted, it is felony.

WHERE a man transporteth rams or other sheep out of the King's dominions the second time, it is felony.

WHERE a man being imprisoned for felony

breaks prison, it is felony.

WHERE a man procureth or consenteth to felony to be done, it is felony, as to make him accessary before the fact.

WHERE a man receiveth or relieveth a felon, it is felony, as to make him accessary after the

factors of show you ale find usen a

WHERE a woman, by the constraint of her husband, in his presence, joineth with him in committing of felony, it is not felony in her, neither as principal, nor as accessary.

me der anv lord of the Realmy lor

Homicide, or the killing | Se defendendo. of a man is to be confidered in four kinds, | Manslaughter.

Wilful murder.

nder or convenieles, or fall talufe to

The punishment, trial, and proceedings in cases of felony.

IN felony, the corporal punishment is hanging, and it is doubtful whether the King may turn it into beheading in the case of a peer, or other person of dignity, because in treason the striking off the head is part of the judgment, and so the King pardoneth the rest; but in felony, it is no part

par the bot may I exc tute rup

for taile are

cha

fee, prof ring and ftum.

as i

In acce princhis cover

I

in a

not toril judg prefi part of the judgment, and the King cannot after the execution of law; yet precedents have been both ways; if it be upon indictment the King may, but upon an appeal he cannot.

In felony there followeth corruption of blood, except it be in cases made felony by special statutes, with a proviso that there shall be no cor-

ruption of blood.

ond

it is

eep

it is

ony

fe-

ac-

on,

her

er,

ng,

urn

her

ing

the

no art In felony, lands in fee-simple, and goods and chattels are forfeited, and the profits of estates for life are likewise forfeited, but not lands intailed: and by some customs lands in fee-simple are not so forfeited;

The father to the bough The son to the plough.

as in Gavelkind, in Kent, and other places.

In felony, the escheats go to the lord of the see, and not to the King, except he be lord: but profits for the estates for lives, or in tail during the life of tenant in tail, go to the King; and the King hath likewise annum & diem & vasuum.

In felony, lands are not in the King before office, nor in the lord before entry or recovery in a writ of escheat, or death of the party at-

tainted.

In felony, there can be no proceeding with the accessary, before there be a proceeding with the principal; if he die, or plead his pardon, or have his clergy before attainder, the accessary can never be dealt with.

In felony, if the party stand mute, and will not put himself upon trial, or challenge peremptorily above that the law allows, he shall have judgment, not of hanging, but of penance of pressing to death; but there he saves his lands and forfeits only his goods.

In felony, at the common law, the benefit of clergy or fanctuary was allowed; but now by statute it is taken away in most cases.

In felony, bail may be admitted where the fact is not notorious, and the person not of ill

name.

In felony, no counsel is to be allowed to the

party, no more than in treason.

In felony, if the fact be committed beyond the feas, or upon the feas, fuper altum mare, there is no trial at all in one case, nor by course of jury in the other, but by the jurisdiction of the admiralty.

In felony no witness shall be receiv'd upon oath for the parties justification, no more than

in treason.

In felony, if the party be non fanæ memoriæ, although it be after the fact, he cannot be tried nor adjudged, except it be in course of out-lawry, and that is also erroneous.

In felony the death of the party before conviction dischargeth all proceedings and forfeitures.

In felony, if the party be once acquit, or in peril of judgment of life lawfully, he shall never be brought in question again for the same fact.

In felony, the profecution may be either at the King's suit, or by way of appeal, the defendant shall have his course, and produce witnesses upon oath, as in civil causes.

In felony, the King may grant hault-justice to a subject, with the regality of power to par-

don it.

In felony, the trial of peers is all one as in case of treason.

In felony, the proceedings are in the King's Bench, or before commissioners of oyer and terminer; or of gaol-delivery; and in some cases before justices of the peace.

CHAP.

Cafe

a n

crin

ther

feiti

time

him

they

only

King

liber

tual

præn

draw

the :

tains

fon t

the]

is pr

is no

Judg appe

W

N

CHAP. IX.

fit

by

he

ill

he

ond

ere

of

the

on

nan

it.

ried

rry,

on-

res. r in ever

r at

dewit-

stice par-

s in

ing's

ter-

s be-

A P.

Cases of felony de se, with the punishment, trial, and proceeding.

In the civil law, and other laws, they make a difference of cases of selony de se; for where a man is called in question upon any capital crime, and killeth himself to prevent the law, there they give the judgment in all points of forseiture, as if they had been attainted in their lifetime: and on the other side, where a man killeth himself upon impatience of sickness, or the like, they do not punish it at all: but the law of England taketh it all in one degree, and punisheth only with loss of goods to be forseited to the King, who generally grants them to his almoner, where they be not formerly granted unto special liberties.

CHAP. X.

Cases of Præmunire.

WHERE a man purchaseth or accepteth any provision, that is, collation, of any spiritual benefice or living from the see of Rome, it is pramunire.

WHERE a man shall purchase any process to draw any people off the King's allegiance out of the realm, in plea whereof the cognizance pertains to the King's court, and cometh not in person to answer his contempt in that behalf before the King and his council, or in his chancery, it is pramunire.

Where a man doth fue in any court which is not the King's court, to defeat or impeach any judgment given in the King's court, and doth not appear to answer his contempt, it is pramunire.

WHERE

CASES OF PRAMUNIRE, &c.

Where a man doth purchase or pursue in the court of Rome, or elsewhere, any process, sentence of excommunication, bull, or instrument, or other thing which toucheth the King in his regality, or his realm in prejudice, it is pramunire.

WHERE a man doth affirm or maintain any foreign kind of jurisdiction spiritual, or doth put in ure or execution any thing for the advancement or setting forth thereof; such offence the second time committed is pramunire.

Where a man refuseth to take the oath of supremacy being tendered by the Bishop of the diocese, if it be an ecclesiastical person; or by a commission out of the chancery, if it be a temporal person, it is præmunire.

WHERE a dean and chapter of any church upon the conge de Eslire of an Archbishop or Bishop doth refuse to elect any such Archbishop or Bishop as nominated unto them in the King's letters missive, it is præmunire.

WHERE a man doth contribute or give relief to any jefuit or feminary priests, or to any person brought up therein, and called home, and not returning, it is case of præmunire.

WHERE a man is a broker of an usurious contract above ten in the hundred, it is præmunire.

CHAP. XI.

The punishment, trial, and proceedings in cases of præmunire.

THE punishment is by imprisonment during life, forfeiture of goods, forfeiture of lands in fee-simple, and forfeiture of the profits of lands intailed, or for life.

THE trial and proceeding is as in cases of misprision of treason, and the trial is by peers, where a peer of the realm is the offender.

STRIKING

CC

for

the

ary

bei

Kir

in d

shall

mal

and

if t

turr

havi

anni to h

ther

mile

W

foref

prifo

Pond

W

STRIKING any man in the face of the King's courts, is forfeiture of lands, perpetual imprisonment, and loss of that hand.

CHAP.

Cases of abjuration and exile, and the proceedings therein.

WHERE a man committeth any felony, for the which at this day he may have privilege of fanctuary, and confesseth the felony before the coroner, he shall abjure the liberty of the realm, and choose his fanctuary; and if he commit any new offence, or leave his fanctuary, he shall lose the privilege thereof, and suf-

fer as if he had not taken fanctuary.

Where a man not coming to the church, and being a popish reculant doth persuade any the King's subjects to impugn his Majesty's Authority in causes ecclesiastical, or shall persuade any subject to come to any unlawful conventicles, and shall not after conform himself within a time, and make his submission, he shall abjure the realm. and forfeit his goods and lands during life; and if he depart not within the time prefixed, or return, he shall be in the degree of a felon.

WHERE a man being a popish reculant, and not having lands to the value of twenty marks per annum, nor goods to the value of 40 l. shall not repair to his dwelling, or place where he was born, and there confine himself within the compass of five miles, he shall abjure the realm; and if he re-

turn, he shall be in case of a felon.

WHERE a man kills the King's deer in chases or forests, and can find no sureties after a year's imprisonment, he shall abjure the realm.

WHERE a man is a trespasser in parks, or in ponds of fish, and after three years imprison-

ment.

where

he

n-

nt, re-

nu-

ny

in ent

ond

fu-

the

y a

po-

rch

hop

ng's

elief

rson

not

con-

es of

uring

lands

lands

mil-

e.

KING

Of THE KING'S PREROGATIVE:

ment cannot find furcties, he shall abjure the realm.

Where a man is a ravisher of any child, whose marriage belongs to any person, and marrieth the said child after years of consent, and is not able to satisfy for the marriage, he shall abjure the realm.

CHAP. XIII.

Cases of heresy, and the trial and proceeding therein.

THE declaration of herefy, and likewise the proceedings and judgment upon hereticks, is by the common laws of this realm referred to the jurisdiction ecclesiastical; and the secular arm is reached to them by the common laws, and not by any statute for the execution of them by the King's writ de bæretico comburendo.

CHAP. XIV.

The King's prerogative in parliament.

THE King hath an absolute negative voice to all bills that pass the parliament, so as without his royal assent they have a mere nullity, and not so much as authoritas prescripta or fenatus consulta had, notwithstanding the intercession of tribunes.

THE King may fummon parliaments, dissolve them, prorogue them, and adjourn them at his pleasure.

THE King may add voices in the parliament at his pleasure, for he may give privilege to borough towns as many as he will, and may likewise call and create barons at his pleasure.

No man can sit in parliament except he take

the oath of allegiance.

CHAP.

CO

pl

of

m

the

01

Ota

ina for

len

con

ena

his

alc.

plea

I

and

au l

Tes King by his predamation may make mo-

-The King's prenogative in matters of war or peace.

THE King bath power to declare and pro-

and truce at his pleasure.

THE King harh power to make leagues and tonfederacies with foreign states, more strait and less strait, and to revoke and disanual them at his pleasure.

THE King hath power to command the bodies of his subjects for the service of his wars, and to muster, train and levy men, and to transport them by sea or land at his pleasure.

or The King hath power in time of war to exe-

an bispleafure. ges and bidged vom se

THE King hath power to grant his letter of mart and reprifal for remedy to his subjects upon foreign wrongs at his pleasure.

letters patents for the government of any place

conquered by his arms at his pleasure.

THE King may give knighthood, and thereby enable any subject to perform knight-service at his pleasure.

CHAP. XVI.

The King's prerogative in masters of monies.

THE King may alter his standard in baseness

THE King may alter his stamp in form at his pleasure.

THE King may after the valuations of his coin, and raise and fall monies at his pleasure.

inuumateq etoffeena m

THE

A P.

an T

take

10

fe.

he ole he

in.

the, is

the

is

not

the

e to

and

atus

1 of

olve his

nt at

ough

call

OF THE KING'S PREROGATIVE

THE King by his proclamation may make monies of his own current, or not current, at his pleafure.

THE King may take or refuse the subjects bul-

lion, and coin more or less money.

THE King by his proclamation may make foreign money current or not current.

bas sous lo Cah A P. XVII. gall sofederacies with Joreign flates, more strain and

The King's prerogative in matters of trade and traffick. settind ada Lasminos o

less to be the sower

27

te

th

in

gi

ple

th

hig

by

sta

fin

the

tut

hig

the

THE King may constrain the person of any of his subjects not to go out of the realm at all.

- THE King may restrain any of his subjects to go out of the realm into any special part foreign.

THE King may forbid the exportation of any

commodities out of the realm.

THE King may forbid the importation of any

commodities into the realm. In the realm.

72

THE King may fet a reasonable impost upon any foreign wares that come into the realm, and fo of native wares that go out of the realm.

The Line may give bais school, and thereby LE DIVERTE CHAP: XVIII.

The King's prerogative in the Persons of his subjetts.

THE King may create any corporation of body politick, and enable them to purchase, and grant, and to fue, and be fued; and that with fuch restrictions and modifications as he pleases, and in omali an toda yam

THE King may denizen and enable any foreigner for him and his descendants after the charter, though he cannot naturalize nor enable him to make pedigree from ancestors paramount.

THE

THE King may enable any attainted person (by his charter of pardon) to purchase, and to purge his blood for the time to come, though he cannot restore his blood for the time past.

THE King may enable any dead person in law, as men professed, to take and purchase to the

King's benefit.

is

4

ce

nd

19

at

to

n.

ny

ny

on

nd

ub-

or

ife,

nat

he

fo-

ar-

im

HE

CHAP. XIX.

An answer to the questions proposed by Sir Alexander Hay, Knight, touching the office of constables.

rity of constables, it may be said, caput inter nubila condit; for the authority was granted upon the ancient laws and customs of this kingdom practised long before the conquest, and intended and instituted for the conservation of the peace, and repressing of all manner of disturbance and hurt of the people, and that as well by way of prevention as punishment; but yet so, as they have no judicial power, to hear and determine any cause, but only a ministerial power, as in the answer of the seventh article more at large is set down.

As for the office of the high constable, the original of that is yet more obscure; for though the high constable's authority hath the more ample circuit, he being over the hundred, and the petty constable over the village; yet I do not find that the petty constable is subordinate to the high constable, or to be ordered or commanded by him; and therefore, I doubt, the high constable was not ab origine; but that when the buliness of the country encreased, the authority of the justices of peace was enlarged by divers statutes, then, for conveniency fake, the office of high constables grew in use for the receiving of the commands and precepts from the justices of M 3 peace,

peace, and distributing them to the percy constables; and in token of this, the election of high constables in most parts of the kingdom is by the appointment of the justices of peace; whereas the election of the petry constable is by the people.

re

CE

th

ſŧ

n

W

n

b

le

th

0

tl

u

ir

o fa

0

tl

0

h

Bur there be two things unto which the office of constable hath special reference and relation, and which of necessity, or at least a kind of congruity, must precede the jurisdiction of that office; I mean, either the things themselves, or somewhat that hath a similitude or analogy towards them.

I. THE one is the division of the territory, or gross of the shires into hundreds, villages, and towns; for he high constable is officer over the hundred, and the petty constable is over the

town or village.

2. The other is the court-leet, unto which the constable is a proper attendant and minister; for there the constables are chosen by the jury, there they are sworn, and there that part of their office which concerneth information is principally to be performed; for the jury is to present offences, and offenders are chiefly to take light from the constables of all matters of disturbance and nusance of the people, which they (in respect of their office) are presumed to have best and most particular knowledge of.

CHAP. XX.

Three ends of the institution of the court-ket.

leet is, to take the ancient oath of allegiance of all males above the age of twelve years.

2. The second, to enquire of all offences against the peace; and for those that are against the crown and peace both, to enquire of only, and certify to the justices of gaol-delivery; but those that that are against the peace simply, they are to enquire and punish.

a-

di.

16

10

CE:

n.

n-

at

or

0-

or

nd

he he

he

for

re

ice

be

es,

he

ıu-

of

oft

rtgi-

s.

nft

ind

ofe

hat

3. The third is, to enquire of, punish, and remove all publick nusances and grievances concerning infection of air, corruption of victuals, ease of chaffer, and contract of all other things that may hurt or grieve the people in general, in their health, quiet and welfare.

AND to these three ends, as matters of policy subordinate, the court-leet hath power to call upon the pledges that are to be taken for the good behaviour of the resiants that are not tenants, and to enquire of all defaults of officers, as constables, ale-tasters, and the like: and likewise for the choice of constables, as aforesaid.

r. The jurisdiction of these leets is ever remaining in the King, and in that case exercised by the sheriff in his turn, which is the grand leet, granted over to subjects; but yet it is still the King's court.

2. To the fecond, as was faid, the election of the petty constable is at the court-leet by the inquest that makes the presentments; the election of the head constables is by the justices of the peace at their quarter-sessions.

3. To the third, the office is annual, except they be removed.

4. To the fourth, they be men (as it is now used) of inferior, yea, of base condition, which is a mere abuse or degenerating from the first institution; for the petty constables in towns ought to be of the better fort of resiants in the said town; save that they ought not to be aged or sickly, but men of able bodies in respect of the keeping watch and toil of their place; neither ought they to be in any man's livery: and the high constables ought to be of the ablest fort of free-holders, and of the substantiallest sort of yeomen, next to the degree of gentlemen; but they ought to be such as are not incumbred with any other M 4

OFFICE OF CONSTABLES.

office, as mayor of a town, under-sheriff, bailiff, &c.

Ki

for

pa

arı

the

for

lav

the

ju

pr

hif

an

to

car

ne

th

the

the

CO

OW

ces

mi

fta

rat

fti

be

ref

the

3. To the fifth, they have no allowance, but are bound by duty to perform their offices gratis, which may the rather be endured, because it is but annual; and they are not tyed to keep or maintain any servants or under-ministers, for that every one of the King's people are bound to affift them.

6. To the fixth, upon complaint made (of his refusal) to any one justice of peace, the said justice may bind him over to the sessions, where (if he cannot excuse himself by some just allegation) he may be fined and imprisoned for his con-

tempt.

7. To the seventh, the authority of constables, as it is substantive, and of itself, or substituted, and aftricted to the warrants and commands of the justices of peace; so again it is original, or additional; for either it was given them by the common law, or elfe annexed by divers statutes. And as for subordinate power, wherein the constable is only to execute the commandments of the justices of peace, and likewise the additional power which is given by divers statutes, it is hard to comprehend them in any brevity; for that they do correspond to the office and authority of the justices of peace, which is very large, and are created by the branches of feveral statutes, which are things of divers and dispersed natures: but for the original and fubstantive power of a constable, it may be reduced to three heads:

1. For matter of peace only.

2. For matter of peace and the crown.

3. For matter of nusance, disturbance and disorder, although they be not accompanied with violence and breach of peace.

For pacifying of quarrels begun, the constables may, upon hot words given, or likelihood of breach of peace to ensue, command them in the King's King's name to keep the peace, and depart, and forbear, and so he may, where an affray is made, part the same, and keep the parties as under, and arrest and commit the breakers of the peace, if they will not obey, and call power to affist him for the same purpose.

For punishment of breach of peace past, the law is very tender and sparing in giving any authority to constables, because he hath no power judicial, and the use of his office is rather for preventing or staying of mischief, than for punishing of offences; for in that part he is rather to execute the warrants of the justices; or when any sudden matter ariseth upon his view, or notorious circumstances, to apprehend offenders, and carry them before the justice of peace, and generally to imprison in like cases of necessity, where the case will not endure the present carrying of the party before the justices. And thus much for the matters of peace.

For matters of the crown, the office of the constable consisteth chiefly in these four parts:

1. THE first is arrest.
2. The second is search.

iff,

out

tis,

t is

or

hat

Mist

his

aid

ere

ga-

on-

les,

ted.

s of

the

tes.

on-

of

onal

that y of

are

for

ble,

dif-

with

of of the

ing's

3. The third is hue and cry.

4. And the fourth is seizure of goods.

ALL which the constable may perform of his own authority, without any warrant of the justices of the peace.

1. For first, if any man will lay murder or selony to another's charge, or do suspect him of murder or selony, he may declare it to the constable, and the constable ought upon such declaration or complaint, to carry him before a justice; and if by common voice or same any man be suspected, the constable of duty ought to arrest him, and bring him before a justice, though there be no other accusation or declaration.

OFFICE OF CONSTABLES:

2. If any house be suspected for the receiving or harbouring of any felon, the constable, upon complaint or common same may search

22

66

"

66

66

"

66

66

"

33

66

66

66

66 .

lub

COL

bot

hu

nat

tha

use

ed

nur

the

the

ma

fter

Oug

fifts

1

complaint or common fame, may fearch.

3. It any fly upon the felony, the constable ought to raise hue and cry, and search his goods, and keep them safe without impairing, and to inventory them in the presence of honest neighbours.

4. For matters of common nusance and grievance, they are of a very variable nature, according to the several comforts which man's life and society requireth, and the contraries which

infest the same.

In all which, be it matter of corrupting air, water, or victuals, or stopping, straitening, or indangering passage, or general deceits in weights, measures, or sizes, or counterfeiting wares, and things vendible; the office of the constable is to give (as much as in him lies) information of them, and of the offenders in leets, that they may be presented; but because leets are kept but twice in the year, and many of these things require present or speedy remedy, the constable, in things of notorious and vulgar nature, ought to forbid and repress them in the mean time.

8. To the eighth, they are for their contempt to be fined and imprisoned by the justices in their

fessions.

9. To the ninth, the oath they take is in this manner.

"You shall swear that you shall well and truly ferve the King, and the lord of this law-day;

" and you shall cause that the peace of our sover reign lord the King shall be well and duly kept

" to your power: and you shall arrest all those

" that you fee committing riots, debates, and affrays in breach of peace: and you shall well

" and duly endeavour yourfelf to your best know-

ledge, that the statutes of Winchester for watch,

hue and cry, and the statutes made for the punish-

ring

pon

able

ods.

l to

rie-

ac-

life

hich

air,

r inghts,

and

s to

hem,

wice

prehings

orbid

empt

their

n this

truly

day;

fove-

kept

thole

and

well

mow.

vatch,

or the

unish-

" punishment of sturdy beggars, vagabonds, " rogues, and other idle persons coming within " your office be truly executed, and the offenders " punished: and you shall endeavour, upon com-" plaint made, to apprehend barretors and rio-" tous persons making affrays; and likewise to "apprehend felons; and if any of them make " refistance with force, and multitude of mis-" doers, you shall make out-cry, and pursue them " till they be taken; and shall look unto such " persons as use unlawful games; and you shall " have regard unto the maintenance of artillery; " and you shall well and duly execute all process " and precepts fent unto you from the justices " of peace of the county; and you shall make " good and faithful presentments of all blood-" sheds, out-cries, affrays, and rescues made " within your office; and you shall well and du-" ly, according to your power and knowledge, " do that which belongeth to your office of con-" stable to do, for this year to come. So help, ₩ £3c.

to. To the tenth, the authority is the same in substance, differing only in extent; the petty-constable serving only for one town, parish, or borough; the head-constable serving for the whole hundred: neither is the petty-constable subordinate to the head-constable for any commandment that proceeds from his own authority; but it is used, that the precepts of the justices be delivered unto the high-constables, who being sew in number, may better attend the justices, and then the head-constables, by virtue thereof, make their precepts over to the petty-constables.

may appoint a deputy, or in default thereof, the fleward of the court-leet may; which deputy ought to be sworn before the said steward.

Now to conclude; the office of constables confists wholly in these three things, viz.

THEIR

OFFICE OF CONSTABLES.

THEIR office concerning, I. The conservation of the peace.

2. THE ferving the precepts and warrants of

the justices.

3. THEIR attendance for the execution of statutes.

CHAP. XXI.

Of the jurisdiction of justices itinerantes in the principality of Wales.

HESE justices have power to hear and determine all criminal causes, which are called in the laws of England, the pleas of the crown; and herein they have the same jurisdiction that the justices have in his Majesty's Bench, commonly called the King's Bench at Westminster.

THEY have jurisdiction, to hear and determine all civil causes, which are called in the laws of England, common pleas, and to take knowledgment of all fines levied of lands or hereditaments, without fuing out any dedimus potestatem; and herein they have the same jurisdiction that the justices of the common pleas do execute at Westminster.

Also they may hear and determine all affizes upon disseisines of lands or hereditaments, wherein they equal the jurisdiction of the justices of affize.

THEY may hear and determine all notable violences and outrages perpetrated or done within their several precincts of the principality of Wales. And therein they have the fame jurisdiction of the justices of over & terminer.

In the King's THE prothonotary his office is to draw all pleadings, and to enter and engross all records and judgments in civil causes.

King's Bench.

Common pleas.

Justices of affize.

gift.

THE

and

jud

the

froi

fort fary

Eng to

all

tend

call

may

naro

who

ings

ces

miff

cau

havi

ceiv

Bc.

of t

den

ber

man

With

hath

eigh

justi

peac

peac cced

is ap

IN

1

THE clerk of the crown his office is to draw and engross all proceedings, arraignments, and judgments in criminal causes.

THE marshal's office is to attend the persons of These two the judges at their coming, fitting, and going offices are in of the judges.

from the fessions or court.

THE crier is tanguam publicus præco, to call forth fuch persons whose appearances are neces-

fary, and to impose filence to the people.

THERE is a commission under the great seal of England to certain gentlemen, giving them power to preferve the peace, and to refift and punish all turbulent persons, whose misdemeanors may tend to the disquiet of the people; and these be called the justices of peace, and every of them may well and truly be called and termed Eirenarcha.

THE chief of them is called cuftos rotulorum, in whose custody all the records of their proceed-

ings are reliding.

OTHERS there are of that number called justices of peace, and quorum, because in their commission they have power to sit and determine causes concerning breach of peace, and misbehaviour; the words of their commission are conceived thus, quorum such and such, unum vel duos Ec. effe volumus; and without some one or more of them of the quorum, no fessions can be holden : and for the avoiding of a superfluous number of fuch justices (for through the ambition of These justices many, it is counted a credit to be burthened appointed by with that authority) the statute of 38 H. VIII. keeper. hath expresly prohibited that there shall be but eight justices of peace in every county. These Justices do hold their sessions quarterly.

In every shire where the commission of the peace is established, there is also a clerk of the peace for the entering and engrossing of all proceedings before the faid justices. And this officer

is appointed by the custos rotulorum.

EVERY

dealled

prin-

rva-

s of

fta-

wn; that com-.

mine s of edgents,

and the West-

ffizes nerees of

vioithin Tales. on of

v all cords

THE

OFFICE OF CONSTABLES.

EVERY shire hath its sheriss, which word being of the Saxon English, is as much to say as shire reeve, or minister or bailiss of the county: his function or office is two-fold:

fu

Ca

to

W

ar

ne

OL

de

to

car

for

tec

of

the

liff

she

in (

char

7186

1. Ministerial.

2. Judicial.

As touching his ministerial office, he is the mi-34 H. 8. cap. 16. nister and executioner of all the process and precepts of the courts of law, and thereof ought to make return and certificate.

As touching his judicial office, he hath authority to hold two feveral courts of distinct natures: the one called the tourne, because he keepeth his turn and circuit about the shire, and holdeth the same court in several places, wherein he doth enquire of all offences perpetrated against the common law, and not forbidden by any statute or act of parliament; and the jurisdiction of this court is derived from justice distributive, and is for criminal offences, and is held twice every year.

The other is called the county court, wherein he doth determine all petry and fmall causes civil under the value of forty shillings, arising within the said county, and thereof it is called the county court.

The jurisdiction of this court is derived from justice commutative, and is held every month; the office of the sheriff is annual, and in the King's gift, whereof he is to have a patent.

Every shire bath an officer called an escheator, which is an office to attend the King's revenue, and to seize into his Majesty's hands all lands, either escheated goods, or lands forfeited, and therefore is called escheator; and he is to enquire by good inquest of the death of the King's tenants, and to whom their lands are descended, and to seize their bodies and lands for ward, if they be within age, and is accountable for the same;

34 H. 8. 20.

same; and this officer is named by the lord treafurer of England.

THERE are in every shire two other officers called crowners or coroners: they are to enquire by good inquest in what manner, and by whom every person dying of a violent death, came fo to his Death; and to enter the same of record; which is matter criminal, and a plea of the crown; and therefore they are called coroners, or crowners, as one hath written, because their enquiry ought to be publick in corona populi.

THESE officers are chosen by the freeholders of the shire, by virtue of a writ out of the chancery, de coronatore eligendo: and of them I need not to speak more, because these officers are in use In Scotland elfewhere.

For Asmuch as every thire is divided into hundreds, it is also by the said statute of 34 H. VIII. cap. 26. ordered that two fufficient gentlemen or Confiables of yeomen shall be appointed constables of every the hundred. hundred.

Also there is in every thire one gaol or prison Gaolers office. appointed for the restraint of liberty of such perfons as for their offences are thereunto committed, until they shall be delivered thence by course

of law.

in awai Tango

due likewile

ir frate. | Po.

y in the ancies

In every hundred of every shire the sheriff thereof shall nominate fufficient persons to be bailiffs of that hundred, and underministers of the theriff; and they are to attend upon the justices in every of their courts and fessions.

N. B. Archbishop Sancrost notes on this last chapter: written (say some) by Sir John Dodderige one of the justices of the King's Bench, 1608. 10 FH/

> MVSEVM ortiny of a BRITANNICVM

n the eator; renue, lands, and nquire 's teended, ard, if or the

fame;

eing

hire

his

mi-

preught

tho-

ares:

h his

deth

doth the

te or

this

ind is

every

erein

civil

vithin

ounty

from onth:

THE

tin

ple (w

nes as rian ple not law this

fub

dot

for ed of

Ne tha

of

wit cou stud per

fon

ers,

of in a

mon cau:

of 1

kñe

the

fath

ARGUMENTS

IN

LAW

OF

Sir FRANCIS BACON, Knight,

The King's Solicitor-General,

In certain great and difficult CASES:

Now first printed from the author's original and undoubted copy, corrected by his own hand:

To my loving friends and fellows,

The READERS, ANCIENTS, UTTER BARRISTERS and STUDENTS of Grays-Inn.

Do not hold the law of England in fo mean an account, but that which other laws are held worthy of, should be due likewise to our laws, as no less worthy of our state. Therefore when I found that not only in the ancient times,

times, but now at this Day in France, Italy, and other nations, the speeches, and as they term them pleadings, which have been made in judicial cases (where the cases were mighty and famous) have been fet down by those that made them, and published; fo that not only a Cicero, a Demosthenes or an Æschines hath set forth his Orations, as well in the judicial as deliberative, but a Marrian and a Pavier have done the like by their pleadings; I know no reafon why the same should not be brought in use by the professors of our law for their arguments in principal cases. this I think the more necessary, because the compendious form of reporting refolutions with the substance of the reasons, lately used by Sir Edward Cooke, lord chief justice of the Kings Bench, doth not delineate or trace out to the young practifers of law, a method and form of argument for them to imitate. It is true I could have wished some abler person had begun; but it is a kind of order fometimes to begin with the meanest. Nevertheless thus much I may say with modesty, that these arguments which I have set forth (most of them) are upon subjects not vulgar; and therewithal, in regard of the commixture, which the course of my life hath made of law with other studies, they may have the more variety, and perhaps the more depth of reason: for the reafons of municipal laws, fevered from the grounds of nature, manners and policy, are like wall flowers, which though they grow high upon the crefts of states, yet they have no deep root: Besides in all publick fervices I ever valued my reputation more than my pains; and therefore in weighty causes I always used extraordinary diligence; in all which respects I persuade myself the reading of them will be not unprofitable. This work I knew not to whom to dedicate, father than to the Society of GRAYS-INN, the place whence my tather was called to the highest place of justice,

ht,

copy,

ER

mean is are ife to therencient

times,

DEDICATION.

and where myself have lived and had my procedure, so far, as by his Majesty's rare, if not singular grace, to be of both his counsels: and therefore few men so bound to their societies by obligation, both ancestral and personal, as I am to yours: which I would gladly acknowledge not only in having your name joined with mine own in a book, but in any other good office and effect which the active part of my life and place may enable me unto toward the society, or any of you in particular. And so I bid you right heartily farewel.

Your affured loving friend and fellow

FRANCIS BACON

Aniped sea or br

THE

I

ir b

0

fola

is

re

THE

finere-

to not own feet may of ear-

ON.

HE

CASE

OF name parm of

IMPEACHMENT of WASTE, was the

Argued before all the JUDGES in the

EXCHEQUER-CHAMBER 11.60.79.6

HE case needs neither repeating nor opening. The point is in substance but one, familiar to be put, but difficult to be resolved; that is, whether upon a lease without impeachment of waste, the property of the timber-trees after severance, be not in him that is owner of the inheritance.

The case is of great weight, and the question of great difficulty: weighty it must needs be, for that it doth concern or may concern all the lands in England; and difficult it must be, because this question sails in confluentis aquarum, in the meeting or strife of two great tides. For there is a strong current of practice and opinion on the one side, and there is a more strong current (as I conceive) of authorities, both ancient and late on the other side. And therefore according to the reverend custom of the realm, it is brought now to this assembly; and it is high time the question receive

CASE OF IMPEACHMENT OF WASTE.

receive an end, the law a rule, and mens conveyances a direction.

Thes doubt ariseth and resteth upon two things to be considered; first, to consider of the interest and property of a timber-tree, to whom it belongeth: and secondly, to consider of the construction and operation of these words or clause, absque impetitione vasti: for within these two branches will aptly fall whatsoever can be pertinently spoken in this question, without obscuring the question by any other curious division.

For the first of these considerations, which is the interest or property of a timber-tree, I will maintain and prove to your lordships three things.

FIRST, that a timber-tree while it groweth, is merely parcel of the inheritance, as well as the foil itself. And secondly, I will prove, that when either nature, or accident, or the hand of man hath made it transitory, and cut it off from the earth, it can't change the owner, but the property of it goes where the inheritance was before. And thus much by the rules of the common law.

AND thirdly, I will shew that the statute of Gloucester doth rather corroborate and confirm the property in the lessor, than alter it, or transfer it to the lessee.

And for the fecond confideration, which is the force of that clause, absque impetitione vasti, I will also uphold and make good three other affertions.

FIRST, that if that clause should be taken in the sense which the other side would force upon it, that it were a clause repugnant to the state and void.

SECONDLY, that the fense we conceive and give is natural in respect of the words, and for the matter agreeable to reason and the rules of law.

And lastly, that if the interpretation seem ambiguous and doubtful, yet the very mischief itself,

tree ma lab as loci is i inh fev

des

tan

ſe

OU

to

berare
by fo h
vein
fuch
kind
lengifine

fo the quarties of the property of the propert

the o

earth

matte this felf, and consideration of the common-wealth, ought rather to incline your lordships judgment to our construction.

My first affertion therefore is, that a timbertree is a solid parcel of the inheritance, which may seem a point admitted, and not worth the labouring. But there is such a chain in this case, as that which seemeth most plain, if it's sharply looked into, doth invincibly draw on that which is most doubtful. For if the tree be parcel of the inheritance unsevered, inherent in the reversion, severance will not alien it, nor the clause will not devest it.

11

S.

e

n

le

)-

e.

n

of

ne

it

he

I

af-

in

on

ate

ive

he

N.

m-

it-

elf,

To open therefore the nature of an inheritance: Sense teacheth there be of the soil and earth, parts that are raised and eminent, as timber-trees, rocks, houses. There be parts that are funk and depressed, as mines which are called by some arbores subterranea, because that as trees have great branches and fmaller boughs and twigs; so have they in their region greater and smaller veins: so if we had in England beds of porcelane, such as they have in China, which porcelane is a kind of a plaster buried in the earth, and by length of time congealed and glazed into that fine fubstance; this were as an artificial mine, and no doubt part of the inheritance. Then are there the ordinary parts, which make the mass of the earth as stone, gravel, loam, clay and the like.

Now as I make all these much in one degree, so there is none of them, not timber-trees, not quarries, not minerals or fossils, but hath a double nature; inheritable and real, while it is contained with the mass of the earth, and transitory and personal, when it is once severed. For even gold and precious stone, which is more durable out of earth than any tree is upon the earth; yet the law doth not hold of that dignity as to be matter of inheritance if it be once severed. And this is not because it becometh moveable, for

N 3

there

Nevel's case proving there not local.

The consent of philosophy in distinguishing between perperual and transitory.

there be moveable inheritances, as villains in groß. are inheritan and dignities which are judged hereditaments; but ces which are because by their severance they lose their nature of perpetuity, which is of the effence of an inheritance.

AND herein I do not a little admire the wifthe law with dom of the laws of England, and the consent which they have with the wifdom of philosophy and nature itself: for it is a maxim in philosophy, that in regione elementari nibil est æternum, nist per propagationem speciei, aut per successionem partium.

AND it is most evident, that the elements themfelves, and their products have a perpetuity not in individuo, but by fupply and fuccession of parts; for example, the veftal fire, that was nourished by the virgins at Rome, was not the same fire still, but was in perpetual waste, and in perpetual renovation. So it is of the sea and waters, it is not the same water individually, for that exhales by the fun, and is fed again by showers. And so of the earth itself, and mines, quarries, and whatfoever it containeth, they are corruptible individually, and maintained only by fuccession of parts, and that lasteth no longer than they continue fixed to the main and mother-globe of the earth, and is destroyed by their separation.

ACCORDING to this I find the wisdom of the law by imitation of the course of nature to judge of inheritances, and things transitory; for it alloweth no portions of the earth, no stone, no gold, no mineral, no tree, no mold to be longer inheritance than they adhere to the mass, and so are capable of supply in their parts: for by their continuance of body stands their continuance of time.

NEITHER is this matter of discourse, except the deep and profound reasons of law, which ought chiefly to be fearched, shall be accounted dicourse, as the flighter fort of wits (scioli) may efteem them.

AND therefore now that we have opened the nature of inheritable and transitory, let us fee upon

ten leff hav of not nor. feel nua in i

UP

wh

OW

own hus lwer ate i us fe of a

place

law effe

con latio

heri F word to be ditat herita

actum AG ftatu! and 1 are, q ipeak recupe locus :

tor th

upon a division of estates, and before severance, what kind of interests the law allotteth to the owner of inheritance, and what to the particular tenant; for they be competitors in this case.

FIRST, in general the law doth affign to the The confent of leffor those parts of the foil conjoined, which the law with the civil law. have abtained the reputation to be durable, and in the diffinof continuance, and fuch as being destroyed, are guishing between inherinot but by long time renewed; and to the Termi- tance and parnors it affigneth such interests as are tender and ticular estates, which hath refeeble against the force of time, but have an an- lation to their nual or seasonable return or revenue. And here-division of doin it confents again with the wisdom of the civil sus fructus. law; for, our inheritance and particular estate is in effect there dominium and usus-fructus; for so it was conceived upon the ancient statute of depopulations 4 H. VII. which was penned, that the Owner in the owner of the land should re-edify the houses of that of 4 hughander; that the word Owner (which anfwereth to dominus) was he that had the immediate inheritance, and fo ran the later statutes. Let us see therefore what judgment the law maketh of a timber-tree; and whether the law doth not place it within the lot of him that hath the inheritance as parcel thereof.

1.

-

t

of

1-

ne

e-

is

es

of

0-

al-

ts,

ue

th,

the

lge

al-

no

in-

are

on-

e.

cept

nich

rted

may

the

fee

pon

FIRST it appeareth by the register out of the The writ of words of the writ of waste, that the waste is laid waste suppoto be ad exharedationem, which presupposeth hare- timber to be ditatem: for there can't be a difinherison by the ad exharedacutting down of the tree, except there was an inheritance in the tree, quia privatio præsupponit actum.

Again it appeareth out of the words of the The Statute of statute of Gloucester well observed, that the tree Gloucester, and the foil are one entire thing, for the words quod recuper t are, quod recuperet rem vastatam; and yet the books not locum vaspeak, and the very judgment in waste is, quod statum. recuperet locum vastatum, which shews, that res and locus are in exposition of law taken indifferently: for the lessor shall not recover only the stem of

the tree, but he shall recover the very soil, whereunto the stem continues. And therefore it is no22 H. 6. f. 13. tably ruled in 22 H. VI. f. 13. that if the Terminor do first cut down the tree, and then destroy
the stem, the lessor shall declare upon two several
wastes, and recover treble damages for them severally. But says the book he must bring but one
writ, for he can recover the place wasted but
once.

Mullin's case.

And farther proof may be fitly alledged out of Mullin's case in the commentaries, where it is said, that for timber-trees tithes shall not be paid. And the reason of the book is well to be observed; for that tithes are to be paid for the revenue of the inheritance, and not for the inheritance itself.

NAY, my lords, it is notable to confider what a reputation the law gives to the trees, even after they are fevered by grant, as may be plainly inferred out of Herlackenden's case, L. Coke p. 4. f. 62. I mean the principal case; where it is resolved; that if the trees being excepted out of a leafe be granted to the lessee, or if the grantee of trees accept a lease of the land, the property of the trees drown not, as a term should drown in a freehold, but subsist as a chattel divided; which shews plainly, though they be made transitory; vet they still to some purposes savour of the inheritance: for if you go a little farther, and put the case of a flate tail, which is a state of inheritance, then I think clearly they are reannexed, But on the other fide, if a man buy corn standing upon the ground, and take a lease of the same ground, where the corn stands, I say plainly it is reaffixed, for paria copulantur cum paribus.

And it is no less worthy the note what an operation the inheritance leaveth behind it in matter of waste, even when it is gone, as appeared in the case of tenant after possibility, who shall not be punished; for though the new reason because

Litt dep nish bim Etion the

bec

Gla

that tand ther of t ceive the acco

and
I.
wife
haps
fuper
ræ li
IF

ticul

pitch carth So bered belor

Mufo

So dignit badge tenan partic

the in

marie

because his estate was not within the statute of Gloucester; yet I will not go from my old Mr. Littleton's reason, which speaketh out of the depth of the common law, he shall not be punished for the inheritance sake which was once in bim.

e

t

f

d

at

er

n-

2.

1; be

es he

a

ch

y ;

in-

out

eried.

nd-

me t is

0-

at-

eth hill

te, ufe

Bur this will receive a great deal of illustration, by confidering the Terminor's estate, and the nature thereof, which was well defined by Mr. Heath (who spake excellent well to the case) that it is fuch as he ought to yield up the inheritance in as good plight, as he received it; and therefore the word firmarius (which is the word The derivation of the statute of Marlbridge) cometh, as I con- and force of the word firceive, a firmando; because he makes the profit of marius. the inheritance, which otherwise should be upon account, and uncertain, firm and certain; and accordingly feodi firma fee-farm is a perpetuity certain: Therefore the nature and limit of a particular tenant is to make the Inheritance certain. and not to make it worse.

I. THEREFORE he cannot break the foil otherwife than with his plough-share to turn up perhaps a stone, that lieth alost; his interest is in superficie not in profundo, he hath but tunicam terræ little more than the vesture.

If we had firr-timber here, as they have in Muscovy, he could not pierce the tree to make the pitch come forth, no more than he may break the earth.

So we see the evidence, which is propugnaculum The evidence hereditatis, the fortress and defence of the land propugnacubelongeth not to the lessee, but to the owner of tis. the inheritance.

So the leffee's estate is not accounted of that Homage imdignity, that it can do homage, because it is a porteth continuance in the badge of continuance in the blood of lord and blood. tenant. Neither for my own opinion can a nants of seigniparticular tenant of a manor have aid pur file ories shall not marier, ou pur fere fits chevalier; because it is gi- have aid.

yen

intervment ven by law upon an indictment of continuance of blood and privity between lord and tenant.

> And for the tree which is now in question. do but consider in what a revolution the law moves, and as it were in an orb: for when the tree is young and tender germen terræ, a sprout of the earth, the law giveth it to the leffee, as having a nature not permanent, and yet eafily restored: when it comes to be a timber-tree, and hath a nature folid and durable, the law carrieth it to the lessor. But after again if it become a fear and a dotard, and its folid parts grow putrefied, and as the poet faith, non jam mater alit tellus viresque ministrat, then the law returns it back to the leffee. This is true justice, this is fuum cuique tribuere; the law guiding all things with line of measure and proportion.

The phrase hath a special

profits of the

tree.

AND therefore that interest of the lessee in the that the leffe tree, which the books call a special property, is property in the scarce worth that name. He shall have the shade, proper; for he fo shall he have the shade of a rock; but he shall hath but the not have a crystal or Bristol diamond growing upon the rock. He shall have the pannage; why? that is the fruit of the inheritance of a tree, as herb or grass is of the soil. He shall have seasonable loppings; why? fo he shall have seasonable diggings of an open mine. So as all these things are rather profits of the tree, than any special property in the tree. But about words we will not differ.

So as I conclude this part, that the reason and wisdom of law doth match things, as they consort, ascribing to permanent states permanent interest, and to transitory states transitory interest; and you cannot alter this order of law by fancies of clauses and liberties, as I will tell you in the proper place. And therefore the tree standing belongs clearly to the owner of the inheritance.

tel low as tl T part thre

N

the

be a

of t

is e brea A doth and leffe shou part

dow

trun

ther

ficie

the : A mad of fe tree. ger fells natio I do

rathe prop dama thefe the a

is in

Now come I to my second affertion, that by the severance the ownership or property cannot be altered; but that he, that had the tree as part of the inheritance before, must have it as a chattel transitory after. This is pregnant and followeth of itself, for it is the same tree still, and as the Scripture saith, uti arbor cadit, ita jacet.

THE owner of the whole must needs own the parts; he that owneth the cloth owneth the thread; and he that owneth an engine, when it is entire, owneth the parts when it is broken;

breaking cannot alter property.

V

e

t

S

d

h

a

it

it

is

ne

is

le;

all

p-

y ?

as

n-

ble

ngs

cial

vill

and

ort,

est,

and of

oro-

be-

Jow

And therefore the book in Herlackenden's case Herlackendoth not stick to give it somewhat plain terms; den's case, and to say that it were an absurd thing, that the lessee, which hath a particular interest in the land, should have an absolute property in that which is part of the inheritance: you would have the shadow draw the body, and the twigs draw the trunk. These are truly called absurdities. And therefore in a conclusion so plain, it shall be sufficient to youch the authorities without enforcing the reasons.

And although the division be good, that was made by Mr. Heath, that there be four manners of severances, that is, when the lessee fells the tree, or when the lessor fells it, or when a stranger fells it, or when the act of God, a tempest fells it, yet this division tendeth rather to explanation than to proof; and I need it not, because I do maintain that in all these cases the property is in the lessor.

And therefore I will use a distribution which Three argurather presset the proof. The question is of ments of proproperty. There be three arguments of property, damadamages, seisure, and grant; and according to power to these I will examine the property of the trees by grant.

AND first for damages.

E Dis

For damages look into the books of the law, and you shall not find the lessee shall ever recover damages, not as they are a badge of property; for the damages, which he recovereth, are of two natures, either for the special property (as they call it) or as he is chargeable over. And for this to avoid length, I will select three books, one where the lessee shall recover treble damages, another where he shall recover but for his special property, and the third when he shall recover for the body of the tree, which is a special case, and standeth merely upon a special reason.

THE first is the book of 44 E. III. f. 27. where it is agreed, that if tenant for life be, and a disselfeifor commit waste, the lessee shall recover in trespass as he shall answer in waste: but that this is a kind of recovery of damages, though per ac-

cidens may appear plainly.

For if the lessor die, whereby his action is gone, then the disseisor is likewise discharged, o-

therwise than for the special property.

THE second book is 9 E. IV. f. 35. where it is admitted that if the lessor himself cut down the tree, the lessee shall recover but for his special profit of shade, pannage, loppings, because he is not charged over.

THE third is 44 E. III. f. 44. where it is faid, that if the lessee fell trees to repair the barn which is not ruinous, in his own default, and the lesser come and take them away, he shall have trespass, and in that case he shall recover for the very body of the tree, for he hath an absolute property in them for that intent.

And that it is only for that intent appeareth notably by the book 38 Aff. f. 1. If the leffer after he hath cut down the tree employ it not to reparations, but employ other trees of better value, yet it is wafte; which sheweth plainly the property is respective to the employment.

44 E. 3. f. 27.

9 E. 4. f. 35.

44 E. 3. f. 44.

38 Aff. f. 1.

1

eth

hac

lack

digi

tha

Wit

per

that

in a ber

but

dam

him

had

plen

had

ble

weal

peac

anon

came

wind

of w

is ex

of th

leffee

takin

by w

Knev

trees,

the fi

but t

have

the g

F

N

NAY 5 E. IV. f. 100. goeth farther and shew- 5 E. 4. f. 100. eth, that the special property which the lessee had was of the living tree, and determines as Herlackenden's case saith by severance; for then magis dignum trabit ad se minus dignum: for it saith, that the lessee can't pay the workman's wages with those parts of the tree which are not timber. And fo I leave the first demonstration of property, which is by damages; except you will add the case of 27 H. VIII. f. 13. where it is said, 27 H. 8. f. 13. that if tenant for life and he in the reversion join in a lease for years, and lessee for years fell timber trees, they shall join in an action of waste; but he in the reversion shall recover the whole damages: and great reason, for the special property was in the leffee for years, the general in him in the reversion, so the tenant for life mean had neither the one nor the other.

ıl

1

d

S

)-

is

ie

al

is

:h

or

s,

0-

ty

th.

ee

to

a-

he

AY

Now for the seisure you may not look for plentiful authority in that: for the lessor, which had the more beneficial remedy by action for treble damages, had little reason to resort to the weaker remedy by seisure, and leases without impeachment were then rare, as I will tell you anon. And therefore the question of the seisure came chiefly in experience upon the case of the windfalls, which could not be punished by action of waste.

First therefore the case of 40 E. III. pl. 22. 43 E. 3. pl. 22. is express, where at the King's suit in the behalf of the heir of Darcy who was in ward, the King's lesse was questioned in waste, and justified the taking of the trees, because they were overthrown by winds, and taken away by a stranger. But Knevet saith, although one be guardian, yet the trees, when by their fall they are severed from the freehold, he hath no property of the chattels, but they appertain to the heir, and the heir shall have trespass of them against a stranger, and not the guardian, no more than the bailiss of a

manor.

CASE OF IMPEACHMENT OF WASTE.

manor. So that that book rules the interest of the tree to be in the heir, and goes to appoint farther, that he shall have trespass for them; but of feifure there had been no question.

2 H. 7. f. 14.

So again in 2 H. VII. the words of Brian are that for the timber-trees the leffor may take them; for they are his, and feemeth to take some difference between them and the gravel.

34 E. 3. f. 5.

THE like reason is of the timber of an house, as appears 34 E. 3. f. 5. abridg'd by Brook, tit. waste, pl. 34. when it is said, it was doubted who should have the timber of a house which fell by tempest; and saith the book, it seems it doth appertain to the lessor; and good reason, for it is no waste, and the lessee is not bound to re-edify it: and therefore it is reason the lessor have it; but Herlackenden's case goes farther, where it is faid that the leffee may help himself with the timber, if he will re-edify it; but clearly he hath no interest but towards a special employment.

9 E. 4. f. 35.

Now you have had a case of the timber-tree, and of the timber of the house, now take a case of the mine, where that of the trees is likewise put, and that is 9 E. IV. f. 35. where it is faid by Needbam, that if a lease be made of land wherein there is tin, or iron, or lead, or coals, or quarry, and the leffor enter and take the tin or other materials, the leffee shall punish him for coming upon his land, but not for taking of the fubstances. And so of great trees: but Danby goes farther, and faith, the law that gives him the thing, doth likewise give him means to come by it; but they both agree that the interest is in the leffor: and thus much for the feifure.

For the grant, it is not so certain a badge of property as the other two; for a man may have a property, and yet not grantable, because it is turned into a right, or otherwise suspended. And therefore it is true, that by the book in 21 H. VI. f. that if the lessor grant the trees, the grantee shall

Book 4

fha pir peci the two and

rule mal but stat tion in t

1 an a mar guil vife

auth

falls

Spe

waf tree thro fuel boo the i did coup

then end ing o the and

year wind but !

in th feller shall not take them, no not after the lease expired; because his property is but de futuro, expectant; but 'tis as plain on the other fide that the leffee cannot grant them, as was refolved in two notable cases, namely the case of Marwood Marwood and and Sanders 41. El. in communi banco; where it was ruled, that the tenant of the inheritance may make a feoffment with exception of timber-trees; but that if lessee for life or years set over his eflate with an exception of the trees, the exception is utterly void; and the like resolution was in the case between Foster and Mills plaintiff, and Foster and Spencer and Boord defendant, 28 Eliz. rot. 820.

Now come we to the authorities, which have an appearance to be against us, which are not many, and they be eafily answered not by distinguishing subtilly, but by marking the books ad-

vifedly.

of

int

out

are

m;

ise,

tit. vho

by

ap-

t is dify

it;

it is

the

nath

tree,

cafe wife

faid

land

s, or

n of

for

the

anby

him

come

is in

ge of

have

it is

And

I. VI.

antee shall

1. There be two books that feem to cross the authorities, touching the interest of the windtalls, 7 H. VI. and 44 E. III. f. 44. whereupon 7 H. 6.44 E. 3. waste brought and affigned in the fuccision of trees, the justification is, that they were overthrown by wind, and fo the leffee took them for fuel, and allowed for a good plea; but thefe books are reconciled two ways, first look into both the justifications, and you shall find that the plea did not rely only in that they were windfalls, but couples it with this, that they were first sear, and then overthrown by wind; and that makes an end of it, for fear trees belong to the leffee, standing or felled, and you have a special replication in the book of 44. that the wind did but rend them, and buckle them, and that they bore fruit two years after. And 2dly, you have ill luck with your windfalls, for they be still apple-trees which are but wastes per accidens, as willows, or thorns are in the fight of a house; but when they are once felled, they are clearly matter of fuel.

5 H. 4. f. 29. 1 Ma. f. 90.

ANOTHER kind of authorities, that make shew against us, are those that say that the lessee shall punish the lessor in trespass for taking the trees. which are 5 H. IV. f. 29. and 1 Mar. Dier, f. 90. Mervin's case; and you might add, if you will, o E. IV. the case vouched before; unto which the answer is, that trespass must be understood for the special property, and not for the body of the tree; for those two books speak not a word, what he shall recover, nor that it shall be to the value. And therefore 9 E. IV. is a good expositor, for that diffinguisheth where the other two books speak indefinitely; yea, but 5 H. IV. goes farther, and faith, that the writ shall purport arbores suas, which is true in respect of the special property; neither are writs to be varied according to special cases, but are framed to the general case, as upon lands recovered in value in tail, the writ shall suppose donum a gift.

AND the third kind of authority is some books (as 13 H. VII. f. 9.) that fay, that trespass lies not by the leffor against the leffee for cutting down trees, but only waste; but that is to be un-

derstood of trespass vi & armis, and would have come fitly in question, if there had been no sei-

fure in this case.

Upon all which I conclude, that the whole current of authorities proveth the properties of the trees upon feverance to be in the leffor by the rules of the common law; and that although the common law would not fo far protect the folly of the lessor, as to give him remedy by action, where the state was created by his own act; yet the law never took from him his property; fo that as to the property before the statute and fince, the law was ever one.

Now come I to the third affertion, that the statute of Gloucester hath not transferred the property of the leffee upon an intendment of recompence to the leffor, which needs no long speech!

13 H. 7. f. 9.

it

fo

GI

ty

wl

ha

lif

fer

of by

bu

he

ma

per

(th

(ua

wh

of ma

ty. of 1

had

stat

givi to a

the

no y

yet

befo versi

T

which

fhall

imper Work

N

it is grounded upon a probable reason, and upon

a special book.

1

0.

re

rc

ne

at

e.

or

ks

r-

10-

ial

ng

ral

he

ks

ies

ng

n-

ve

ei-

ole

ot by

igh

the

acct;

ty;

and

the

room-

ch:

it

THE reason is, that damages are a recompence for property: and therefore that the statute of Gloucester giving damages should exclude property; the authority feems to be 12 E. IV. f. 8. 12 E. 4. f. 8. where Catesbey affirming that the leffee at will shall have the great trees, as well as leffee for years or life: Fairfax and Fennings correct it with a difference, that the lessor may take them in the case of tenant at will; because he hath no remedy by the statute, but not in case of the termors.

This conceit may be reasonable thus far, that the leffee shall not both seise and bring waste; but if he feise, he shall not have his action; if he recover by action, he shall not seife: for a man shall not have both the thing and recompence; it is a bar to the highest inheritance (the kingdom of heaven) receperant mercedem fuam. But at the first, it is at his election, whether remedy he will use, like as in the case of trespass; where if a man once recover in damages, it hath concluded and turned the property. Nay, I invert the argument upon the force of the statute of Gloucester thus: that if there had been no property at common law; yet the statute of Gloucester by restraining the waste, and giving an action, doth imply a property, whereto a better case cannot be put than the case upon the statute de donis conditionalibus, where there are A statute gino words to give any reversion or remainder; and ving an action yet the statute giving a formedon, where it lay not implieth an inbefore, being but an action, implies an actual reversion and remainder.

grant

Thus have I passed over the first main part, which I have infifted upon the longer, because I shall have use of it for the clearing of the second.

Now to come to the force of the clause, absque impetitione vasti. This clause must of necessity work in one of these degrees, either by way of

grant of property, or by way of power and liberty knit to the state, or by way of discharge of action; whereof the first two I reject, the last I receive.

n

u

f

e

e

m

Ì

V

V

m

 $\mathbf{f}_{\mathbf{0}}$

no

m

re

by

M

th

tio

th

au

pra

lafi

Ou

imp

ext

ter

peti

by

imp

No grant of property.

1. Therefore I think the other side will not affirm, that this clause amounts to a grant of trees; for then, according to the resolution in Herlackenden's case, they should go to the executors, and the lessee might grant them over, and they might be taken after the state determined. Now it is plain that this liberty is created with the estate, passeth with the estate, and determines with the estate.

THAT appears by 5 Hen. V. where it is faid, that if lessee for years without impeachment of waste accept a confirmation for life, the privilege is gone.

AND fo are the books in 3 E. III. and 28 H. VIII. that if a lease be made without impeachment of waste pur auter vie, the remainder to the lessee for life, the privilege is gone, because he is in of another estate; so then plainly it amounts to no grant of property, neither can it any ways touch the property, nor enlarge the especial property of the leffee; for will any man fay, that if you put Marwood and Sanders's case of a lease without impeachment of waste, that he may grant the land with the exception of the trees any more than an ordinary lessee. Or shall the windfalls be more his in this case, than in the other? for he was not impeachable of waste for windfalls no more than where he hath the clause. Or will any man fay, that if a stranger commit waste, such a lessee may seise? these things I suppose no Again, why should not a liberman will affirm. ty or privilege in law be as strong as a privilege in fact? as in the case of tenant after possibility: Or where there is a lessee for life, the remainder for life? for in these cases they are privileged from waste, and yet that trenches not the property.

Now therefore to take the second course, that it should be as a real power annexed to the state; neither

5 H. 5.

3 E. 3. 28 H. 8. neither can that be, for it is the law that moldeth estates, and not mens fancies. And therefore, if men by clauses like voluntaries in musick run not upon the grounds of law, and do restrain an estate more than the law restrains it, or enables an estate more than the law enables it, or guides an estate otherwise than the law guides it, they be mere repugnancies and vanities. And therefore, if I make a seoffment in see, provided the seoffee shall not fell timber, the clause of condition is void. And so on the other side, if I make a lease with a power that he shall fell timber, it's void.

n

it

e.

I.

3-

ne

is

to

ch

of

ut

m-

nd

an

ore

vas

ore

an

uch

no

er-

ege

ty:

der

rom

rty.

that

ate;

ther

So if I make a lease with a power that he may make seoffment, or that he may make leases for forty years, or that if he make default, I shall not be received, or that the lessee may do homage; these are plainly void, as against law, and repugnant to the state. No, this cannot be done by way of use, except the words be apt, as is Mildmay's case: neither is this clause, in the sense that they take it, any better.

THEREFORE laying aside these two constructions, whereof the one is not maintained to be, the other cannot be: let us come to the true sense of this clause, which is by way of discharge of the action, and no more; wherein I will speak first of the words, then of the reason, and of the authorities which prove our sense, then of the practice, which is pretended to prove theirs; and lastly, I will weigh the mischief how it stands for our construction or theirs.

It is an ignorant mistaking of any man to take impeachment for Impedimentum, and not for impetitio, for it is true that impedimentum doth extend to all hindrances, or disturbances, or interruptions, as well in pais as judicial. But impetitio is merely a judicial claim, or interruption by suit in law, and upon the matter all one with implacitatio. Wherein first we may take light of

the derivation of impetitio, which is a compound of the preposition in, and the verb peto, whereof the verb peto itself doth fignify a demand. but yet properly fuch a demand as is not extrojudicial: for the words petit judicium, petit auditum brevis, &c. are words of acts judicial; as for the demand in pais, it is rather requisitio than petitio, as licet sepius requisitus; so much for the But the preposition in enforceth it verb peto. more, which fignifies against, as Cicero in Verrem, in Catilinam, and so in composition, to inveigh is to speak against: so it is such a demand only where there is a party raised to demand against, that is an adversary, which must be in a suit in law; and it is used in records of law.

As Coke lib. 1. f. 17. Porter's case, it was pleaded in bar, that dista domina Regina nunc ipsos Johannem & Henricum Porter petere seu occasionare

non debet, that is implacitare.

So likewise Coke l. 1. f. 27. case of Alton woods, quod dista domina regina nunc insum proinde aliqua-

liter impetere seu occasionare non debet.

So in the book of entries f. 1. litera D. 17. H. VII. rot. 2. inter placita Regis, & super hoc venit N. B. Comonachus abbatis W. loci illius ordinarii, gerensque vices ipsius abbatis, ad quoscunque clericos de quolibet crimine coram Domino Rege impetit sive irritat calumniand. So much ex vi & usu termini.

For reason; first, it ought to be considered, that the punishment of waste is strict and severe, because the penalty is great, treble damages, and the place wasted: and again, because the lesse must undertake for the acts of strangers: whereupon I infer, that the reason which brought this clause in use, ab initio, was caution to save, and to free men from the extremity of the penalty, and not any intention to countermand the property.

0

10

0

16

d

n

ſ

ir

ir

g

m

po

re

tic

la

be

no

it,

mi

tw

Ed

lav

Wa

or

the

fho

nd

e-

d,

difor

De-

he

it

m,

aly

ıft,

in

ad-

are

ds,

ua-

H.

enit

icos

five

ter-

red,

ere,

and

ffee

ere-

this

and

lty,

pro-

IDD

App to this that the law doth affign in most. cases double remedy, by matter of suit and matter in pais for diffeifings, actions, entries, for trespasses, action and seisure, for nusances, action and abatement; and as Littleton doth instruct us, one of these remedies may be released without touching the other. If the diffeifee release all actions, saith Littleton, yet my entry remains; but if I release all demands or remedies. or the like words of a general nature, it doth release the right itself. And therefore I may be of opinion, that if there be a clause of grant in my leafe express'd, that if my lessee or his assigns cut down and take away any timber-trees, that I and my heirs will not charge them by action, claim, seisure, or other interruption, either this shall inure by way of covenant only, or if you take it to inure by way of absolute discharge, it amounts to a grant of property in the trees, like as the case of 31 Affif. I grant, that if I pay not you 10 l. per 31 Affif. annum at fuch feasts, you shall distrain for it in founds to a my manor of Dale, tho' this found executory in power, apower, yet it amounts to a present grant of a property, if the rent. So as I conclude that the discharge of ac- state bear it. tion the law knows, grant of the property the law knows, but this same mathematical power being a power amounting to a property, and yet no property, and knit to a state that cannot bear it, the law knoweth not, tertium penitus ignoramus; for the authorities they are of three kinds, two by inference, and the third direct.

The first I do collect upon the books of 42 42 E. 3. f. 23. Edw. III. f. 23, and 24. by the difference taken by Mowbray, and agreed by the court, that the law doth intend the clause of disimpeachment of waste to be a discharge special, and not general or absolute; for there the principal case was, that there was a clause in the lease, that the lessor should not demand any right, claim, or challenge in the lands during the life of the lesse. It is

O 3 refolved

resolved by the book, that it is no bar in waste; but that if the clause had been that the lessee should not have been impeached for waste, clearly a good bar; which demonstrates plainly, that general words, be they never fo loud and strong, bear no more than the state will bear, and to any other purpose are idle. But special words that inure by way of discharge of action, are good and allowed by law.

4 E. 2. Fitzh. tit. waste 15. 17 E. 3. f. 7. Firzh. tit. walte, 101.

THE same reason is of the books 4. Ed. II. Fitzh. tit. waste 15, and 17 E. III. f. 7. Fitzh. tit. waste 101. where there was a clause, Quod liceat facere commodum suum meliori modo quo poterit. Yet faith Skipwith, doth this amount, that he shall for the making of his own profit difinherit the leffor? Nego consequentiam; fo that still the law allows not of the general discharge, but of the special that goeth to the action.

1

9 H. 6. f. 35. Fitzh. tit. waste 39. \$. 47ª

THE fecond authority by inference is out of 9 H. VI. f. 35. Fitzb. tit. waste 39. and 32 H. VIII. 32 H. & Dyer Dyer f. 47. where the learning is taken, that notwithstanding this clause be inserted into a lease, yet a man may referve unto himself remedy by entry: but fay I, if this clause should have that fense, which they on the other side would give it; namely, that it should amount to an absolute privilege and power of disposing, then were the proviso flat repugnant, all one as if it were absque impetitione vasti, proviso quod non faciet vastum, which are contradictories; and note well that in the book of 9 H. VI. the proviso is quod non faciat vastum voluntarium in domibus; which indeed doth but abridge in one kind, and therefore may stand without repugnancy: but in the latter book it is general, that is to say, absque impetitione vasti, & si contigerit ipsum facere vastum tunc licebit reintrare. And there Shelly making the objection that the condition was repugnant, it is falv'd thus, sed aliqui tenuerunt, that this word impetitione vasti is to be understood that he shall not be implead-

ed by waste, or punished by action, and so indeed it ought: I hose aliqui recte tenuerunt.

For the authorities direct, they are two, the 27 H. 6. Firzh. one 27 H. VI. Fitzb. tit. waste 8. where a lease tit. waste 8. was made without impeachment of waste, and a stranger committed waste, and the rule is, that the lessee shall recover in trespass only for the crop of the tree, and not for the body of the tree. It is true it comes by a dicitur, but it is now a legitur; and a quære there is, and reason, or else this long speech were time ill spent.

And the last authority is the case of Sir Moyle Finch and his mother, referred to my lord Wrey and Sir Roger Manwood, resolved upon conference with other of the judges vouch'd by Wrey in Herlackenden's case, and reported to my lord chief justice, here present, as a resolution of law, being

our very case.

r-

at

y

at

d

I.

7.

e,

110

t,

at

e,

I.

t-

e,

y

at

ve

te

he

110

n, in

at

th

nd

is

હ

12-

at

15,

fti d-

ed

And for the cases to the contrary, I know not Statute de one in all the law direct: they press the statute Marlebridge. of Marlebridge, which hath an exception in the prohibition, firmarii non facient vastum, &c. nifi specialem inde babuerint concessionem per scriptum conventionis, mentionem faciens, quod boc facere possint, This present not the question; for no man doubteth, but it will excuse in an action of waste; and again, nisi habeant specialem concessionem may be meant of an absolute grant of the trees themielves: and otherwise the clause absque impetitione vasti taketh away the force of the statute, and loofeth what the statute bindeth; but it toucheth not the property at common law.

For Littleton's case in his title of conditions, Littleton. where it is faid, that if a feoffment in fee be made upon condition, that the feoffee shall infeoff the husband and wife, and the heirs of their two bodies; and that the husband die, that now the feoffee ought to make a lease without impeachment of waste to the wife, the remainder to the right heirs of the body of her husband, and her

begot-

th

fu

th

tr

yo

at

ha

OU

lil

fo

ar

Y

th

ar

le

in

ne

th

flo

th

lil

fo

th

ft:

OL

er

sh

 b_0

ex

an

th

na th

po

fo

ftr

th

the

begotten; whereby it would be inferred, that fuch a lessee should have equal privilege with tenant in tail: the answer appears in Littleton's own words, which is, that the feossee ought to go as near the condition, and as near the intent of the condition as he may, but to come near is not to reach, neither doth Littleton undertake for that.

Culpepper's cafe.
2 Eliz.
Dyer f. 184.

As for Culpepper's case, 2 El. f. 184. it is obscurely put and concluded in division of opinion; but yet fo as it rather makes for us. The cafe is 2 Eliz. Dyer f. 184. and is in effect this: a man makes a leafe for years, excepting timber-trees, and afterwards makes a lease without impeachment of waste to John a Style, and then granteth the land and trees to John a Down, and binds himself to warrant and save harmless John a Down against John a Style; John a Style cutteth down the trees, the question was whether the bond were forfeited, and that question resorteth to the other question; whether John a Style, by virtue of such lease, could fell the trees; and held by Weston and Brown that he could not; which proves plainly for us that he had no property by that clause in the tree; though it is true that in that case the exception of the trees turneth the case, and so in effect it proveth neither way.

Practice.

est via, not recta visa est via. But I conceive it to be neither ancient nor common. It is true I find at first in 19 E. II. (I mean such a clause) but it is one thing to say that the clause is ancient; and it is another thing to say, that this exposition, which they would now introduce, is ancient. And therefore you must note that a practice doth then expound the law, when the act

which is practifed, were merely tortious or void,

if the law should not approve it; but that is not

For the practice, if it were so ancient and

common, as is conceived; yet fince the authori-

ties have not approved, but condemned it, it is no

15 E. 2.

t

n

S

e

0

-

it

2

n

1-

h

172

ne

re-

e,

210

us 1e

X-

in

nd

rino

Sa

jt

1

e)

n-

X-

n-

ic-

id,

he

the case here; for we agree the clause to be lawful: nay, we say that it is in no fort inutile, but there is use of it, to avoid this severe penalty of treble damages. But to speak plainly, I will tell you how this clause came in from 13 of E. I. till about 12 of E. IV. The fratute tail though it had the qualities of an inheritance, yet it was without power to alien; but as foon as that was fet at liberty by common recoveries, then there must be found fome other device, that a man might be an absolute owner of the land for the time, and yet not enabled to alien, and for that purpose was this clause found out: for you shall not find in one amongst an hundred, that farmers had it in their leases; but those that were once owners of the inheritance, and had put it over to their fons or next heirs, referved such a beneficial state to themselves. And therefore the troth is, that the flood of this usage came in with perpetuities, save that the perpetuity was to make an inheritance like a stem for life, and this was to make a stem for life, like an inheritance, both concurring in this, that they prefume to create phantastical estates, contrary to the ground of law.

AND therefore it is no matter, though it went out with the perpetuities, as it came in, to the end that men that have not the inheritance should not have power to abuse the inheritance.

And for the mischief and consideration of bonum publicum, certainly this clause with this exposition tendeth but to make houses ruinous, and to leave no timber upon the ground to build them up again; and therefore let men in God's name, when they establish their states, and plant their sons or kinsmen in the inheritance of some portions of their lands, with reservation of the freehold to themselves, use it, and enjoy it in such sort, as may tend ad adificationem, and not ad destructionem; for that's good for posterity, and for the state in general.

ANB

AND for the timber of this realm, 'tis vivus the faurus regni; and 'tis the matter of our walls, walls not only of our houses, but of our island: fo as 'tis a general difinherifon to the kingdom to favour that exposition, which tends to the decay of it, being so great already; and to favour waste when the times themselves are set upon waste and fpoil. Therefore fince the reason and authorities of law, and the policy of estate do meet, and that those that have, or shall have such conveyances, may enjoy the benefit of that clause to protect them in a moderate manner, that is, from the penalty of the action; it is both good law and good policy for the kingdom, and not injurious or inconvenient for particulars, to take this clause strictly, and therein to affirm the last

of timber reg of waste; but it is the leave be with the last be with the last of the leave be with the last of the leave be with the last be w

LOWES CASE

OF

TENURES:

In the KING's BENCH.

Duchy, and lying out of the county Palatine was (before the Duchy came to the crown) held of the King by knight-service in capite. The land in question was held of the said manor

manor in socage. The Duchy and this manor parcel thereof descended to King Henry IV. King Henry VIII. by letters patent the 19. of his reign granted this manor to Anthony Low, grandfather of the ward, and then tenant of the land in question, reserving 26 l. 10 s. rent and sealty, tantum pro omnibus serviciis, and this patent is under the Duchy-seal only. The question is how this tenancy is held, whether in capite or in socage.

THE case resteth upon a point, unto which all the questions arising are to be reduced. The first is, whether this tenancy being by the grant of the King of the manor to the tenant, grown to an unity of possession with the manor, be held as the manor is held, which is expressed in the patent

to be in focage.

23

ls,

:

to

ly le

nd

ies nd

y-

to

m

n-

ke

aft

the

Pa-

to

212

aid

nor

THE second, whether the manor itself be held in socage according to the last reservation; or in capite by revivor of the ancient seigniory, which was in capite before the Duchy came to the crown.

THEREFORE my first proposition is, that this tenancy (which without all colour is no parcel of the manor) cannot be comprehended within the tenure, reserved upon the manor, but that the law createth a several and distinct tenure thereupon; and that not guided according to the express tenure of the manor; but merely secundum normam legis, by the intendment and rule of law, which must be a tenure by knight-service in capite.

And my second proposition is, that admitting that the tenure of the tenancy should ensue the tenure of the manor: yet nevertheless the manor itself which was first held of the crown in capite, the tenure suspended by the conquest of the Duchy to the crown, being now conveyed out of the crown under the Duchy-seal only; (which hath no power to touch or carry any interest,

whereof

whereof the King was vested in right of the crown) is now fo severed and disjoined from the ancient feigniority, which was in capite, as the fame ancient feigniory is revived, and fo the new refervation void; because the manor cannot be charged with two tenures.

The King's temore hurt by cealments.

This case concerneth one of the greatest and nures may rake fairest flowers of the crown, which is the King's a resolution in tenures, and that in their creation; which is more many supprese than their preservation: for if the rules and maxfions or con- ims of law in the first raising of tenures in capite be weakened, this nips the flower in the bud, and may do more hurt by a resolution in law than the losses, which the King's tenures do daily receive by oblivion or suppression, or the neglect of officers, or the iniquity of jurors, or other like blafts, whereby they are continually shaken: and therefore it behoveth us of the King's council to have a special care of this case, as much as in us is, to give satisfaction to the court. Therefore, before I come to argue these two points particularly, I will speak something of the Favour of law towards tenures in capite, as that which will give a force and edge to all that I shall speak afterwards.

No land in the kingdom of England charby way of tenure.

THE constitution of this kingdom appeareth to be a free monarchy in nothing better than in this; ged by way of that as there is no land of the subject that is charland charged ged to the crown by way of tribute, or tax, or tallage, except it be fet by parliament: fo on the other fide there is no land of the subject, but is charged to the crown by tenure, mediate or immediate, and that by the grounds of the common law. This is the excellent temper and commixture of this estate, bearing marks of the sovereignty of the King, and of the freedom of the fubject from tax, whose possessions are feodalia, nor tributaria.

TENURES, according to the most general division, are of two natures, the one containing mate

ter

the

the

the

new

and

ng's

ore

ax-

pite

and

the

eive

offi-

ifts,

ere-

ave

, to

e I

, I

to-

ive

ter-

to

us;

ar-

or

the

is

m-

lon

ix-

ve-

he

ias

vi-

at-

ter

be

ter of protection, and the other matter of profit: that of protection is likewife double, divine protection and military. The divine protection is chiefly procured by the prayers of holy and devout men; and great pity it is that it was depraved and corrupted with fuperstition. This begot the tenure in frankalmoigne, which though in burthen it is less than in socage, yet in virtue it is more than knight-service. For we read how, during the while Moses in the mount held up his hands, the Hebrews prevailed in battle, as well as when Elias prayed, rain came after drought, which made the plough go; fo that I hold the tenure in franckalmoigne in the first institution indifferent to knight-service and socage. Setting apart this tenure, there remaineth the other two, that of knight-fervice, and that of focage; the one tending chiefly to defence and protection, the other to profit and maintenance of life. They are all three comprehended in the ancient verse, Tu semper ora, tu protege, tuque labora. But between these two services, knight-service and socage, the law of England makes a great difference: for this kingdom (my lords) is a state neither effeminate, nor merchant-like; but the laws give the honour unto arms and military service, like the laws of a nation, before whom Julius Cafar turned his back, as their own prophet fays; Territa quaesitis oftendit terga Britannis. And therefore howfoever men upon husband-like confiderations of profit esteem of socage tenures: yet the law that looketh to the greatness of the kingdom, and proceedeth upon confiderations of estate, giveth the preheminence altogether to knight-fervice.

We see that the ward, who is ward for knight-service-land, is accounted in law disparaged, if he be tender'd a marriage of the burghers parentage: and we see that the knights sees were by the ancient laws the materials of all nobility; for that

nu

of

al

a

a

it appears by diverse records how many knights fees should by computation go to a barony, and so to an earldom. Nay we see that in the very summons of parliament, the knights of the shire are required to be chosen milites gladio cinsti; so as the very call, though it were to council, bears a mark of arms and habiliments of war. To conclude, the whole composition of this war-like nation, and the favours of law tend to the advancement of military virtue and service.

Bur now farther, amongst the tenures by knight-service, that of the King in capite is the most high and worthy; and the reason is double; partly because it is held of the King's crown and person; and partly because the law createth such a privity between the line of the crown and the inheritors of fuch tenancies, as there cannot be an alienation without the King's licence, the penalty of which alienation was by the common law the forfeiture of the state itself, and by the statute of E. III. is reduced to fine and seisure. And although this also has been unworthily termed by the vulgar (not capite,) captivity and thraldom; yet that which they count bondage, the law counteth honour, like to the case of tenants in tail of the King's advancement, which is a great restraint by the statute of 34 H. VIII. but yet by that statute it is imputed for an honour. This favour of law to the tenure by knight-fervice in capite produceth this effect, that wherefoever there is no express service effectually limited, or wherefoever that, which was once limited, faileth, the law evermore supplieth a tenure by knight-service in capite; if it be a blank once that the law must fill it up, the law ever with her - own hand writes - tenure by knightdervice in capite. And therefore the resolution was notable by the judges of both benches, that where the King confirmed to his farmers tenants for life, tenend' per servicia debita, this was a tenure 4

44 E. 3. f. 45.

nure in capite: for other services are servicia requisita, required by the words of patents or grants; but that only is fervicium debitum, by the rules of law.

THE course therefore that I will hold in the proof of the first main point, shall be this. First I will shew, maintain, and fortify my former grounds, that wherefoever the law createth the tenure of the King, the law hath no variety, but always raiseth a tenure in capite.

SECONDLY, that in the case present, there is not any fuch tenure expressed, as can take place, and exclude the tenure in law, but that there is as it were a lapse to the law.

AND lastly, I will shew in what cases the former general rule receiveth fome shew of exception; and will shew the difference between them and our case; wherein I shall include an answer to all that hath been faid on the other fide.

For my first proposition I will divide into four branches: first, I say, where there is no tenure referved, the law createth a tenure in capite; iecondly, where the tenure is uncertain; thirdly, where the tenure referved is impossible or repugnant to law; and laftly, where a tenure once created is afterwards extinct.

For the first, if the King give lands and fay Per Prisott in nothing of the tenure, this is a tenure in capite; fine. 33 H. 6. nay, if the King give white-acre and black-acre, f. 3. q. and referves a tenure only of white-acre, and that a tenure expressed to be in socage; yet you shall not for fellowship fake (because they are in one patent) intend the like tenure of black-acre; but that shall be held in capite.

So if the King grant land, held as of a manor with warranty, and a special clause of recompence, and the tenant be impleaded, and recover in value, this land shall be held in capite, and not of the manor.

So

ht-

ights

and

very

fhire

eti;

incil.

war.

war-

the

by

the

ble;

and

fuch

the

t be.

pe-

mon

the

ure.

rm-

ral-

the

ants

is a

but

our.

fer-

eso-

ted, ted,

by

vith

tion hat

ints te-

ure

So if the King exchange the manor of Dale for the manor of Sale, which is held in focage, although it be by the words excambium; yet that goeth to equality of the state, not of the tenure. and the manor of Dale (if no tenure be expreffed) shall be held in capite; so much for silence of tenure.

For the fecond branch, which is incertainty of tenure; first, where an ignoramus is found by office, this by the common law is a tenure in capite, which is most for the King's benefit; and the prefumption of law is fo strong, that it amounts to a direct finding or affirmative, and the Mar. Dyer f. party shall have a negative or traverse, which is 14 Eliz. Dyer somewhat strange to a thing indefinite.

306.

So if in ancient time, one held of the King, as of a manor by knight-service, and the land return to the King by attainder, and then the King granteth it tenend' per fidelitatem tantum, and it returneth the fecond time to the King, and the

Austin's office. King granteth it per servicia antebac consueta; now because of the incertainty, neither service shall take place, and the tenure shall be in capite, as was the opinion of you my lord chief justice, where you were commissioner to find an office after Austin's death.

So if the King grant land tenend' de manerio de East-Greenwich; vel de honore de Hampton; this is void, for the non-certainty, and shall be held of

the King in capite.

For the third branch, if the King limit land to be discharged of tenure, as absque aliquo inde reddendo, this is a tenure in capite; and yet if one should go to the next, ad proximum, it should be a focage, for the least is next to none at all: but you may not take the King's grant by argument; but where they cannot take place effectually and punctually, as they are expressed, there you shall refort wholly to the judgment of law.

33 H. 6. f. 7.

So

DO

TU of

m

ra

m

So if the King grant land tenena fi franckment 14 H. 6. f. 12. come il est son corone, this is a tenure in capite.

Ir land be given to be held of a lordship not Mereseild's capable, as of Salisbury plain, or a corporation case. not in effe, or of the manor of a Subject, this is a tenure in capite.

So if land be given to hold by impossible fervice, as by performing the office of the sheriff of Torkshire (which no man can do but the sheriff) and fealty for all service, this is tenure in capite.

For the fourth branch, which cometh nearest to our case; let us see where a seigniory was once, and is after extinguished; this may be in two manners, by release in fact, or by unity of posfession, which is a release or discharge in law.

AND therefore let the case be that the King re- Vid. 30 H. 81 leafeth to his tenant, that holds of him in focage; Dier. 8 H. 7. this release is good, and the tenant shall hold now in capite, for the former tenure being difcharged, the tenure in law ariseth.

So the case, which is in I E. III. a fine is le- 1 E. 3. f. 4. vied to 7. S. in tail, the remainder ouster to the fine accept, King, the state tail shall be held in capite, and unde collect. the first tenancy, if it were in socage, by the unity of the tenancy, shall be discharged, and a new raifed thereupon: and therefore the opinion, or rather the quære in Dyer, no law.

Thus much for my major proposition, now for 4 & 5 P. M. the minor, or the assumption, it is this: first, that the land in question is discharged of tenure by the purchase of the manor; then that the redervation of the fervice upon the manor cannot pollibly inure to the tenancy; and then if a corruption be of the first tenure, and no generation of the new; then cometh in the tenure per normam legis, which is in capite.

AND the course of my proof shall be ab enumeratione partium, which is one of the clearest and most forcible kinds of argument.

ale

ige,

that

ure.

reience

y of

by ca-

and

t a-

the

ch is

g, as

re-

King d it

the

now

fhall

e, as

tice,

e af-

io de

his is

ld of

land inde

f one

ld be : but

ent;

and

you

Is this parcel of land be held by fealty and rent tantum, either it is the old fealty before the purchase of the manor, or it is the new fealty reserved and expressed upon the manor; or it is a new fealty raised by intendment of law in conformity and congruity of the fealty reserved upon

the manor; but none of these; ergo, &c.

That it should be the old fealty, is void of sense; for it is not ad eosdem terminos. The first fealty was between the tenancy and the manor, that tenure is by the unity extinct. Secondly, that was a tenure of a manor, this is a tenure in gross. Thirdly, the rent of 26 l. 10 s. must needs be new, and will you have a new rent with an old fealty? These things are portenta in lege; nay, I demand, if the tenure of the tenancy (Lowes tenure) had been by knight-service, would you have said that had remained? No, but that it was altered by the new reservation; ergo no colour of the old fealty.

That it cannot be the new fealty is also manifest; for the new reservation is upon the manor, and this is no part of the manor; for if it had escheated to the King in an ordinary escheat, or come to him upon a mortmain, in these cases it had come in lieu of the seigniory, and been parcel of the manor, and so within the reservation,

but clearly not upon a purchase in fact.

Again, the reservation cannot inure, but upon that which is granted; and this tenancy was never granted, but was in the tenant before; and therefore no colour it should come under the reservation. But if it be said, that nevertheless the seigniory of that tenancy was parcel of the manor, and is also granted; and although it be extinct in substance, yet it may be in esse as to the King's service: this deserveth answer; for this affertion may be colourably inferred out of Carr's case.

Eliz. Coke Lit. 3. f. 30.

i

1

King Edw. VI. grants a manor, rendering 941. fent in fee-farm tenendum de East-Greenwich in focage; and after, Queen Mary granteth thefe rents amongst other things tenendum in capite, and the grantee released to the heir of the tenant; yet the rent shall be in esfe, as to the King, but the land (faith the book) shall be devisable by the statute for the whole, as not held in capite.

AND so the case of the honour of Pickeringe, 26 Ass. where the King granted the bailiwick, rendering rent; and after granted the honour, and the bailiwick became forfeited, and the grantee took forfeiture thereof; whereby it was extinct, yet the rent remaineth as to the King out of the bailiwick extinct.

THESE two cases partly make not against us, and partly make for us: there be two differences that avoid them. First, there the tenures or rents are in esse in those cases for the King's benefit, and here they should be in effe to the King's prejudice, who should otherwise have a more beneficial tenure. Again, in these cases the first reservation was of a thing in esse, at the time of the refervation; and then there is no reason the act subsequent of the King's tenant should prejudice the King's interest once vested and settled:

it is out of a thing extinct in the instant. Bur the plain reason, which turneth Carr's cale mainly for us, is; for that where the tenure is of a rent or feigniory, which is afterwards drowned or extinct in the land; yet the law judgeth the same rent or seigniory to be in ese, as to support the tenure: but of what? only of the faid rent or feigniory, and never of the land itlelf? for the land shall be held by the same tenure it was before. And so is the rule of Carr's cale, where it is adjudged, that though the rent be held in capite, yet the land was nevertheless

but here the refervation was never good, because

de-

; for

be

he

lty

t is

on-

on

of

first

or,

ily,

e in

nust

vith

ege;

ncy ould

at it

CO-

ani-

nor,

had

, or

es it

par-

tion,

upon

s ne-

and

e re-

reless

f the

it be

as to

ut of

KING

deviseable for the whole, as no ways charged with that tenure.

Why then in our case, let the fealty be referved out of the seigniory extinct, yet that toucheth not at all the land: and then of necessity the land must be also held; and therefore you must seek out a new tenure for the land, and

that must be in capite.

AND let this be noted once for all, that our case is not like the common cases of a menalty extinct, where the tenant shall hold of the lord, as the mean held before; as where the menalty is granted to the tenant, or where the tenancy is granted to the mean, or where the menalty descendeth to the tenant, or where the menalty is forejudged. In all these cases the tenancy, I grant, is held as the menalty was held before, and the difference is because there was an old feigniory in being; which remaineth untouched and unaltered, fave that it is drawn a degree nearer to the land, so as there is no question in the world of a new tenure: but in our case there was no lord paramount, for the manor itself was in the crown, and not held at all, nor no feigniory of the manor in effe, so as the question is wholly upon the creation of a new feigniory, and not upon the continuance of an old.

For the third course, that the law should create a new distinct tenure by fealty of this parcel, guided by the express tenure upon the manor; it is the probablest course of the three: but yet if the former authorities, I have alleged, be well understood and marked, they shew the law plainly, that it cannot be; for you shall ever take the King's grant ad idem, and not ad simile, or ad proximum: no more than in the case of the absque aliquo reddendo, or as free as the crown; who would not say that in those cases it should amount to a socage tenure? for minimum est nibilo proximum; and yet they are tenures by King's service

in capite. So if the King by one patent pass two acres, and a fealty reserved but upon the one of them, you shall not resort to this ut expressum servitium regat, vel declaret tacitum. No more shall you in our case imply that the express tenure reserved upon the manor shall govern or declare the tenure of the tenancy, or controul the intendment of law concerning the same.

Now will I answer the cases, which give some shadow on the contrary side, and shew they have their particular reasons, and do not impugn our

case.

ith

re-

hat

ef-

7ou

and

our

lty

rd, lty

y is

de-

y is

int,

the

y in

ter-

the

of a

lord

wn,

ma-

the

the

cre-

rcel,

or;

yet

well

ain-

the

ad

ab/-

who

ount

roxi-

rvice

273

ST TO

FIRST, if the King have land by attainder of treason, and grant the land to be held of himfelf, and of other lords, this is no new tenure per normam legis communis; but the old tenure per normam statuti, which taketh away the intendment of the common law; for the statute directeth it so, and otherwise the King shall do a wrong.

So if the King grant land parcel of the demesne of a manor tenendum de nobis, or reserving no tenure at all, this is a tenure of the manor, or of the honour, and not in capite: for here the more vehement presumption controuleth the less; for the law doth presume the King hath no intent to dismember it from the manor, and so to lose his

court and the perquifites.

So if the King grant land tenendum by a rose pro omnibus servitiis; this is not like the cases of the absque aliquo inde reddendo, or as free as the crown: for pro omnibus servitiis shall be intended 25 H. 6. f. 56. for all express service; whereas fealty is incident, 9. and passeth tacit, and so it is no impossible or repugnant reservation.

The case of the frankalmoigne, I mean the This is no case where the King grants lands of the Templers franckalmoigne. to J. S. to hold as the Templers did, which cannot be frankalmoigne, and yet hath been ruled to be no tenure by knight-service in capite, but Wood's case.

a only

only a focage tenure, is easily answered; for that the franckalmoigne is but a species of a tenure in socage with a privilege, so the privilege ceaseth, and the tenure remains.

To conclude therefore, I sum up my arguments thus; my major is, where calamus legis doth write the tenure, it is knight-service in capite. My minor is, this tenure is left to the law; ergo this tenure is in capite.

For the fecond point I will first speak of it according to the rules of the common law, and

then upon the statutes of the Duchy.

Frast I do grant, that where a feigniory and a tenancy, or a rent and land, or trees and land, or the like primitive and fecondary interest are conjoined in one person, yea, though it be in auter droit; yet if it be of like perdurable estate, they were so extinct, as by act in law they may

be revived, but by grant they cannot.

For if a man have a feigniory in his own right, and the land descend to his wife, and his wife dieth without iffue, the feighiory is revived; but if he will make a feoffment in fee, saving his rent, he cannot do it. But there is a great difference, and let it be well observed between auter capacitie and auter droit; for in case of auter capacitie the interests are contigua, and not continua, conjoined, And therefore if the mabut not confounded. fter of an hospital have a seigniory, and the mayor and commonalty of St. Albans have a tenancy, and the mafter of the hospital be made mayor, and the mayor grant away the tenancy under the feal of the mayor and commonalty, the feigniory of the hospital is revived.

So between natural capacity and politick, if a man have a feigniory to him and his heirs, and a Bishop is tenant, and the lord is made Bishop, and the Bishop before the statute grants away the land under the chapter's seal, the seigniory is re-

vived.

THE

0

1

t

nat

ure

th,

zu-

oth

ite.

rgo

ac-

ind

da

nd,

are

au-

ite,

ay

ht,

rife

out

nt,

ce,

itie

the

ed,

na-

yor

cy,

or,

der

ig-

fa

da

op,

the

re-

HE

au'I

THE same reason is between the capacity of the 2 crown and the capacity of the Duchy, which is in the King's natural capacity, though illustrate with some privileges of the crown; if the King have the feigniory in the right of his crown, and the tenancy in the right of the Duchy (as our cafe is) and make a feoffment of the tenancy, the tenure must be revived; and this is by the ground of the common law. But the case is the more strong by reason of the statute of 1 H. IV. 3 H. V. and I H. VII. of the Duchy, by which the Duchy-feal is enabled to pass lands of the Duchy. but no ways to touch the crown; and whether the King be in actual possession of the thing, that should pass, or have only a right, or a condition. or a thing in suspence (as our case is) all is one; for that feal will not extinguish so much as a spark of that which is in the right of the crown; and fo a plain revivor.

AND if it be faid that a mischief will follow; for that upon every Duchy patent men shall not know how to hold, because men must go back to the ancient tenure, and not rest in the tenure limited: for this mischief there grows an easy remedy, which likewise is now in use, which is

to take both feals, and then all is fafe.

SECONDLY, as the King cannot under the Duchy-feal grant away his ancient feigniory in the right of his crown; fo he cannot make any new refervation by that feal, and so of necessity it falleth to the law to make the tenure: for every refervation must be of the nature of that that passeth, as a Dean and Chapter cannot grant land of the Chapter, and referve a rent to the Dean and his heirs, nor è converso: nor no more can the King grant land of the Duchy under that feal, and referve a tenure to the crown; and therefore it is warily put in the end of the case of the Duchy in the commentaries, where it is faid, if the King make a feoffment of the Duchy land, P 4 the the feoffee shall hold in capite; but not a word of that, it should be by way of express reservation, but upon a feoffment fimply, the law shall

work it and fupply it.

To conclude, there is direct authority in the point, but that it is via versa; and it was the Bishop of Salisbury's case; the King had in the right of the Duchy a rent issuing out of land, which was monastery land, which he had in the right of the crown, and granted away the land under the great seal to the Bishop; and yet nevertheless the rent continued to the Duchy, and fo upon great and grave advice it was in the Duchy decreed; fo as your lordship feeth whether you take the tenure of the tenancy, or the tenure of the manor; this land must be held in capite, and therefore, &c.

erabeh mili milagilming milagi sa miladi a di sanga milig, dadi aday gazan miladi Beautiful transfer to sparse the maintain of THE

the fact that a present its again that

The sea year to be a sea to the

must emerge were to revoked in the whole

and it and learned to furth provide

and the first contraction to the

R

Th

pro fior cha of vid for and not

rer

fuc fha

10 tio

fan

sim pre rd 7a-

all

he he he he nd, he nd

nd he

he in

E

THE BOY & good and an

CASE

OF

REVOCATION of USES,

In the KING's BENCH.

The case shortly put without names or dates more than of necessity is this.

OIR John Stanbope conveys the manor of Burrough-ash to his lady for part of her join-U ture, and intending (as is manifest) not to restrain himself, nor his son, from disposing some proportion of that land according to their occafions, so as my lady were at no loss by the exchange, inferteth into the conveyance a power of revocation and alteration in this manner; provided that it shall be lawful for himself and his ion fuccessively to alter, and make void the uses, and to limit and appoint new uses, so it exceed not the value of 201 to be computed after the rents then answered; and that immediately after fuch declaration, or making void, the feoffees shall stand seised to such new uses. Ita quod he or his fon, within fix months after fuch declaration or making yoid, shall assure within the same towns, tantum terrarum & tenementorum, & similis valoris, as were so revoked to the uses expressed in the first conveyance.

SIR John Stanbope his son revokes the land in Burrough-ash, and other parcels not exceeding the value of 20 l. and within six months assures to my lady and to the former uses Burton-joice, and other lands; and the jury have sound that the lands revoked contain twice so much in number of acres, and twice so much in yearly value, as the new lands; but yet that the new lands are rented at 21 l. and find the lands of Burrough-ash, now out of lease formerly made: and that no notice of this new assurance was given before the ejectment, but only that Sir John Stanbope had by word told his mother that such an assurance was made, not shewing or delivering the deed.

THE question is whether Burrough-ash be well revoked; which question divides itself into

three points.

FIRST, whether the ita quod be a void and idle clause? for if so, then there needs no new affurance, but the revocation is absolute per se.

THE next is, if it be an effectual clause, whether it be pursued or no? wherein the question will rest, whether the value of the reassured lands

shall be only computed by rents?

And the third is, if in other points it should be well pursued, yet whether the revocation can work until a sufficient notice of the new assu-

rance ?

AND I shall prove plainly, that ita quod stands well with the power of revocation; and if it should fall to the ground, it draws all the rest of the clause with it, and makes the whole void, and can't be void alone by itself.

I SHALL prove likewise that the value must needs be accounted not a tail value, or an arithmetical value by the rent, but a true value in

quantity and quality.

And lastly, that a notice is of necessity, as this case is.

bassin a seprencial chained coursed

I WILL

1

wit

true

at

clea

my

be

the

dur

my

it (

in

the

per

and

tha

ope

for

sha

cla

tot

law

fen

do

by

ma

ye

tio

ve

M

ha

mo

It

Si

ali

VO

in

the

to

and

the

ber

as

are

ash,

no

the

nad

nce

vell

nto

ind

ew

he-

ion

nds

uld

can

Tu-

nds

it

of

nd

ust

h-

in

I Will not deny, but it is a great power of wit to make clear things doubtful; but it is the true use of wit to make doubtful things clear, or at least to maintain things that are clear, to be clear, as they are. And in that kind I conceive my labour will be in this cafe, which I hold to be a case rather of novelty than difficulty, and therefore may require argument, but will not endure much argument: but to speak plainly to my understanding, as the case hath no equity in it (I might fay piety) fo it hath no great doubt in law.

FIRST therefore this it is, that I affirm, that the clause so that, it a quod, containing the recompence, governs the clause precedent of the power. and that it makes it wait and expect otherwise than as by way of inception; but the effect and operation is suspended, till that part also be performed: and if otherwise, then I say plainly you shall not construe by fractions; but the whole clause and power is void not in tanto, but in toto. Of the first of them I will give four reasons.

THE first reason is, that the wisdom of the law useth to transpose words according to the fense; and not so much to respect how the words do take place, but how the acts, which are guided

by those words, may take place.

HILL and Graunger's case comment. 171. A Hill and man in August makes a lease rendring to 1. rent Graunger's yearly to be paid at the feasts of Annuncia- 171. tion and Michaelmas: these words shall be inverted by law, as if they had been fet thus, at Michaelmas and the Annunciation, for else he can't have a rent yearly; for there will be fourteen months to the first year.

FITZ-WILLIAMS's case 2 7a. Co. p. 6. f. 33. Fitz-Williams's It was contained in an indenture of uses, that case, 2 Jac. Co. Sir William Fitz-William's flould have power to alter and change, revoke, determine, and make void the uses limited; the words are placed diforderly;

orderly; for it is in nature first to determine the uses, and after to change them by limitation of new. But the chief question being in the book, whether it might be done by the same deed; it is admitted and thought not worth the speaking to, that the law shall marshal the acts against the order of the words, that is, first to make void, and then to limit.

So if I convey land, and covenant with you to make farther assurance, so that you require it of me, there though the request be placed last, yet

it must be acted first.

So if I let land to you for a term, and fay farther, it shall be lawful for you to take twenty timber-trees to erect a new tenement upon the land; fo that my bailiff do affign you where you shall take them, here the assignment, though last placed, must precede. And therefore the Grammarians do infer well upon the word (period,) which is a full and complete clause or sentence, that it is complexus orationis circularis: for as in a circle there is not prius nor posterius, so in one fentence you shall not respect the placing of words; but though the words lie in length, yet the fense is round, so as prima erunt novissima, & novissima prima. For though you cannot speak all at once, so yet you must construe and judge upon all at once.

To apply this; I say these words so that, though loco & textu posteriora; yet they be potestate & sensus priora: as if they had been penned thus, that it shall be lawful for Sir Thomas Stanbope, so that he assure lands, &c. to revoke; and what difference between, so that he assure; he may revoke, or he may revoke, so that he assure: for you must either make the so that to be precedent or void, as I shall tell you anon. And therefore the law will rather invert the words, than pervert the

with the tell mot rack process to the ability

at all good wat day in consistent and a

fense.

properly

BUT

B

it is

be p

may

in t

70b

ken

den

any

tion

tim

be i

of t

be 1

by

to

but

be !

plai

con

imr

and

fpe

do

The

tio

ed

WO

the

ced

ma

tar

to

ref

[a

idl

tho

1

1

the

on of

ook,

; it

king

the

roid,

u to

it of

yet

far-

enty

the

you

last

am-

od,)

nce,

s in

one

of

the

120-

all

up-

ugh

en-

hat

ffe-

ke,

oid,

aw

the

UT

Bur it will be said, that in the cases I put, it is left indefinite, when the act last limited shall be performed; and so the law may marshal it, as may stand with possibility; and so if it had been in this case no more but (so that Sir Thomas or John should assure new lands) and no time spoken of, the law might have intended it precedent. But in this case it is precisely put to be at any time within six months after the declaration, and therefore you cannot vary in the times.

To this I answer, that the new assurance must be in deed in time after the instrument or deed of the declaration; but on the other side it must be time precedent to the operation of the law, by determining the uses thereupon: so as it is not to be applied so much to the declaration itself, but to the warrant of the declaration. It shall be lawful, so that, &c. And this will appear more plainly by my second reason, to which now I come; for as for the cavillation upon the word immediately, I will speak to it after.

My fecond reason therefore is out of the use and signification of this conjunction or bond of speech, so that: for no man will make any great doubt of it, if the words had been si, if Sir Thomas shall within six months of such declaration convey; but that it must have been intended precedent; yet if you mark it well, these words ita quod and si, howsoever in propriety, the ita quod may seem subsequent, and the si precedent, yet they both bow to the sense.

So we see in 4 Edw. VI. Colthurst's case, a 4 E. 6. Com. man leaseth to J. S. a house, si ipse vellet habi-case. tare, & residence esse; there the word (si) amounts to a condition subsequent; for he could not be resident before he took the state; and so via ver-sa may ita quod be precedent, for else it must be idle or void. But I go farther, for I say ita quod, though it be good words of condition, yet more properly

Digg's case, 42 Eliz. Co. p. f. 173.

properly it is neither condition precedent nor fubfequent, but rather a qualification, or form, or adherent to the acts, whereto it is joined, and made part of their essence, which will appear evidently by other cases. For allow it had been thus, so that the deed of declaration be inrolled within fix months, this is all one, as by deed inrolled within fix months, as it is faid in Digg's case 42 Eliz. f. 173. That by deed indented to be inrolled is all one with deed indented and inrolled. but a modus faciendi, a description, and of the same nature is the ita quad: fo if it had been thus, it shall be lawful for Sir Thomas to declare, so that the declaration be with the confent of my lord chief justice, is it not all one with the more compendious form of penning, that Sir Thomas shall declare with the confent of my lord chief justice? And if it had been thus, fo that Sir John within fix months after such declaration shall obtain the consent of my lord chief justice, should not the uses have expected? but these you will say are forms, and circumstances annexed to the conveyance required; why furely any collateral matter coupled by the ita quod is as strong? If the ita quod had been that Sir John Stanbope within fix months should have paid my lady 1000 1. or entred into bond, never more to disturb her, or the like, all these make but one entire idea or notion, how that his power should not be categorical, or fimple at pleasure, but hypothetical, and qualified, and restrained, that is to say, not the one without the other, and they are parts incorporated into the nature and essence of the authority itself.

THE third reason is the justice of the law in taking words fo, as no material part of the parties intent perish: for as one faith prastat torquere verba quam bomines, better wrest words out of place than my lady Stanbope out of her jointure, that was meant to her. And therefore it is ele-

gantly

gant

vou

and

quan

atto

part

Ran

abh

Will

fo

Litt

a fti

thei

it fo ted

and

avo

S in :

frar

ten

der frai

fha!

S

a w

not g00

to 1

not

thi

kin

and

and

tak

lad

ref

ly

ub-

or

and

evi-

nus.

fix ith-

liz.

lled

t is

ame

, it

that

ord

om-

hall

ce?

hin

the

the

are

ey-

tter

ita

fix

en-

the

ion,

, or

ali-

one

-0q

ho-

in

par-

uere

t of

ure, ele-

ntly

gantly faid in Fitz-Williams's case, which I vouched before, though words be contradictory, and (to use the phrase of the book) pugnant tanquam ex diametro; yet the law delighteth to make attonement, as well between words, as between parties, and will reconcile them, so as they may stand, and abhorreth a vacuum, as well as nature abhorreth it; and as nature to avoid a vacuum will draw substances contrary to their propriety, so will the law draw words. Therefore saith Littleton, if I make a feoffment reddendo rent to a stranger, this is a condition to the feoffor, rather than it shall be void, which is quite cross; it founds a rent, it works a condition, it is limited to a third person, it inureth to the feoffor; and yet the law favoureth not conditions, but to avoid a vacuum.

So in the case of 45 E. III. a man gives land 45 E. 3. in frank-marriage, the remainder in see. The frank-marriage is first put, and that can be but by tenure of the donor; yet rather than the remainder should be void, though it be last placed, the frank-marriage being but a privilege of estate shall be destroyed.

So 33 H.6. Tressham's case: the King granteth a wardship, before it fall; good, because it cannot inure by covenant, and if it should not be good by plea, as the book terms it, it were void: so that, no, not in the King's case, the law will not admit words to be void.

So then the intent appears most plainly, that this act of Sir John should be actus geminus, a kind of twine to take back, and to give back, and to make an exchange, and not a resumption; and therefore upon a conceit of repugnancy, to take the one part, which is the privation of my lady's jointure, and not the other, which is the restitution or compensation, were a thing utterly injurious in matter, and absurd in construction.

what theretoreds is ele-

Thean !!

THE fourth reason is out of the nature of the conveyance, which is by way of use, and therefore ought to be construed more favourably according to the intent, and not literally or firiet. ly: for although it be faid in Frene and Dillon's case, and in Fitz-Williams's case, that it is safe so to construe the statute of 27 H. VIII. as that uses may be made subject to the rules of the common law, which the professors of the law do know, and not leave them to be extravagant and irregular; yet if the late authorities be well marked, and the reason of them, you shall find this difference, that uses in point of operation are reduced to a kind of conformity with the rules of the common law, but that in point of exposition of words, they retain somewhat of their ancient nature, and are expounded more liberally according to the intent; for with that part the statute of 27. doth not meddle. And therefore if the question be, whether a bargain and sale upon condition be good to reduce the state back without an entry; or whether, if a man make a feoffment in fee to the use of John a Style for years, the remainder to the right heirs of John a Downe, this remainder be good or no; these cases will follow the grounds of the common law for polfessions, in point of operation; but so will it not be in point of exposition.

For if I have the manor of Dale, and the manor of Sale lying both in Vale, and I make a lease for life of them both, the remainder of the manor of Dale, and all other my lands in Vale to John a Style, the remainder of the manor of Sale to John a Downe, this latter remainder is void, because it comes too late, the general words having carried it before to John a Style. But put it by way of use; a man makes a feoffment in fee of both manors, and limits the use of the manor of Dale, and all other the lands in Vale, to the use of himself, and his wife for her

jointure,

join

of

join

jud

by

latt

to I

to

84.

the

cust

be

in

tha

fen

of !

wh

fho

à ci

a c

An

1

ate

Th

rife

WO

viz

an ly,

for

and

tha

law

atei

per

jun

tair

per

1

jointure, and of the manor of Sale, to the use of himself alone. Now his wife shall have no jointure in the manor of Sale; and fo was it The case of

judged in the case of the manor of Odiam.

the

ere

ac-

rict-

lon's

e fo

that

om-

do

and

well

find

are ules

ofi-

an-

ally the

e if

pon

ithoff-

ars,

me, will

-loo

not

the

e a

the

ale

of

is

eral

yle.

off-

use

in

her

re,

And therefore our case is more strong, being by way of use, and you may well construe the latter part to controul and qualify the first, and to make it attend and expect; nay, it is not amis to see the case of Peryman 41 Eliz. Coke p. 5. f. 41 Eliz. Co. 84. where by a custom a livery may expect; for p. 5. f. 84. the case was, that in the manor of Porchester, the custom was, that a feoffment of land should not be good, except it were presented within a year in the court of the manor, and there ruled that it was but actus inchoatus, till it was prefented; now if it be not merely against reason of law, that fo folemn a conveyance as livery, which keeps state, (I tell you) and will not wait, should expect a farther perfection, a fortiori may a conveyance in use, or declaration of use receive a confummation by degrees, and feveral acts. And thus much for the main point.

Now for the objection of the word (immediate,) it is but light, and a kind of fophistry. They fay that the words are, that the uses shall rife immediately after the declaration, and we would have an interpolition of an act between, viz. that there should be a declaration first, then a new affurance within the fix months; and lastly, the uses to rise; whereunto the answer is easy; for we have shewed before, that the declaration and the new affurance are in the intent of him that made the conveyance, and likewise in eye of law, but as one compounded act. So as immediately after the declaration must be understood of a perfect and effectual declaration, with the ad-

juncts and accouplements expressed.

So we see in 49 E. III. f. 11. If a man be at- 49 E. 3. f. 11. tainted of felony, that holds lands of a common person, the King shall have his year, day and

waste: but when? not before an office found: and yet the words of the flatute of prærogativa Regis are, Rex babebit catalla felonum, & si ipsi babent liberum tenementum, fatim capiatur in manus domini, & rex babebit annum, diem, & vafrum: and here the word fratim is understood of the effectual and lawful time, that is after office found.

2 H. 4.f. 17.

So in 2 H. IV. f. 17. it appears that by the statute of Acton Burnell, if the debt be acknowledged, and the day past, that the goods of the debtors shall be fold statim, in French, mainetenant; yet nevertheless this statim shall not be understood, not before the process of law requisite passed, that is, the day comprised in the extent.

17 H. 8. f. 19.

So it is said 27 H. VIII. f. 19. by Audley the chancellor, that the prefent tense shall be taken for the future, a fortiori fay I the immediate future tense may be taken for a distant future tense: as if I be bound that my fon being of the age of twenty-one years shall marry your daughter, and that he be now of twelve years; yet this shall be understood, when he shall be of the age of twentyone years. And fo in our case immediately after the declaration is intended, when all things shall be performed, that are coupled with the faid declaration.

Bur in this I doubt I labour too much; for no man will be of opinion, that it was intended that the lady Stanbope should be six whole months without either the old jointure or the new; but that the old should expect until the new were fettled without any interim. And so I conclude this course of atonements (as Fitz-Williams's case calls it) whereby I have proved, that all the words by a true marshalling of the acts may stand according to the intent of the parties.

I May add tanquam ex abundanti, that if both clauses do not live together, they must both die

together;

to

C

t

d

f

V

a

C

b

t

t

b

a

Þ

together; for the law loves neither fractions of estates, nor fractions of constructions: and therefore in Jermin and Askew's case, 37 Eliz. a man Jermin and did devise lands in tail with proviso, that if the Askew's case devisee did attempt to alien, his estate should cease, as if he were naturally dead. Is it said there, that the words, as if he were naturally dead, shall be void, and the words that his estate shall cease? good! No, but the whole shall be void. And it is all one reason of a so that, as of an as if, for they both suspend the sentence.

So if I make a leafe for life, upon condition he shall not alien, nor take the profits, shall this be good for the first part, and void for the se-

cond? No, but it shall be void for both.

So if the power of declaration of uses had been thus penn'd, that Sir John Stanbope might by his deed indented declare new uses, so that the deed were inrolled before the mayor of St. Albans, who hath no power to take inrollments; or so that the deed were made in such fort, as might not be made void by parliament: in all these and the like cases the impossibility of the last part doth strike upwards and infect, and destroy the whole clause. And therefore, that all the words may stand, is the first and true course; that all the words be void is the second and probable; but that the revoking part should be good, and the assuring part void, hath neither truth nor probability.

Now come I to the fecond point, how this value should be measured, wherein methinks you are as ill a measurer of values, as you are an expounder of words; which point I will divide, first considering what the law doth generally intend by the word value; and secondly to see what special words may be in these clauses, either to draw it to a value of a present arrentation, or to un-

derstand it of a just and true value.

THE

her; tadiogos

pod signi vale siedacio.

and
ll be
ntyafter
shall
defor
nded

nths

but

were

lude

case

ords

ac-

both

id :

tiva

zpsi

ma-

va-

of

ffice

sta-

ow-

the

ant;

der-

ifite

ex-

the

ken

ture

: as

W

h

cl

n

of

na

W

it

ly

no

THE word value is a word well known to the law, and therefore cannot be (except it be willingly minunderstood.) By the common law there is upon a warrant a recovery in value. I put the case therefore that I make a seossement in see with warranty of the manor of Dale, being worth 201. per annum, and then in lease for 20 s. The lease expires; (for that is our case, though I hold it not needful) the question is, whether upon an eviction there shall not be recovered from me land to the value of 201.

So if a man give land in frank-marriage then rented at 40 l. and no more worth; there defcendeth other lands, let perhaps for a year or two for 20 l. but worth 80 l. shall not the donee be at li-

berty to put this land in hotchpot.

So if two partners be in tail, and they make partition of lands equal in rent, but far unequal in value, shall this bind their issues? By no means; for there is no kalendar fo false to judge of values, as the rent, being sometimes improved, fometimes ancient, fometimes where great fines have been taken, sometimes where no fines; so as in point of recompence you were as good put false weights into the hands of the law, as to bring in this interpretation of value by a present arrentation. But this is not worth the speaking to in general; that which giveth colour, is the special words in the clause of revocation, that the 20 1. value should be according to the rents then answered; and therefore that there should be a correspondence in the computation likewise of the recompence. But this is so far from countenancing that exposition, as, well noted, it crosseth it; for opposita juxta se posita magis elucescunt: first, it may be the intent of Sir Thomas in the first clause was double, partly to exclude any land in demesne, partly knowing the land was double, and as some say quadruple better than the rent, he would

would have the more scope of revocation under his 20 l. value.

Bur what is this to the clause of recompence? first, are there any words secundum computationem prædistam? There are none. Secondly, doth the clause rest upon the words similis valoris? No. but joineth tantum & similis valoris: confound not predicaments; for they are the mere-stones of reason. Here is both quantity and quality; nay he faith farther within the fame towns. Why? marry it is fomewhat to have men's poffessions lie about them, and not dispersed. So it must be as much, as good, as near; so plainly doth the intent appear, that my lady should not be a loser. totte conservation of the second

For the point of the notice it was discharged by the court.

Ben die glat gewinne als and and any at comment

the state of the s Marie Republic and the second second

shed might come a contract to the contract of of a monofetible, the and association

With notice the loss of here the home control on the

THAT I'M STORY OF TO WINDOWS AND LONG ental september of the control of the september of the se

Halffrentent han behran bei Mean too wood

distribution the course, and the talking of the Control and the special the state of the control of the

Purple and the look to be the control of the state of

(1997) the content of the property (1997) the content to the same

and the short on the same of the south of the

states, that aday is to be bed in the Bush Bush Bush Bush Bush

non promise a merity of the community had the de-THE Q3

Marketonico più one name on all mad and this

1. fe it

he

is

he

th

an nd

en dor

li-

ce al

10 ge d, es

fo ut to

nt 19 he

ne 211 a he

nt; it

fe end

he ld

1.200

242

. Commented Call Hat, and Wermoreland, ". itely the lorders upon highling. Now the mid-

same and the this condition we insed not the

a record our own have, for we feethe countries

JURISDICTION

cint mi ai doci O.E. THE a and avoya far

MARCHES.

The effect of the first argument of the King's follicitor-general, in maintaining the jurifdiction of the council of the marches over the four shires.

HE question for the present is only upon the statute of 34 H. VIII. and though it be a great question, yet it is contracted into finall room; for it is but a true construction of a monofyllable, the word marches.

THE exposition of all words resteth upon three proofs, the propriety of the word, and matter

precedent and subsequent.

MATTER precedent concerning the intent of those that speak the words, and matter subsequent touching the conceit, and understanding of those that construe and receive them.

FIRST therefore as to vis termini, the force and propriety of the word; this word (marches) fignifieth no more but limits, or confines, or borders, in latin limites, or confinia, or contermina; and thereof was derived at the first marchio, a marquels, which was comes limitaneus.

Now these limits cannot be linea imaginaria, but it must have some contents and dimensions, and that can be no other but the counties adjacent:

cen der of i late dle and

tha **Iha** fen: be i

fort con cou Shir lord fest unc

but

ed.

all the fore tha fhir cou

 E_{n_j} par ma no the

of rife pre and

pla che cent: and for this construction we need not wander out of our own state, for we see the counties of Northumberland, Camberland, and Westmoreland, lately the borders upon Scotland. Now the middle shires were commonly called the east, west, and middle marches.

To proceed therefore to the intention of those, that made the statute in the use of this word; I shall prove that the parliament took it in this

fense by three several arguments.

THE first is, that otherwise the word should be idle; and it is a rule, verba funt accipienda, ut sortiantur effectum: for this word (marches) as is confessed on the other side, must be either for the counties marches, which is our sense, or the lord-ships marchers, which is theirs; that is, such lordships, as by reason of the incursions and insessations of the Welch in ancient time, were not under the constant possession of either dominion, but like the batable ground where the war played. Now if this latter sense be destroyed, then all equivocation ceaseth.

That it is destroyed, appears manifestly by the statute of 27 H. VIII. made seven years before the statute, of which we dispute; for by that statute all the lordships marchers are made shire-ground, being either annexed to the ancient counties of Wales, or to the ancient counties of England, or erected into new counties, and made parcel of the dominion of Wales, and so no more marches after the statute of 27. So as there were no marches in that sense at the time of making of

the statute of 34.

11195

1,5

er

on

it

ed

on

ee

er

of

le-

ng

ce

es)

or-

a;

a

ias

ns,

ja-

The second argument is from the comparing of the place of the starute, whereupon our doubt riseth, (viz.) that there shall be and remain a lord president and council in the dominion of Wales, and the marches of the same, &c. with another place of the same statute, where the word (marches) is lest out; for the rule is, opposita juxta se

Q 4

posita

posita magis elucescunt. There is a clause in the statute, which gives power and authority to the King to make and alter laws for the weal of his subjects of his dominion of Wales, there the word (marches) is omitted; because it was not thought reasonable to invest the King with a power to alter the laws, which is the subjects birth-right in any part of the realm of England; and therefore by the omission of the word (marches) in that place you may manifestly collect the signification of the word in the other, that is, to be meant of the sour counties of England.

The third argument which we will use is this: the council of the marches was not erected by the act of parliament, but confirmed; for there was a president and council long before in E. IV. his time, by matter yet appearing; and it is evident upon the statute itself, that in the very clause which we now handle, it referreth twice to the usage, as heretofore hath been used.

This then I infer, that whatfoever was the King's intention in the first erection of this court, was likewise the intention of the parliament in the establishing thereof, because the parliament builded but upon an old foundation.

THE King's intention appeareth to have had three branches, whereof every of them doth ma-

nifestly comprehend the four shires.

THE first was the better to bridle the subject of Wales, which at that time was not reclaimed; and therefore it was necessary for the president and council there to have jurisdiction and command over the English shires; because that by the aid of them, which were undoubted good subjects, they might the better govern and suppress those that were doubtful subjects.

And if it be said that it is true, that the four shires were comprehended in the commission of over and terminer, for the suppressing of riots and misdemeanors, but not for the jurisdiction of a

court

COL

vas

the

der

mi

as

it 1

bet

civ

to

ter

fut

an

fhi

ha

W

Bu

bei

wr

mi

ma fio

fho

Wi

the

ver

for

tha

On.

he

au

Ia

me

rul

for

he

he his

ord ght

to

ght

re-

in ifi-

be

is: by

ere

IV.

Viery

ice

the

art, in

ent

nad na-

ect

cd:

ent

m-

by ub-

ress

our,

of and

fa

urt

court of equity; to that I answer, that there commission of over and terminer was but gladius in vagina, for it was not put in practice amongst. them; for even in punishment of riots and misdemeanors, they proceeded not by their commission of over and terminer by way of jury, but as a council by way of examination. And again it was necessary to strengthen that court for their better countenance with both jurisdictions, as well civil and criminal, for gladius gladium juvat.

THE fecond branch of the King's intention was to make a better equality of commerce, and intercourse in contracts and dealings between the fubjects of Wales and the subjects of England; and this of necessity must comprehend the four shires: for otherwise, if the subject of England had been wronged by the Welch on the fides of Wales, he might take his remedy nearer hand. But if the fubject of Wales, for whose weal and benefit the statute was chiefly made, had been wronged by the English in any of the shires, he might have fought his remedy at Westminster.

THE third branch of the King's intent was to make a convenient dignity and state for the manfion and resiance of his eldest son, when he should be created Prince of Wales, which likewile must plainly include the four shires: for otherwise to have sent primogenitum Regis to a government, which without the mixture of the four thires (as things then were) had more peril than honour or command; or to have granted him only a power of lieutenancy in those shires, where he was to keep his state, not adorn'd with some authority civil, had not been convenient.

So that here I conclude the second part of that I am to fay touching the intention of the parliament precedent.

Now touching the construction subsequent, the rule is good, optimus legum interpres consuetudo; for our labour is not to maintain an usage against a sta-

T

THE JURISDICTION OF THE MARCHES.

a starure, but by an usage to expound a statute; for no man will say, but the word (marches)

will bear the fenfe, that we give it.

This usage or custom is fortified by four notable circumstances; first that it is ancient and not late, or recent; secondly, it is authorized and not popular, or vulgar; thirdly, that it hath been admitted and quiet, and not litigious or interrupted; and fourthly, when it was brought in question, which was but once, it hath been affirmed judicio controverso.

For the first, there is record of a president and council, that hath exercised and practised jurisdiction in these shires, as well fixty years before the statute, viz. since 18 E. IV. as the like number of years since: so that it is janus bifrons, it hath a face backwards from the statute, as well

as forwards.

Pon the fecond, it hath received these allowances by the practice of that court, by fuits originally commenced there by remaining from the courts of Westminster, when causes within those shires have been commenced here above; sometimes in chancery, sometimes in the star-chamber, by the admittance of diverse great learned men, and great judges, that have been of that council, and exercifed that jurisdiction; as at one time Bromley, Morgan, and Brook, being the two chief justices, and chief baron, and diverse others, by the King's learned council, which always were called to the penning of the King's instructions; and lastly, by the King's instructions themselves, which though they be not always extant, yet it is manifest that since 17 H. VIII. when Princels Mary went down, that the four thires were ever comprehended in the instructions, either by name, or by that, that amounts to fo much. So as it appears that this usage or practice hath not been an obscure custom practised by the multitude, which is many times erroneous, but authorized

for lus 1

till

A

atto war ftate

ftarand

lent und non com

frip call fubr

the

and in t

thy

the for the

2

pife

ı

for as it is vera von to say, maximus erroris populus magister; so it is dura von to say, maximus erroris princeps magister.

For the third, it was never brought in question

till 16 Eliz, in the case of one Windt.

And for the fourth, the controversy being moved in that case, it was referred to Gerrard attorney, and Bromley sollicitor, which was afterwards chancellor of England, and had his whole state of living in Shropshire and Worcester, and by them reported to the lords of the council in the star-chamber, and upon their report decreed,

and the jurifdiction affirmed.

te;

ies)

ta-

not

and een

ter-

in

af-

ent

fed

be-

like

ons,

well

-Wo

ori-

the

ofe

me-

am-

ned

hat?

one

two

0-

al-

in-

ons

ex-

III.

ires

her

ich.

ath

nul-

ho-

zed

LASTLY, I will conclude with two manifest badges and tokens, though but external, yet violent in demonstration, that these sour shires were understood by the word marches; the one the denomination of that council, which was ever in common appellation termed and styled the council of the marches, or in the marches, rather than the council of Wales, or in Wales, and denominations a digniera. If it had been intended lord-ships marchers, it had been, as if one should have called my lord mayor, my lord mayor of the suburbs. But it was plainly intended of the sour lands of the suburbs. But it was plainly intended of the sour lands.

And the other is of the perpetual refiance; and manfion of the council, which was everntore; in the fhires, and to imagine that a court should not have jurisdiction, where it sitteth, is a thing preserve improbable, for they should be tanquant

pifcis in arido. Entre la mationadas and al mysters

w piaco

So as upon the whole matter, I conclude that: the word (marches) in that place by the natural fense, and true intent of the statute, is meant of the four shires.

ton occan an countury stational cruciused by sire mul

and be will it is and thin its a mongouse but atmos

The

the lindername and confermed the dister

The effect of that, that was spoken by serjeant Hutton and serjeant Harris, in answer of the former argument, and for the excluding of the jurisdiction of the marches in the four shires.

THAT, which they both did deliver, was reduced to three heads.

wall thus arrefrence, mi unital

THE first, to prove the use of the word (mar-

ches) for lordships marchers.

THE second to prove the continuance of that use of the word, after the statute of 27. that made the lordships marchers shire-grounds; where-upon it was inferred, that though the marches were destroyed in nature, yet they remained in name.

THE third was fome collections, they made upon the statute of 34. whereby they inferred that that statute intended that word in that signification.

For the first, they did allege diverse statutes before 27 H. VIII. and diverse book-cases of law in print, and diverse offices and records, wherein the word (marches) of Wales was understood of the lordships marchers.

THEY said farther, and concluded, that whereas we shew our sense of the word but rare, they shew theirs common and frequent; and whereas we shew it but in a vulgar use and acceptation, they shew theirs in a legal use in statutes, authorities of books, and ancient records.

THEY said farther, that the example we brought of marches upon Scotland, was not like, but rather contrary; for they were never call'd marches of Scotland, but the marches of England:

whereas

wl

9110

die

wh

tre

the

use

the

WO

con

pre

Wathis

mit

nee

the

ing,

tern

ceed

be

muc

lity

ther

or n

Stati

itati

whereas the statute of 34. doth not speak of the marches of England, but of the marches of Wales.

THEY faid farther, that the county of Worcester did in no place or point touch upon Wales, and therefore that county could not be termed marches.

To the second they produced three proofs; first, some words in the statute of 32 H. VIII. where the statute providing for a form of trial for treason committed in Wales, and the marches thereof, doth use that word, which was in time after the statute of 27. whereby they prove the use of the word continued.

THE second proof was out of two places of the statute, whereupon we dispute, where the word marches is used for the lordships marchers.

The third proof was the style and form of the commission of oyer and terminer even to this day, which run to give power and authority to the president and council there, infra principalitat. Walliae, and infra the four counties by name, with this clause farther, & marchias Walliae eisdem comitatibus adjacent': whereby they infer two things strongly, the one that the marches of Wales must need be a distinct thing from the sour counties; the other that the word (marches) was used for the lordships marchers long after both statutes.

They said farther, that otherwise the proceeding, which had been in the sour new erected counties of Wales by the commission of oyer and terminer, by sorce whereof many had been proceeded with both for life, and otherways, should be called in question, as coram non judice, insomuch as they neither were part of the Principality of Wales, nor part of the four shires; and therefore must be contained by the word (marches) or not at all.

For the third head, they did insist upon the statute of 34. and upon the preamble of the same statute.

THE

ant ar-

of

172

ken

re-

nar-

that that ereches

d in

nade rred fig-

law erein d of

they ereas

we like, all'd

and:

THE title being an act for certain ordinances in the King's Majesty's dominion and principality of Wales; and the preamble being for the tender zeal and affection that the King bears to his Subjects of Wales. And again, at the humble suit and petition of his subjects of Wales: whereby they infer that the statute had no purpose to extend or intermeddle with any part of the King's dominions or subjects, but only within Wales.

And for usage and practice they said, it was

nothing against an act of parliament.

And for the instructions, they pressed to see the instructions immediately after the statute made.

AND for the certificate and opinions of Gerrard and Bromley, they faid they doubted not, but that if it were now referred to the attorney and follicitor, they would certify as they did.

And lastly, they relied, as upon their principal strength, upon the president of that, which was done of the exempting of Cheshire from the late jurisdiction of the said council; for they faid, that from 34 of H. VIII. until 2 of Queen Eliz. the court of the marches did usurp jurisdiction upon that county, being likewife adjacent to Wales, as the other four are; but that in the eleventh year of Queen Elizabeth aforesaid, the fame being questioned at the suit of one Radforde, was referred to the Lord Dyer, and three other judges, who by their certificate, at large remaining of record in the chancery, did pronounce the faid shire to be exempted, and that in the conclusion of their certificate they give this reason, because it was no part of the principality, of marches of Wales. By which reason they say it should appear, their opinion was, that the word marches could not extend to counties adjacent. This was the substance of their defence.

611

vd:

di

W

W of

th

Ļit

W

fhi is

an

pr

1736 We

tio

th

W

No

CO

an ha

for

th

no

am

fai

tha wh pro being an act for certain and nances in

The reply of the King's sollicitor to the arguments of the two serjeants.

HAVING divided the substance of their arguments (ut supra) he did pursue the same division in his reply, observing nevertheless both a great redundancy, and a great defect in that, which was spoken. For touching the use of the word (marches) great labour had been taken, which was not denied: but touching the intent of the parliament, and the reasons to demonstrate the same, which were the life of the question,

little or nothing had been spoken.

And therefore as to the first head, that the word marches had been often applied to the lordships marchers, he said it was the sophism, which is called sciomachia, fighting with their shadows, and that the found of fo many statutes, so many printed book-cases, so many records were nomina magna, but they did not press the question; for we grant that the word marches hath fignifications, fometimes for the counties, fometimes for the lordships marchers, like as Northampton, and Warwick is sometimes taken for the towns of Northampton and Warwick, and sometimes for the counties of Northampton and Warwick. And Dale and Sale are sometimes taken for the villages or hamlets of Dale and Sale, and fometimes taken for the parishes of Dale and Sale: and therefore that the most part of that they had faid, went not to the point.

To that answer, which was given to the example of the middle shires upon Scotland, it was said, it was not adidem; for we used it to prove that the word marches may and doth refer to whole counties; and so much it doth Manifestly prove; neither can they deny it. But then they

pinch

The

es in

ten-

e fuit

o ex-

ing's

: Was

e the

ade.

Ger-

not,

orney

rinci

which

n the

they

Dueen

rifdic-

ent to

the e-

d, the

dforde,

other

main-

ce the

e con-

eafon,

ty, or

y fay

at the

adja-

nce.

d.

s.

pinch upon the addition, because the English counties adjacent upon Scotland are called the marches of England, and the English counties adjacent upon Wales are called the marches of Wales; which is but a difference in phrase: for fometimes limits and borders have their names of the inward country, and fometimes of the outward country; for the distinction of exclusive and inclusive is a distinction both in time and place; as we fee that that, which we call this day fortnight. excluding the day, the French and the law-phrase calls this day fifteen days, or quindena including the day. And if they had been called the marches upon Wales, or the marches against Wales, then it had been clear and plain; and what difference between the banks of the sea, and the banks against the sea? So that he took this to be but a toy, or cavillation, for that phrases of speech are ad placitum, & recipiunt casum.

As to the reason of the map, that the county of Worcester doth no way touch upon Wales, it is true, and I do find when the lordships marchers were annexed, some were laid to every other of the three shires, but none to Worcester. And no doubt but this emboldened Wynd to make the claim to Worcester, which he durst not have thought on for any of the other three. But it salls out well that that, which is the weakest in probability, is strongest in proof; for there is a case ruled in that more than in the rest. But the true reason is, that usage must over-rule propriety of speech; and therefore if all commissions, and instructions, and practices, have coupled these four shires, it is not the map that will

To the second head he gave this answer. First, he observed in general that they had not shewed one statute, or one book-case, or one record (the commissions of oyer and terminer only excepted) wherein the word (marches) was used for

lordships

f

11

it

CO

te

lę

13

as

tr

lig.

th

on of

or shi

tut

mi wh

we elfe

COL

nec

the

sw

ma

fever them.

lifb

the

ada

of

for

of

out-

and

as

ght,

rafe

ling

nar-

iles,

dif-

the

be

of

nty, it

rch-

ther

And

the

nave

ut it

t in

is a

But

pro-

mif-

cou-

will

First,

wed

cord

ex-

d for

Thips

lordships marchers since the statute of 34. So that it is evident, that as they granted the nature of those marches was destroyed and extinct by 27; so the name was discontinued soon after, and did but remain a very small while, like the sound of a bell, after it hath been rung, and as indeed it is usual when names are altered, that the old name, which is expired, will continue for a small time.

SECONDLY, he said, that whereas they had made the comparison, that our acceptation of the word was popular, and theirs was legal, because it was extant in book-cases, and statutes, and records, they must needs confess that they are beaten from that hold: for the name ceased to be legal clearly by the law of 27. which made the alteration in the thing itself, whereof the name is but a shadow; and if the name did remain asterwards, then it was neither legal, nor so much as vulgar, but it was only by abuse, and by a trope or catachress.

THIRDLY, he shewed the impossibility how that signification should continue, and be intended by the statute of 34. For if it did, it must be in one of these two senses, either that it was meant of the lordships marchers made part of Wales, or of the lordships marchers annexed to the sour shires of England.

For the first of these, it is plainly impugned by the statute itself: for the first clause of the statute doth set forth that the principality and dominion of Wales shall consist of twelve shires; wherein the four new erected counties, which were formerly lordships marchers, and whatsoever else was lordships marchers annexed to the ancient counties of Wales is comprehended; so that of necessity all that territory or border must be Wales; then solloweth the clause immediately, whereupon we now differ, (viz.) that there shall be and remain a president and council in the principality of R

Wales, and the marches of the same; so that the parliament could not forget fo foon what they had faid in the clause next before: and therefore by the marches they meant fomewhat elfe besides Then, if they fly to the that which was Wales. fecond fignification, and fay that it was meant by the lordships marchers annexed to the four English shires, that device is merely nuper nata oratio, a mere fiction and invention of wit, croffed by the whole stream and current of practice; for if that were fo, the jurisdiction of the council should be over part of those shires, and in part not; and then in the fuits commenced against any of the inhabitants of the four shires, it ought to have been laid or shew'd that they dwelt within the ancient lordships marchers, whereof there is no shadow that can be shewed.

THEN he proceeded to the three particulars. And for the statute of 32. for trial of treason, he faid it was necessary that the word (marches) fhould be added to Wales, for which he gave this reason, that the statute did not only extend to the trial of treasons, which should be committed after the statute, but did also look back to treafons committed before: and therefore this statute being made but five years after the statute of 27. that extinguished the lordships marchers, and looking back, as was faid, was fit to be penn'd with words, that might include the preter-perfect tense, as well as the present tense; for if it had rested only upon the word Wales, then a treason committed before the lordships marchers were made part of Wales, might have escaped the

To this also another answer was given, which was, that the word marches as used in that statute; it could not be referred to the four shires, because of the words following, wherewith it is coupled, (viz.) in Wales, and the marches of the same, where the King's writ runs not.

To

n

th

be

fo

of

fe

al

fo

gu

th

M

ve

it

fta

th

di

flu

pr

she

no

rit

di

nu

the

wh

che

Wa

To the two places of the statute of 34 itself, wherein the word (marches) is used for lordships marchers; if they be diligently marked, it is merely sophistry to allege them; for both of them do speak by way of recital of the time past before the statute of 27, as the words themselves being read over will shew without any other enforcement; so that this is still to use the almanack of the old year with the new.

To the commissions of over and terminer, which seemeth to be the best evidence they shew for the continuance of the name in that tropical or abused sense, it might move somewhat, if this form of penning those commissions had been begun since the statute of 27. But we shew forth the commission in 17 H. VIII. when the princess Mary went down, running in the same manner verbatim, and in that time it was proper, and could not otherwise be. So that it appeareth that it was but merely a fac simile, and that notwithstanding the case was altered, yet the clerk of the crown pursued the former president; hurt it did none, for the word (marches) is there super-shous.

And whereas it was faid, that the words in those commissions were effectual, because else the proceeding in the four new erected shires of Wales should be coram non judice, that objection carrieth no colour at all; for it is plain, they have authority by the word Principality of Wales without adding the word marches; and that is proved by a number of places in the statute of 34. where if the word Wales should not comprehend those shires, they should be excluded in effect of the whole benefit of that statute; for the word (marches) is never added in any of these places.

To the third head, touching the true intent of the statute, he first noted how naked their proof was in that kind, which was the life of the que-

R 2

ition

To

ne

ey

re

he

int

our ra-

[ed

for

icil

art

to

hin

e is

ars.

on,

bes)

this

to

tted

rea-

tute

27.

and

nn'd

fect

had

ason

were

the

hich

Ita-

ires,

it is

f the

cortice.

THE JURISDICTION OF THE MARCHES.

stion, for all the rest was but in litera, & in

HE observed also that all the strength of our proof, that concerned that point, they had passed over in silence, as belike not able to answer; for they had said nothing to the first intentions of the erections of the court, whereupon the parliament built nothing to the diversity of penning, which was observed in the statute of 34. leaving out the word marches, and resting upon the word Wales alone, nothing to the resiance, nothing to the denomination, nothing to the continual practice before the statute and after, nothing to the

King's instructions, &c.

As for that, that they gather out of the title and preamble, that the statute was made for Wales, and for the weal and government of Wales, and at the petition of the subjects of Wales, it was little to the purpose; for no man will affirm on our part the four English shires were brought under the jurisdiction of that council, either sirst by the King, or after by the parliament for their own sakes, being in parts no farther remote; but it was for congruities sake, and for the good of Wales, that that commixture was requisite: and turpis est pars, que non congruit cum toto. And therefore there was no reason, that the statute should be made at their petition, considering they were not primi in intentione, but came ex consequenti.

And whereas they say that usage is nothing against an act of parliament, it seems they do voluntarily mistake, when they cannot answer; for we do not bring usage to cross an act of parliament, where it is clear, but to expound an act of parliament, where it is doubtful: and evermore contemporanea interpretatio, whether it be of statute or Scripture, or author whatsoever, is of greatest credit; for to come now above sixty years after by subtilty of wit to expound a statute otherwise than the ages immediately succeed-

ing

ſi

U

ha

fo

do

fo

gr

no

in

of

fup

not

try

ing did conceive it, is expositio contentiosa, and not naturalis. And whereas they extenuate the opinion of the attorney and sollicitor, it is not so easy to do; for first they were famous men, and one of them had his patrimony in the shires; secondly, it was of such weight, as a decree of the council was grounded upon it; and thirdly, it was not unlike, but that they had conferred with the judges, as the attorney and sollicitor do often use in like cases.

117

our

Ted

for

of

·lia-

ing,

ring

ord

to to

rac-

the

and

iles,

and

was

on

un-

first

heir

but

d of

and

ere-

ould

vere

ti.

ning

do

ver;

par-

an

de-

t be

r, is

ixty

fta-

eed-

ing

LASTLY, for the exemption of Cheshire he gave this answer. First, that the certificate in the whole body of it, till within three or four of the last lines, doth rely wholly upon that reason, because it was a county Palatine, and to speak truth, it stood not with any great sense or proportion, that that place, which was privileged and exempted from the jurisdiction of the courts of West-minster, should be meant by the parliament to be subjected to the jurisdiction of that council.

SECONDLY, he faid that those reasons, which we do much insist upon for the sour shires, hold not for Cheshire; for we say it is sit the subject of Wales be not forced to sue at Westminster, but have his justice near hand; so may he have in Cheshire, because there is both a justice for common law and a chancery; we say it is convenient for the prince, if it please the King, to send him down, to have some jurisdiction civil as well as for the peace; so may he have in Cheshire, as earl of Chester. And therefore those grave men had great reason to conceive that the parliament did not intend to include Cheshire.

And whereas they pinch upon the last words in the certificate, viz. that Cheshire was no part of the dominion, nor of the marches, they must supply it with this sense, not within the meaning of the statute; for otherwise the judges could not have discerned of it; for they were not to try the fact, but to expound the statute; and that

R 3 they

they did upon those reasons, which were special to Cheshire, and have no affinity with the four fhires.

And therefore if it be well weighed, that certificate makes against them; for as exceptio firmat legem in casibus non exceptis; so the excepting of that shire by itself doth fortify, that the rest of the shires were included in the very point of difference.

AFTER this he shewed a statute in 18 Eliz. by which provision is made for the repair of a bridge called Chepstow-Bridge between Monmouth and Glocester, and the charge lay in part upon Glocestersbire; in which statute there is a clause, that if the justices of peace do not their duty in levying of the money, they shall forfeit five pounds, to be recovered by information before the council of the marches; whereby he inferred that the parliament would never have affigned the fuit to that court, but that it conceived Glocestersbire to be within the jurisdiction thereof. And therefore he concluded that here is in the nature of a judgment by parliament, that the shires are within the jurisdiction.

The third and last argument of the King's sollicitor in the case of the marches, in reply to serjeant Harris,

THIS case groweth now to some ripeness, and I am glad we have put the other fide into the right way; for in former arguments they laboured little upon the intent of the statute of 34 H. VIII. and busied themselves in effect altogether about the force and use of the word (marches;) but now finding that litera mortua not prodest, they offer at the true state of the question, which is the intent; I am determined therefore

to

ft

re

CC

ft

tı

C

tl

r

F

to reply to them in their own order, ut manifefum sit (as he saith) me nibil aut subterfugere voluisse reticendo, aut obscurare dicendo.

All which hath been spoken on their part,

confifteth upon three proofs.

THE first was by certain inferences to prove the

intent of the statute.

THE fecond was to prove the use of the word (marches,) in their sense long after both statutes; both that of 27. which extincted the lordships marchers, and that of 34. whereupon our question ariseth.

The third was to prove an interruption of that practice and use of jurisdiction, upon which we mainly insist, as the best exposition of the statute.

For the first of these, concerning the intention,

they brought five reasons.

The first was, that this statute of 34. was grounded upon a platform, or preparative of certain ordinances made by the King two years before, viz. 32. In which ordinances there is the very clause, whereupon we dispute, viz. That there should be and remain in the dominion and principality of Wales a president and a council: In which clause nevertheless the word (marches) is left out, whereby they collect that it came into the statute of 34. but as a slip without any farther reach or meaning.

The second was that the mischief before the statute, which the statute means to remedy, was, that Wales was not governed according to similitude or conformity with the laws of England. And therefore, that it was a cross and perverse construction, when the statute laboured to draw Wales to the laws of England, to construe it that it should abridge the ancient subjects of England

of their own laws.

THE third was, that in a case of so great importance, it is like that if the statute had meant

R 4

to

the

the

the

ris,

and
into

laf 34
ogemarpro-

ion,

fore

to

cial

our

er-

nat

of

of

dif-

by

dge

and

Glo-

hat vy-

nds, ncil

the

t to

e to

fore

to include the four shires, it would have carried it in a dark general word, as it were not anter, but would have named the shires to be comprehended.

le

fo

th

in

ot

m

th

ar

m

of

cla

ca

W

th

by

po

ly

an

in

fo

le

bu

ca

ty

no bu

do

32

to en

th

th

lik

br

Fo

THE fourth was the more to fortify the third reason, they observed that the sour shires are remembred and named in several places of the statute, three in number; and therefore it is not like that they would have been forgotten in the

principal place, if they had been meant.

The fifth and last was, that there is no clause of attendance; that the sheriffs of the four shires should attend the lord president and the council, wherein there was urged the example of the acts of parliament, which erected courts; as the court of Augmentations, the court of Wards, the court of Survey, in all which there are clauses of attendance; whereupon they inferred that evermore, where a statute gives a court jurisdiction, it strengtheneth it with a clause of attendance; and therefore no such clause being in this statute, it was like there was no jurisdiction meant. Nay, farther they noted, that in this very statute for the justices of Wales, there is a clause of attendance from the sheriffs of Wales.

In answer to their first reason, they do very well, in my opinion, to consider Mr. attorney's business and mine, and therefore to find out for us evidence and proofs, which we have no time to fearch; for certainly nothing can make more for us than these ordinances, which they produce: for the diversity of penning of that clause in the ordinances, where the word (marches) is omitted, and that clause in the statute, where the word marches is added, is a clear and perfect direction what was meant by that word. The ordinances were made by force, and in pursuance of authority given to the King by the statute of 27. to what did the statute extend, only to Wales? And therefore the word marches in the ordinances is left

lit

out

nd-

ird

re-

Ita-

not

the

use

ires

icil,

acts

urt

ourt

ten-

ore,

it

and

, it

lay,

end-

very

ey's

for

time nore

the

ted,

vord

tion

nces

tho-

. to

And es is

left

left out; but the statute of 34. respected not only Wales, but the commixed government, and therefore the word marches was put in. They might have remembred that we built an argument upon the difference of penning of that statute of 34. itself in the several clauses of the same; for that in all other clauses, which concern only Wales, the word marches is ever omitted; and in that clause alone, that concerneth the jurisdiction of the president and council, it is interted. And this our argument is notably fortified by that they now shew of the ordinances, wherein the very felf same clause, touching the president and council, because the King had no authority to meddle but with Wales, the word marches is omitted. So that it is most plain that this word comes not in by chance or flip, but with judgment and purpole, as an effectual word; for as it was formerly said, opposita juxta se posita magis elucescunt; and therefore I may likewife urge another place in the statute which is left out in the ordinance; for I find there is a clause that the town of Beudley, which is confessed to be no lordship's marcher, but to lie within the county of Worcester; yet because it was an exempted jurisdiction, is by the statute annexed unto the body of the faid county. First, this shews that the statute of 34. is not confined to Wales, and the lordships marchers, but that it intermeddles with Worcestershire. Next do you find any fuch clause in the ordinance of 32? No: Why? Because they were appropriate to Wales. So that in my opinion nothing could enforce our exposition better than the collating of the ordinance of 32. with the statute of 34.

In answer to the second reason, the course, that I see often taken in this cause, makes me think of the phrase of the Psalm, starting aside like a broken bow; so when they find their reasons broken, they start aside to things not in question. For now they speak, as if we went about to

make

ar

W

is

qu

fo

in

gr

m

ve

ap

in

fir

W

W

ft

gr

W

fe

th

it

da

fp

fti

ve

ft

w

na

th

tic

make the four shires Wales, or to take from them the benefit of the laws of England, or their being accounted amongst the ancient counties of England: doth any man say that those shires are not within the circuits of England, but subject to the justices of Wales? Or that they should send but one knight to the parliament, as the shires of Wales do? Or that they may not sue at Westminster, in chancery, or at common law, or the like? No man affirms any such things; we take nothing from them, only we give them a court of summary justice in certain causes at their own doors.

And this is nova dostrina to make fuch an opposition between law and equity, and between formal justice and summary justice. For there is no law under heaven, which is not supplied with equity; for summum jus, summa injuria, or as some have it, summa lex, summa crux. And therefore all nations have equity; but some have law and equity mixed in the same court, which is the worse; and some have it distinguished in several courts, which is the better. Look into any counties Palatine, which are small models of the great government of kingdoms, and you shall

never find any, but had a chancery.

LASTLY, it is strange that all other places do require courts of summary justice, and esteem them to be privileges and graces; and in this cause only they are thought to be servitudes and loss of birth-right. The universities have a court of summary justice, and yet I never heard that scholars complain their birth-right was taken from them. The stannaries have them, and you have lately affirmed the jurisdiction; and yet you have taken away no man's birth-right. The court at Tork, whosoever looks into it, was erected at the petition of the people, and yet the people did not mean to cast away their birth-right. The court of wards is mixed with discretion and equity; and

and yet I never heard that infants and innocents were deprived of their birth-rights. London, which is the feat of the kingdom, hath a court of equity, and holdeth it for a grace and favour; how then cometh this case to be singular? And therefore these be new phrases and conceits proceeding of error or worse; and it makes me think that a sew do make their own desires, the desires of the country, and that this court is desired by the greater number, though not by the greater stomachs.

In answer to the third reason, if men be conversant in the statutes of this kingdom, it will appear to be no new thing to carry great matters in general words without other particular expressing. Consider but of the statute of 26 H. VIII. which hath carried estates tails under the general words of estates of inheritance. Consider of the statute of 16 R. II. of pramunire, and see what great matters are thought to be carried under the word alibi. And therefore it is an ignorant assertion to say that the statute would have named the shires, if it had meant them.

SECONDLY, the statute had more reason to pass it over in general words, because it did not ordain a new matter, but referreth to usage: and though the statute speaks generally, yet usage speaks plainly and particularly, which is the strongest kind of utterance or expressing. Quid

verba audiam, cum facta videam.

And thirdly, this argument of theirs may be strongly retorted against them: for as they infer that the shires were not meant, because they were not included by name; so we infer that they are meant, because they are not excepted by name, as is usual by way of proviso in like cases: and our inference bath far greater reason than theirs, because at the time of the making of the statute, they were known to be under the jurisdiction: And therefore that ought to be most plain-

ly

nort of
own
opween
there
plied
a, or
And
have
which
ed in
into

hem

be-

s of

are t to

fend

es of

min-

es do
fteem
this
es and
court
that

els of

shall

from have have urt at

at the

id not court

uity;

and

ly expressed, which should work a change, and not that, which should continue things, as they were.

m

ufa

far

the

fho

So

W

the

the

cor

gre

we

hav

cle

tion

mo

wh

for

ing

be 1

not

the

fup

dot

con

stat

and

are

mix

the

with

mer

the

the

liam

dict

To:

tieft

chile

In answer to their fourth reason, it makes likewise plainly against them; for there be three places, where the shires be named, the one for the extincting of the custom of Gavelkind; the second for the abolishing of certain forms of assurance which were too light to earry inheritance and freehold; the third for the restraining of certain franchises to that state they were in by a former statute. In these three places the words of the statute are the lordships marchers annexed unto the counties of Hereford, Salop, &c.

Now mark, if the statute conceived the word marches to signify lordships marchers, what needeth this long circumlocution? It had been easilier to have said within the marches. But because it was conceived that the marches would have comprehended the whole counties, and the statute meant but of the lordships marchers annexed; therefore they were enforced to use that periphrasis,

or length of speech. In answer to the fifth reason, I give two several answers; the one, that the clause of attendance is supplied by the word incidents; for the clause of establishment of the court hath that word, with all incidents to the same as heretofore hath been used: For execution is ever incident to justice or jurisdiction. The other, because it is a court, that standeth not by the act of parliament alone, but by the King's instructions, whereto the act refers. Now no man will doubt but the King may supply the clause of attendance; for if the King grant forth a commission of over and terminer, he may command what sheriff he will to attend it; and therefore there is a plain diversity between this case, and the cases they vouch of the court of Wards, Survey, and Augmentations: for they were courts erected de novo by parliament

and

hey

ikes

ree

the

fe-

ffu-

ince

cer-

y a

ords

xed

ord

eed-

ilier

e it

om-

tute

ed;

afis,

eve-

end-

the

that

ofore

t to

is a

nent

the

Cing

the

rmi-

at-

rfity

h of

ons:

rlia

ient,

ment, and had no manner of reference either to usage or instructions; and therefore it was necessary that the whole frame of those courts, and their authority both for judicature and execution, should be described and expressed by parliament. So was it of the authority of the Justices of Wales in the statute of 34. mentioned, because there are many ordinances de novo concerning them; so that it was a new erection, and not a confirmation of them.

Thus have I in confutation of their reasons, greatly, as I conceive, confirmed our own, as it were with new matter; for most of that, they have faid, made for us. But as I am willing to clear your judgments in taking away the objections; fo I must farther pray in aid of your memory for those things, which we have faid; whereunto they have offered no manner of answer; for unto all our proofs which we made, touching the intent of the statute, which they grant to be the spirit and life of this question, they said nothing: as not a word to this: That otherwise the word marches in the statute should be idle or fuperfluous, not a word to this: That the statute doth always omit the word marches in things, that concern only Wales, not a word to this: That the statute did not mean to innovate but to ratify, and therefore if the shires were in before, they are in still: not a word to the reason of the commixed government, as that it was necessary for the reclaiming of Wales to have them conjoyn'd with the shires; that it was necessary for commerce and contracts, and properly for the ease of the subjects of Wales against the inhabitants of the shires; that it was not probable that the parliament meant the Prince should have no jurisdiction civil in that place, where he kept his house. To all these things, which we esteem the weightiest, there is altum filentium, after the manner of children that skip over, where they cannot spell. Now

Now to pass from the intent of the word: first, I will examine the proofs they have brought that the word was used in their sense after the statute 27. and 34. then I will consider what is gained, if they should prove so much; and lastly, I will briefly state our own proofs, touching the use of the word.

For the first, it hath been said, that whereas I called the use of the word marches after the statute of 27. but a little chime, at most of an old word, which foon after vanished, they will now ring us a peal of statutes to prove it; but if it be a peal, I am fure it is a peal of bells, and not a peal of shot: for it clatters, but it doth not strike: for of all that catalogue of statutes I find scarcely one, fave those that were answered in my former argument; but we may with as good reason affirm in every of them the word marches to be meant of the counties marches, as they can of the lordships marchers; for to begin upwards.

THE statute 39 Eliz. for the repair of Wilton-Bridge no doubt doth mean the word marches for the counties; for the bridge itself is in Hereford-(bire, and the statute imposeth the charge of reparation upon Herefordsbire by compulsory means, and permitteth benevolence to be taken in Wales, and the marches; who doubts, but this meant of the other three shires, which have far greater use of the bridge than the remote counties of Wales!

For the statute 5 Eliz. it concerning perjury, it hath a provifo, that it shall not be prejudicial to the council of the marches for punishing of perjury; who can doubt, but that here marches is meant of the shires, considering the perjuries committed in them have been punished in that court as well as in Wales?

For 2 Ed. VI. and the clause therein for restraining tithes of marriage portions in Wales and the marches, why should it not be meant of counties? For if any fuch customs had crept and incroa lord restr

A

orda to b lord whe gene the if ar

of t A VI. rotul take deri are i King limit may ter stati cont B

> for f whe nome call thag fenf fo o

and

ther fide. wha mar

the

is fo

croached

croached into the body of the shires out of the lordships marchers, no doubt the statute meant to restrain them as well there, as in the other places.

rd;

ght

the

is

lly,

the

eas

the

an

will

t if

and

oth

es I

red

ood

ches

can

rds.

ton-

for

ord-

re-

ans,

iles,

t of

use les?

ry,

cial

of

ches

rju-I in

re-

and

un-

in-

AND so for the statute of 32 H. VIII. which ordains that the benefit of that statute for distress to be had by executors, should not extend to any lordship in Wales, or the marches of the same where are paid, because that imports a general release; what absurdity is there, if there the marches be meant for the whole shires? For if any such custom had spread, so far the reason of the statute is alike.

As for the statutes of 37 H. VIII. and 4 Ed. VI. for the making and appointing of the custos rotulorum, there the word marches must needs be taken for limits, according to the etymology and derivation; for the words refer not to Wales, but are thus within England and Wales, and other the King's dominions, marches and territories, that is limits and territories; so as I see no reason, but I may truly maintain my former assertion, that after the lordships marchers were extinct by the statute of 27. the name also of marches was discontinued, and rarely if ever used in that sense.

But if it should be granted that it was now and then used in that sense, it helps them little; for first it is clear that the legal use of it is gone, when the thing was extinct, for nomen est rei nomen; so it remains but abusive, as if one shall call Guletta Carthage, because it was once Carthage; and next, if the word should have both senses, and that we admit an equivocation, yet we so overweigh them upon the intent, as the balance is soon cast.

YET one thing I will note more, and that is that there is a certain confusion of tongues on the other side, and that they cannot well tell themselves what they would have to be meant by the word marches; for one while they say it is meant for the lordships marchers generally; another while

they

they fay that it is meant for the inward marches on Wales fide only; and now at last they are driven to a poor shift, that there should be left some little lordship marcher in the deck, as casus omissus, not annexed at all to any county; but if they would have the statute satisfied upon that only, I fay no more to them, but aguila non capit muscas.

la

to

pl

fh

mo

in

th

co

cel

D

pu

WC

CO

use

ten

to

laft

wh

the

the

ties

ma

pla

cou

Sta

Wit

cou

tho

and

day

con

Put

shes

Now I will briefly remember unto you the

state of our proofs of the word.

First, according to the laws of speech we prove it by the etymology or derivation, because march is the Saxon word for limit, and marchio is comes limitaneus; this is the opinion of Camden and others.

NEXT we prove the use of the word in the like case to be for counties, by the example of the marches of Scotland; for as it is prettily faid in Walker's case by Gaudy, if a case have no coufin, it is a fign it is a bastard, and not legitimate; therefore we have shewed you a cousin, or rather a brother here within our own island of the like use of the word. And whereas a great matter was made that the now middle shires were never called the marches of Scotland, but the marches of England against Scotland, or upon Scotland, it was first answered that that made no difference; because sometimes the marches take their name of the inward country, and fometimes of the outcountry: fo that it is but inclusive and exclusive; as for example, that which we call in vulgar speech this day fortnight excluding the day, that the law calls quindena including the day; and fo likewife, who will make a difference between the banks of the fea, and the banks against the fea, or upon fea? But now to remove all scruple, we shew them Littleton in his chapter of grand serjeanty, where he faith, there is a tenure by Gornage in the marches of Scotland; and we shew them likewife the statute of 25 Ed. III. of labourers,

where they are also called the marches of Scot-

hes dri-

me

Tus,

hey

apit

the

we

mfe

o is

den

the

e of

faid

ou-

ate;

her

like

tter

ever

hes

was

be-

of

out-

ve;

ech

law

ile,

s of

pon

new

12ty,

in

ike-

ers,

ere

THEN we shew some number of bills exhibited to the council there before the statute, where the plaintiffs have the addition of place confessed within the bodies of the shires, and no lord-ships marchers, and yet are laid to be in the marches.

THEN we shew diverse accounts of auditors in the Duchy from H. IV. downwards, where the indorsement is in marchiis Walliæ, and the contents are possessions only of Hereford and Glocestershire (for in Shropshire and Worcestershire the Duchy hath no lands) and whereas they would put it off with a cuique in sua arte credendum, they would believe them, if it were in matter of accounts; we do not allege them as auditors, but as those as speak English to prove the common use of the word, loquendum ut vulgus.

We shew likewise an ancient record of a patent to Harbert in 15 E. IV. where Kilpeck is laid to be in com. Hereford in marchiis Wallia; and lastly, we shew again the statute of 27 E. III. where provision is made, that men shall labour in the fummer, where they dwell in the winter; and there is an exception of the people of the counties of Stafford and Lancasbire, &c. and of the marches of Wales and Scotland; where it is most plain, that the marches of Wales are meant for counties, because they are coupled both with Stafford and Lancashire, which are counties, and with the marches of Scotland which are likewife counties: and as it is informed, the labourers of those four shires do come forth of their shires, and are known by the name of Cokers to this day.

To this we add two things, which are worthy confideration; the one that there is no reason to put us to the proof of the use of this word marches fixty years ago, considering that usage speaks

for

for us; the other that there ought not to be required of us to shew so frequent an use of the word marches of ancient time in our sense, as they shewed in theirs, because there was not the like occasion: for when a lordship marcher was mentioned, it was of necessity to lay it in the marches, because they were out of all counties: but when land is mentioned in any of these counties, it is superfluous to add in the marches; so as there was no occasion to use the word marches, but either for a more brief and compendious speech to avoid the naming of the four shires, as it is in the statute of 25 E. III. and in the indorsement of accounts, or to give a court cognizance and jurisdiction, as in the bills of complaint, or ex abundanti, as in the record of Kilpeck.

THERE resteth the third main part, whereby they endeavour to weaken and extenuate the proofs, which we offer touching practice and pos-

fession, wherein they allege five things.

FIRST, that Bristol was in until 7 Eliz. and then exempted.

SECONDLY, that Cheshire was in until II Eliz.

and then went out.

THIRDLY, they allege certain words in the instructions to Cholmley vice-president in 11 Eliz. at which time the shires were first comprehended in the instructions by name, and in these words annexed by our commission: whereupon they would inser that they were not brought in the statute, but only came in by instructions, and do imagine that when Cheshire went out, they came in.

FOURTHLY, they say that the intermeddling with those four shires before the statute was but an usurpation and toleration rather than any lawful and settled jurisdiction; and it was compared to that, which is done by the judges in their circuits, who end many causes upon petitions.

FIFTHLY, they allege Sir John Mullen's case, where it is said consuetudo non præjudicat veritati.

THERE

I

W

e

th

th

iu

fu

it

tw

fbi

W

mi

of

We

Ge

w

op

no

tha

th

re-

as

was

the

ies;

un-

bes,

ious

, as

ance

or or

reby

the pof-

and

Eliz.

e in-

Eliz.

nded

ords

ould

tute,

agine

dling

but

law-

pared

r cir-

cafe,

ati. HERE There was moved also, though it were not by the council, but from the judges themselves, as an extenuation, or at least an obscuring of the proofs of the usage and practice, in that we shew forth no instructions from 17 H. VIII. to 1 Mariæ.

To these six points I will give answer, and as I conceive with satisfaction.

For Bristoll I say, it teacheth them the right way, if they can follow it; for Bristoll was not exempted by any opinion of law, but was left out of the instructions upon supplication made to the Queen.

For Cheshire we have answered it before, that the reason was, because it was not probable that the statute meant to make that shire subject to the jurisdiction of that council, considering it was not subject to the high courts at Westminster, in regard it was a county Palatine. And whereas they said, that so was Flintshire too, it matcheth not, because Flintshire is named in the statute for one of the twelve shires of Wales.

WE shewed you likewise effectual differences between Cheshire and these other shires; for that Cheshire hath a chancery in itself, and over Cheshire the Princes claim jurisdiction, as earl of Chester; to all which you reply nothing.

THEREFORE I will add this only, that Cheshire went out secundo slumine, with the good will of the state; and this is sought to be evicted adverso slumine, cross the state; and as they have opinion of sour judges for the excluding of Cheshire, so we have the opinions of two great learned men, Gerrard and Bromley for the including of Worcesier; whose opinions, considering it was but matter of opinion, and came not judicially in question, are not inferior to any two of the other; but we say that there is no opposition or repugnancy between them, but both may stand.

For Cholmlies instructions, the words may well stand, that those shires are annexed by commission; for the King's commission or instructions (for those words are commonly confounded) must co-operate with the statute, or else they cannot be annexed. But for that conceit that they should come in but in 11. when Cheshire went out, no man that is in his wits can be of that opinion, if he mark it: for we see that the town of Glocester, &c. is named in the instructions of 1 Mar. and no man I am sure will think that Glocester town should be in, and Glostershire out.

P

ju

er

W

th

W

fh:

pla

an

th

na

tio

for

Wil

Wil

Du

COL

ly

thi

lon

ed

nar

ftru

one

eve

pro

zed

For the conceit that they had but jurisdictionem precariam, the presidents snew plainly the contrary; for they had coercion, and they did fine and imprison, which the judges do not upon petitions; and besides, they must remember that many of our presidents, which we did shew forth, were not of suits originally commenced there, but of suits remanded from hence out of the King's

courts, as to their proper jurisdiction.

For Sir John Mullen's case, the rule is plain and sound, that where the law appears contrary, usage cannot controul law, which doth not at all infringe the rule of optima legum interpres consuctudo; for usage may expound law, though it can-

not over-rule law.

But of the other side I could shew you many cases, where statutes have been expounded directly against their express letter to uphold presidents and usage; as 2, 3 Phil. & Mar. upon the statute of Westminster, that ordained that the judges coram quibus formatum erit appellum shall enquire of the damages, and yet the law ruled that it shall be enquired before the judges of nist prius. And the great reverence given to presidents, appeareth in 39 H. VI. 3 E. IV. and a number of other books; and the difference is exceedingly well taken in Slade's case, Coke's reports 4. that is, where the usage runs but amongst clerks,

clerks, and where it is in the eye and notice of the judge; for there it shall be presumed, saith the book, that if the law were otherwise than the usage hath gone; that either the counsel or the parties would have excepted to it, or the judges ex officio would have discerned of it, and found it; and we have ready for you a kalendar of judges more than sit at this table, that have exercised jurisdiction over the shires in that county.

As for exception, touching the want of certain instructions, I could wish we had them; but the want of them, in my understanding, obscureth the case little. For let me observe unto you, that we have three forms of instructions concerning these shires extant; the first names them not expressly, but by reference it doth, viz. that they shall hear and determine, &c. within any the places or counties within any of their commissions; and we have one of the commissions, wherein they were named; so as upon the matter they are named. And of this form is the ancient instructions before the statute 17 H. VIII. when the Princess Mary went down.

The second form of instructions go farther, for they have the towns, and exempted places within the counties named, with tanquam as well within the city of Glocester, the liberties of the Duchy of Lancaster, &c. as within any of the counties of any of their commissions, which clearly admits the counties to be in before. And of this form are the instructions 1 Mariæ, and so

long until II Eliz.

ell

12;

ofe

ate

ed.

out

in

it:

na-

n I

be

10-

the

did

on

hat

th,

but

g's

ain

ry,

all

ue-

an-

any

di-

efi-

the

the

hall

iled

122/2

efi-

da

ex-

orts

igst

ks,

And the third form, which hath been continued ever fince, hath the shires comprehended by name. Now it is not to be thought, but the instructions which are wanting, are according to one of these three forms, which are extant. Take even your choice, for any of them will serve to prove that the practice there was ever authorized by the instructions here; and so upon the

S 3 whole

whole matter, I pray report to be made to his Majesty, that the president and the council hath jurisdiction according to his instructions, over the four shires, by the true construction of the statute of 34 H. VIII.

A draught of an act against an usurious shift of gain, in delivering of commodities instead of money; made by the lord chancellor Bacon, found amongst his lordship's papers by Dr. Rawley, and recommended by him to be published.

Where As it is an usual practice, to the undoing and overthrowing many young gentlemen, and others, that when men are in necessity, and desire to borrow money, they are answered, that money cannot be had, but that they may have commodities sold unto them upon credit, whereof they may make money as they can: in which course it ever comes to pass, not only that such commodities are bought at extreme high rates, and sold again far under foot to a double loss; but also that the party which is to borrow, is wrapp'd in bonds and counterbonds; so that upon a little money which he receiveth, he is subject to penalties and suits of great value.

BE it therefore enacted by the authority of this present parliament, that if any man after forty days, from the end of this present session of parliament to be accounted, shall sell in gross sale any quantity of wares or commodities unto such a one as is no retain

lera

le

di

ga

212

Sa sh pa

fa

for

po

ler, chapman, or known broker of the same commodities, and knowing that it is bought to be fold again, to belp and furnish any person that tradeth not in the same commodity with money, be shall be without all remedy by law, custom, or decree, or otherwife to recover or demand any satisfaction for the faid wares or commodities, what assurance soever be shall have by bond, surety, pawn or promise of the party, or any other in his behalf. And that all bonds and assurances what soever made for that purpose directly or indirectly, shall be utterly void.

AND be it farther enacted by the authority aforesaid, that every person, which shall after the time aforesaid be used or employed as a broker, mean or procurer, for the taking up of such commodities, shall forfeit for every such offence the sum of one hundred pounds, the same to be, &c. and shall be farther punished by fix months imprisonment, without bail or

mainprise, and by the pillory.

ORDINANCES

MADE

By the Lord Chancellor BACON,

For the better and more regular administration of justice in the chancery, to be daily observed, saving the prerogative of the court.

O decree shall be reversed, altered, or Decrees. explained, being once under the great feal, but upon bill of review; and no bill of review shall be admitted, except it con-

y of tatlera

nis

th

he

a-

u-

ıg

у;

a-

o's

n-

the tle-

ity, bat

120nay

ver are 2111-

arty

ter-

eth,

this

ays,

t to

of the decree, without farther examination of matters in fact, or some new matter which hath risen in time after the decree, and not any new proof which might have been used when the decree was made: nevertheless upon new proof, that is come to light after the decree made, and could not possibly have been used at the time, when the decree passed, a bill of review may be grounded by the special license of the court, and not otherwise.

2. In case of miscasting (being a matter demonstrative) a decree may be explained, and reconciled by an order without a bill of review; not understanding by miscasting any pretended misrating or misvaluing, but only error in the

auditing or numbering.

3. No bill of review shall be admitted, or any other new bill to change matter decreed, except the decree be first obeyed and performed; as if it be for land, that the possession be yielded; if it be for money, that the money be paid; if it be for evidences, that the evidences be brought in; and so in other cases which stand upon the strength of the decree alone.

4. But if any act be decreed to be done which extinguisheth the parties right at the common law, as making of assurance or release, acknowledging satisfaction, cancelling of bonds, or evidences, and the like; those parts of the decree are to be spared until the bill of review be determined; but such sparing is to be warranted by

publick order made in court.

5. No bill of review shall be put in, except the party that prefers it enter into recognizance with sureties for satisfying of costs and damages for

the delay, if it be found against him.

6. No decrees shall be made upon pretence of equity, against the express provision of an act of parliament: nevertheless if the construction of such act of parliament hath for a time gone one

way

te

th

fo

th

na

Ö

ar

of

is

tr

be

en

gr

or

te

ex

fp

of

th

CO

pe

fer

the

up

mi

tio

caf

pu

of

dec

are

par

tim

of

ly

of

th

ew le-

nat

he by

ife.

de-

re-

W;

ded

the

iny

ept s if

fit

for

and

gth

nich

non

OW-

evi-

cree de-

by

the

with

for

e of

A of

n of

one

way in general opinion and reputation, and after by a later judgment hath been controlled, then relief may be given upon matter of equity, for cases arising before the said judgment, because the subject was in no default.

7. IMPRISONMENT for breach of a decree is in nature of an execution, and therefore the custody ought to be straight, and the party not to have any liberty to go abroad, but by special license of the lord chancellor; but no close imprisonment is to be, but by express order for wilful and extraordinary contempts and disobedience, as hath been used.

8. In case of enormous and obstinate disobedience in breach of a decree, an injunction is to be granted sub pana of a sum; and upon affidavit, or other sufficient proof, of persisting in contempt, fines are to be pronounced by the lord chancellor in open court, and the same to be extracted down into the hamper if cause be, by a special order.

9. In case of a decree made for the possession of land, a writ of execution goeth forth; and is that be disobeyed, then process of contempt according to the course of the court against the person to commission of rebellion; and then a series at arms by special warrant, and in case the series at arms cannot find him, or be resisted upon the coming in of the party, and his commitment, if he persist in disobedience, an injunction is to be granted for the possession; and in case that also be disobeyed, then a commission to put him in possession.

of a decree, he is not to be enlarged until the decree be fully performed in all things, which are to be done presently. But if there be other parts of the decree to be performed at days, or times to come, then he may be enlarged by order of court, upon recognizance, with sureties to be

put

put in for the performance de futuro, otherwise not.

fu

ci

pi

po

an

th

bu

tie

it

fp.

m

re

Wi

bu

mo

giv

an

tio

the

in

da

the

pre

be

gra

ed,

vat

be

fur

ter

of

the

- no decree bindeth any person who was not served with process ad audiendum judicium, according to the course of the court, or did appear in person in court.
- bona fide, by conveyance from the defendant before the bill exhibited, and is made no party, neither by bill nor order: but where he comes in pendente lite, and while the fuit is in full profecution, and without any colour of allowance or privity of the court, there regularly the decree bindeth; but if there were any intermission of suit, or the court made acquainted with the conveyance, the court is to give order upon the special matter according to justice.

13. Where causes are dismissed upon full hearing, and the dismission signed by the lord chancellor, such causes shall not be retained again, nor new bill admitted, except it be upon new matter, like to the case of the bill of review.

14. In case of other dismissions, which are not upon hearing of the cause, if any new bill be brought, the dismission is to be pleaded; and after reference and report of the contents of both suits, and consideration taken of the causes of the former dismission, the court shall rule the retaining or dismissing of the new bill according to justice, and the nature of the case.

15. All suits grounded upon wills nuncupative, leases parol, or upon long leases, that tend to the defacing of the King's tenures, for the establishing of perpetuities, or grounded upon remainders put into the crown, to defeat purchasers; or for brokage or rewards to make marriages; or for bargains at play and wagers; or for bargains, for offices contrary to the statute of 2 Edw. VI. or for contracts upon usury or simony, are regularly

larly to be dismissed upon motion, if they be the fole effect of the bill; and if there be no special circumstances to move the court to allow them a proceeding, and all fuits under the value of ten pounds, are regularly to be difmiffed.

16. Dismissions are properly to be prayed, and had, either upon hearing, or upon plea unto the bill, when the cause comes first into the court; but dismissions are not to be prayed after the parties have been at charges of examination, except

it be upon special cause.

17. If the plaintiff discontinue by prosecution, after all the defendants have answered above the fpace of one whole term, the cause is to be difmissed of course without any motion; but after replication put in, no cause is to be dismissed without motion and order of the court.

18. Double vexation is not to be admitted; but if the party fue for the same cause at common law, and in chancery, he is to have a day given to make his election where he will proceed, and in default of such election to be dismissed.

19. Where causes are removed by special certiorari upon a bill, containing matter of equity, the plaintiff is, upon receipt of his writ, to put in bond to prove his fuggestion within fourteen days after the receipt, which if he do not prove, then upon certificate from either of the examiners presented to the lord chancellor, the cause shall be dismissed with costs, and a procedendo to be granted.

20. No injunction of any nature shall be grant- Injunction. ed, revived, diffolved, or stayed upon any pri-

vate petition.

21. No injunction to stay fuits at the law shall be granted upon priority of fuit only, or upon furmise of the plaintiff's bill only; but upon matter confessed in the defendant's answer, or matter of record, or writing plainly appearing, or when the defendant is in contempt for not answering,

urt, ved to to fon

vise

in in berty, s in

pricree a of con-

ecu-

spelear-

hannor mat-

not ll be after fuits, forining

cupatend estamain-

Stice,

s; or s; or gains, v. VI.

regularly or that the debt defired to be stayed appeareth to be old, and hath slept long, or the creditor or the debtor hath been dead some good time be-

fore the fuit brought.

22. Where the defendant appears not, but fits an attachment; or when he doth appear, and departs without answer, and is under attachment for not answering; or when he takes oath, he cannot answer without fight of evidences in the country; or where after answer he sues at common law by attorney, and absents himself beyond sea; in these cases an injunction is to be granted for the stay of all fuits at the common law, until the party answer or appear in person in court, and the court give farther order: but nevertheless upon answer put in, if there be no motion made the same term, or the next general feal after the term, to continue the injunction in regard of the infufficiency of the answer put in, or in regard of the matter confessed in the answer, then the injunction to die and dissolve without any special order.

23. In the case aforesaid, where an injunction is to be granted for stay of suits at the common law, if the like suit be in the chancery, either by scire facias, or privilege, or English bill, then the suit is to be stayed by order of the court, as it is in other courts by injunction, for that the

court cannot enjoin itself.

24. Where an injunction hath been obtained for stay of suits, and no prosecution is had for the space of three terms, the injunction is to fall

of itself without farther motion.

25. Where a bill comes in after an arrest at the common law for a debt, no injunction shall be granted without bringing the principal money into court, except there appear in the defendant's answer, or by sight of writings, plain matter tending to discharge the debt in equity: but if an injunction be awarded and disobeyed, in that case no money shall be brought in, or deposited in regard of the contempt.

26. In-

gra hat for and ter

fer reference land

plor mai gran cafe his cept

land any fuits

30

upo

paid vied strat hand

fel, courr rupte prefe tions.

hath King 26. Injunctions for possession are not to be granted before a decree, but where the possession hath continued by the space of three years, before the bill exhibited, and upon the same title; and not upon any title by lease, or otherwise determined.

27. In case where the desendant sits all the process of contempt, and cannot be sound by the serieant at arms, or resists the serieant, or makes rescue, a sequestration shall be granted of the land in question; and if the desendant render not himself within the year, then an injunction for

the possession.

eth

tor

be-

but

and

ent

an-

un-

non

ea;

the

arty

ourt

wer

rm,

nue

the

on-

die

tion

non

ther

hen

, as

the

ned

for

fall

lt at

shall

ney

int's

end-

f an

that

lited In28. INJUNCTIONS against felling of timber, ploughing up of ancient pastures, or for the maintaining of inclosures, or the like, shall be granted according to the circumstances of the case; but not in case where the desendant upon his answer claimeth an estate of inheritance, except it be where he claimeth the land in trust, or upon some other special ground.

29. No fequestration shall be granted but of sequestrations. lands, leases, or goods in question, and not of any other lands or goods, not contained in the suits.

30. Where a decree is made for rent to be paid out of land, or a sum of money to be levied out of the profits of land, there a sequestration of the same lands being in the desendant's hands may be granted.

31. Where the decrees of the provincial counfel, or of the court of requests, or the Queen's court, are by continuancy or other means interrupted; there the court of chancery upon a bill preferred for corroborations of the same jurisdictions, decrees, and sentences, shall give remedy.

32. Where any cause comes to a hearing that hath been formerly decreed in any other of the King's courts of justice at Westminster, such de-

cree

ORDINANCES IN CHANCERY.

cree shall be first read, and then to proceed to the rest of the evidence on both sides.

Suits after judgment.

cording to the ancient custom of the chancery, and the late royal decision of his Majesty, of record after solemn and great deliberation: but in such suits it is ordered, that bond be put in with good sureties to prove the suggestions of the bill.

fhall contain no words to make void or weaken the judgment, but shall only correct the corrupt conscience of the party, and rule him to make restitution, or perform other acts, according to the equity of the case.

Orders, and the Office of the REGI-STERS.

Archer gettie. of Husting Kolls. 101. it is in spirited, that have.

Art. begisters are to be sworn, as hath

36. It any order shall be made, and the court not informed of the last material order formerly made, no benefit shall be taken by such order, as granted by abuse and surreption; and to that end the registers ought duly to mention the former order in the later.

37. No order shall be explained upon any private petition but in court as they are made, and the register is to set down the orders as they were pronounced by the court, truly at his peril, without troubling the lord chancellor by any private attending of him to explain his meaning; and if any explanation be desired, it is to be done by publick motion, where the other party may be heard.

38. No draught of any order shall be delivered by the register to either party, without keeping a copy ed tro kn fro th

CO

no

de ref the of cla wa

full info

the fel tha

was the any

ning ters they oug

view

pref upor after

fuits

copy by him, to the end that if the order be not entered, nevertheless the court may be informed what was formerly done, and not put to new trouble and hearing; and to the end also that knowledge of orders be not kept back too long from either party, but may presently appear at the office.

39. Where a lease hath been debated upon hearing of both parties, and opinion hath been delivered by the court, and nevertheless the cause referred to treaty, the registers are not to omit the opinion of the court, in drawing of the order of reference, except the court doth specially declare that it be entred without any opinion either way; in which case nevertheless the registers are out of their short note, to draw up some more sull remembrance of that that passed in court, to inform the court if the cause come back and cannot be agreed.

40. The registers upon sending of their draught unto the counsel of the parties, are not to respect the interlineations, or alterations of the said counsel (be the said counsel never so great,) farther, than to put them in remembrance of that which was truly delivered in court, and so to conceive the order upon their oath and duty, without

any farther respect.

41. The registers are to be careful in the penning and drawing up of decrees, and special matters of difficulty and weight; and therefore when they present the same to the lord chancellor, they ought to give him understanding which are those decrees of weight, that they may be read and reviewed before his lordship sign them.

42. The decrees granted at the rolls are to be presented to his lordship, with the orders where-upon they are drawn, within two or three days

after every term.

43. Injunctions for possession, or for stay of suits after verdict are to be presented to his lord-ship,

to ac-

ry, of but in

ent ken

the

upt ake to

GI-

hath

nerly r, as end

rmer

priand they peril,

prining; done may

vered oing a copy

ORDINANCES IN CHANCERY.

ship, together with the orders whereupon they go forth, that his lordship may take consideration

of the order before he fign them.

44. Where any order upon the special nature of the case shall be made against any of these general rules, there the register shall plainly and expresly set down the particulars, reasons and grounds, moving the court to vary from the general rule.

References.

45. No reference upon a demurrer, or question touching the jurisdiction of the court, shall be made to the masters of the chancery; but such demurrers shall be heard and ruled in court, or by the lord chancellor himself.

46. No order shall be made for the confirming or ratifying of any report without day first given, by the space of a sevenight at the least,

to speak to it in court.

47. No reference shall be made to any masters of the court, or any other commissioners to hear and determine where the cause is gone so far as to examination of witnesses, except it be in special cases of parties near in blood, or of extreme poverty, or by consent and general reference of the estate of cause, except it be by consent of the parties to be sparingly granted.

48. No report shall be respected in court, which

exceedeth the warrant of reference.

49. The masters of the court are required not to certify the state of any cause, as if they would make breviate of the evidence on both sides, which doth little ease the court, but with some opinion, or otherwise in case they think it too doubtful to give opinion, and therefore make such special certificate, the cause is to go on to a dudicial hearing, without respect had to the same.

so. Matters of account, unless it be in very weighty causes, are not fit for the court, but to be prepared by reference, with this difference nevertheless, that the cause comes first to a hearing;

and

and

rec

hav

exa

rea

mir

wh

but

cy (

ticu of

ant'

of t

the

hear

probl

defe

Cour

joinc both

it pa

or or bello

to th

fuit,

of th

court

gator

fed,

mitm

the al

56

53

5

5

and upon the entrance into a hearing, they may receive fome direction, and be turned over to have the accounts confidered, except both parties before a hearing do confent to a reference of the examination of the accounts, to make it more ready for a hearing.

51. THE like course to be taken for the examination of court-rolls, upon customs and copies, which shall not be referred to any one master,

but to two masters at the least.

52. No reference to be made of the infufficiency of an answer, without shewing of some particular point of the defect, and not upon furmife of the infufficiency in general.

53. WHERE a trust is confessed by the defendant's answer there needeth no farther hearing of the cause, but a reference presently to be made of the account, and so to go on to a hearing of

the accounts.

they

tion

ture

ge-

and

and

ge-

Rion

1 be

fuch

no et

irm-

first

east,

fters

hear

ar as

fpe-

reme ce of

f the

hich

d not

rould

hich

nion,

ul to

cer-

hear-

very

ut to

e nering; and

54. In all fuits where it shall appear, upon the Suits in court hearing of the cause, that the plaintiff had not probabilem causam litigandi, he shall pay unto the defendant his utmost costs, to be assessed by the

55. If any bill, answers, replication, or re- Bills, demurjoinder shall be found of an immoderate length, rers, answers, both the party and the council under whose hand copies.

it passeth shall be fined.

56. If there be contained in any bill, answer, or other pleadings interrogatory, any matter libellous or flanderous against any that is not party to the fuit, or against such as are parties to the luit, upon matters impertinent, or in derogation of the fettled authorities of any of his Majesty's courts, fuch bills, answers, pleadings, or interrogatories shall be taken off the file and suppresled, and the parties severally punished by commitment or ignominy, as shall be thought fit for the abuse of the court, and the counsellors at law,

ORDINANCES IN CHANCERY.

who have fet their hands, shall likewise receive reproof or punishment, if cause be.

57. DEMURRERS and pleas which tend to difcharge the fuit shall be heard first upon every day of orders, that the subject may know whether he shall need farther attendance or no.

58. A demurrer is properly upon matter defective, contained in the bill itself, and no foreign matter; but a plea is of foreign matter to difcharge or stay the fuit, as that the cause hath been formerly dismissed, or that the plaintiss is outlawed, or excommunicated; or there is another bill depending for the same cause, or the like, and fuch plea may be put in without oath, in case where the matter of the plea appears upon record; but if it be any thing that doth not appear upon record, the plea must be upon oath.

59. No plea of outlawry shall be allowed without pleading the record sub pede sigilli, nor plea of excommunication, without the feal of the ordinary.

60. Where any fuit appeareth upon the bill to be of the natures which are regularly to be dismissed according to the fifteenth ordinance, fuch matter is to be fet forth by way of demurrer.

6r. Where an answer shall be certified insufficient, the defendant is to pay costs; and if a fecond answer be returned insufficient, in the points before certified insufficient, then double costs, and upon the third treble costs, and upon the fourth quadruple costs, and then to be committed also until he hath made a perfect answer, and to be examined upon interrogatives touching the points defective in his answer; but if any answer be certified sufficient, the plaintiff is to pay costs.

fi

fe

it

be

th

di

as

cu

lit

th

ve

or

pa

fw

all

up

fer

ha

is 1

rep

in

lin

wa

of

ten

wh

tak

(

nef reti

cei

iñ

62. No infufficient answer can be taken hold of after replication put in, because it is admitted fufficient by the replication.

ive

dif-

lay

her

de-

ign dif-

ath

f is

no-

the

ath.

upnot

pon

ith-

plea

e or-

e bill

o be

ance,

mur-

nfuf-

if a

the

ouble

upon

com-

fwer,

ching

f any

is to

63. An answer to a matter charged as the defendant's own fact must be direct, without faying it is to his remembrance, or as he believeth, if it be laid down within seven years before; and if the defendant deny the fact, he must traverse it directly, and not by way of negative pregnant; as if a fact be laid to be done with diverse circumstances, the defendant may not traverse it literally as it is laid in the bill, but must traverse the point of substance; so if he be charged with the receipt of one hundred pounds, he must traverse that he hath not received a hundred pounds, or any part thereof; and if he have received part, he must set forth what part.

64. If a hearing be prayed upon bill and anfwer, the answer must be admitted to be true in all points, and a decree ought to be made, but

upon hearing the answer read in court.

65. Where no counsel appears for the defendant at the hearing, and the process appears to have been ferved, the answer of such defendant is to be read in court.

66. No new matter is to be contained in any replication, except it be to avoid matter fet forth in the defendant's answer.

67. All copies in chancery shall contain fifteen lines in every sheet thereof, written orderly and unwastfully, unto which shall be subscribed the name of the principal clerk of the office where it is written, or his deputy, for whom he will answer, for which only subscription no fee at all shall be taken.

68. ALL commissions for examination of wit- Commissions; nesses shall be super interr. inclusis only, and no examinations, and depositireturn of depositions into the court shall be re-ons. ceived, but fuch only as shall be either comprised one roll, subscribed with the name of the

com-

commissioners, or else in diverse rolls, whereof each one shall be so subscribed.

bi uf

in tr

tic

ad be

an

or tou

an

as

kn

affi

or

WO

vit,

but

cre

upo

exa

tion

con

ted

neff

con

but

tem

othe

cont

tem

as p

69. If both parties join in commissions, and upon warning given the defendant bring his commissioners, but produceth no witnesses, nor ministreth interrogatories, but after seek a new commission, the same shall not be granted: but nevertheless upon some extraordinary excuse of the defendant's default, he may have liberty granted by special order to examine his witnesses in court upon the former interrogatories, giving the plaintiff, or his attorney notice, that he may examine alfo if he will.

70. The defendant is not to be examined upon interrogatories, except it be in very special cases, by express order of the court, to fift out some fraud or practice pregnantly appearing to the court, or otherwise upon offer of the plaintiff to be concluded by the answer of the defendant without any liberty to disprove such answer, or to impeach him after of perjury.

71. Decrees in other courts may be read upon hearing without the warrant of any special order: but no depositions taken in any other court are to be read but by special order, and regularly the court granteth no order for reading of depositions, except it be between the same parties, and

upon the fame title and cause of suit.

72. No examination is to be had of the credit of any witness but by special order, which is spa-

ringly to be granted.

73. WITNESSES shall not be examined in perpetuam rei memoriam, except it be upon the ground of a bill first put in, and answer thereunto made, and the defendant or his attorney made acquainted with the names of the witnesses that the plaintiff would have examined, and fo publication to be of such witnesses with this restraint nevertheless, that no benefit shall be taken of the depositions of fuch witnesses, in case they may be brought eof

ind

m-

ni

m-

ne-

the

ted

urt

ain-

ine

pon

fes,

me

the

f to

lant

or

pon

er:

are

the

ofi-

and

edit

spa-

per-

und

ade,

int-

ain-

n to

the-

posiy be ught brought viva voce upon the trial, but only to be used in case of death before the trial, or age, or impotency, or absence out of the realm at the trial.

74. No witnesses shall be examined after publica- Ad informantion, except it be by confent, or by special order, dam consciential judicis. ad informandam conscientiam judicis, and then to be brought close sealed up to the court to peruse or publish, as the court shall think good.

75. No affidavit shall be taken or admitted by Affidavits. any master of the chancery, tending to the proof or disproof of the title, or matter in question, or touching the merits of the cause, neither shall any fuch matter be colourably inferted in any affidavit for ferving of process.

76. No affidavit shall be taken against affidavit, as far as the masters of the chancery can have knowledge; and if any fuch be taken, the latter affidavit shall not be used nor read in court.

77. In case of contempts granted upon force or ill words, upon ferving of process, or upon words of scandal of the court, proved by affidavit, the party is forthwith to stand 'committed; but for other contempts against the orders or decrees of the court an attachment goes for the first upon affidavit made, and then the party is to be examined upon interrogatories, and his examination referred; and if upon his examination he confess matter of contempt, he is to be committed; if not, the adverse party may examine witnelles to prove the contempt; and therefore if the contempt appear, the party is to be committed; but if not, or if the party that pursues the contempt do fail in putting in interrogatories, or other profecution, or fail in the proof of the contempt, then the party charged with the contempt is to be discharged with good costs.

78. THEY that are in contempt, specially so far s proclamation of rebellion, are not to be here,

neither in that fuit, nor any other, except the court of special grace suspend the contempt.

d

fa

ſh

vi

b

th

th

pr ne

th

ar fu

ta

an

be

oa

ju aff

th

Ki

an int

Wi

be

in

an

gra tar

ma

oth

the

lop

ma

79. IMPRISONMENT upon contempt for matters past, may be discharged of grace after sufficient punishment, or otherwise dispensed with: but if the imprisonment be for not performance of any order of the court in force, they ought not to be discharged except they first obey, but the contempt may be suspended for a time.

80. INJUNCTIONS, sequestrations, dismissions, retainers upon dismissions, or final orders, are not

to be granted upon petitions

81. No former order made in court is to be altered, croffed, or explained upon any petition; but fuch orders may be stayed upon petition for a fmall stay, until the matter may be moved in court.

82. No commission for examination of witnesfes shall be discharged; nor no examinations or depositions shall be suppressed upon petition, except it be upon point of course of the court first referred to the clerks, and certificate thereupon.

83. No demur shall be over-ruled upon peti-

tion.

84. No scire facias shall be awarded upon recognizances not enrolled, nor upon recognizances enrolled, unless it be upon examination of the record with the writ; nor no recognizance shall be enrolled after the year, except it be upon special order from the lord chancellor.

85. No writ of ne exeat regnum, prohibition, confultation, statute of Northampton, certiorari special, or procedendo special, or certiorari or procedendo general, more than one in the same cause; babeas corpus, or corpus cum caufa vi laica removend', or restitution thereupon, de coronatore & viridario eligendo, in case of a moving de homine repleg. assiz. or special patent, inde ballia amovend' certiorari super præsentationibus fact. coram commissariis Seward, or ad quod dampnum shall pass without warrant under

Petitions.

der the lord chancellor's hand, and figned by him, fave fuch writs as ad quod dampnum, as shall be

figned by master attorney.

he

ers

nt

if

ny

be

n-

ns,

not

be

n;

or a

in

ref-

or

ex-

first

eti-

re-

ices

re-

be ecial

con-

cial,

ge-

s cor-

efti-

endo,

Ipe-

[uper

d, or

un-

der

n.

86. WRITS of privilege are to be reduced to a better rule, both for the number of persons that shall be privileged, and for the case of the privilege; and as for the number it shall be fet down by schedule: for the case it is to be understood, that besides parties privileged as attendants upon the court, fuitors and witnesses are only to have privilege, eundo, redeundo, & morando, for their necessary attendance, and not otherwise; and that fuch writ of privilege dischargeth only an arrest upon the first process, but yet where at fuch times of necessary attendance the party is taken in execution, it is a contempt to the court, and accordingly to be punished.

87. No supplicavit for the good behaviour shall be granted, but upon articles grounded upon the oath of two at the least, or certificate of any one justice of assize, or two justices of the peace with affidavit, that it is their hands, or by order of the star-chamber, or chancery, or other of the

King's courts.

without warrant un

88. No recognizance of the good behaviour, and the peace taken in the country, and certified into the petty-bag, shall be filed in the year without warrant from the lord chancellor.

89. Writs of ne exeat regnum are properly to be granted according to the fuggestion of the writ, in respect of attempts prejudicial to the King and state, in which case the lord chancellor will grant them upon prayer of any the principal secretaries without cause shewing, or upon such information as his lordship shall think of weight: but otherwise also they may be granted according to the practice of long time used in case of interlopers in trade, great bankrupts, in whose estate many subjects are interested, or other cases that T 4 aft mange

concern multitudes of the King's subjects, also in case of duels and diverse others.

in

of

ju

W

th

W

gr

up

mi

ty

ch

wh

alv

ref

tie.

lik

fur

lea

we

fer

cor

per

the

COL

torn

ord

or 1

the

cou

mif

Wat

tific or a

9

90. All writs, certificates, and whatfoever other process ret. coram Rege in Canc. shall be brought into the chapel of the rolls, within convenient time after the return thereof, and shall be there filed upon their proper files and bundles as they ought to be, except the depositions of witnesses, which may remain with any of the six clerks by the space of one year next after the cause shall be determined by decree, or otherwise be dismissed.

91. All injunctions shall be inrolled, or the transcript filed, to the end that if occasion be, the court may take order to award writs of foire facias thereupon, as in ancient time hath been used.

92. All days given by the court to sheriffs to return their writs, or bring their prisoners upon writs of privilege, or otherwise between party and party shall be filed, either in the register's office, or in the petty-bag respectively; and all recognizances taken to the King's use, or unto the court, shall be duly inrolled in convenient time, with the clerks of the inrollment, and kalendars made of them, and the kalendars every Michaelmas term to be presented to the lord chancellor.

93. In case of suits upon the commissions for charitable uses to avoid charge, there shall need no bill, but only exceptions to the decree, and answer forthwith to be made thereunto; and thereupon, and upon sight of the inquisition, and the decree brought unto the lord chancellor by the clerk of the petty-bag, his lordship, upon perusal thereof, will give order under his hand for an absolute decree to be drawn up.

94. Upon suit for the commission of sewards, the names of those that are desired to be commissioners are to be preferred to the lord chancellor

ellocver a and they are

in writing; then his lordship will send the names of some privy counsellor, lieutenant of the shire, justices of assize, being resident in the parts for which the commission is prayed, to consider of them, that they be not put in for private respects; and upon the return of such opinion, his lordship will farther order for the commission to pass.

95. No new commission of sewards shall be granted while the first is in force, except it be upon discovery of abuse or fault in the first commissioners, or otherwise upon some great or weigh-

ty ground.

n

)-

be

n-

nd nd

fi-

ny

xt

or

he

he

ias

to

on

rty

egi-

ly;

on-

ent,

lars

ord

for

eed

and

and

and

by

pe-

for

ards,

mif-

ellor in 96. No petition of bankrupt shall be granted but upon petition first exhibited to the lord chancellor, together with names presented, of which his lordship will take consideration, and always single some learned in the law with the rest; yet so as care be taken that the same parties be not too often used in commissions; and likewise care is to be taken that bond with good surety be entered into in two hundred pounds at least, to prove him a bankrupt.

97. No commission of delegates in any case of weight shall be awarded, but upon petition preferred to the lord chancellor, who will name the commissioners himself, to the end they may be persons of convenient quality, having regard to the weight of the cause, and the dignity of the

court from whom the appeal is.

98. Any man shall be admitted to defend in forma pauperis upon oath, but for plaintiffs they are ordinarily to be referred to the court of requests, or to the provincial counsels, if the case arise in the jurisdictions, or to some gentlemen in the country, except it be in some special cases of commiseration, or potency of the adverse party.

99. LICENSES to collect for losses by fire or water are not to be granted, but upon good certificate, and not for decays of suretyship or debt, or any other casualties whatsoever; and they are

rarely

rarely to be renewed; and they be to be directed unto the county where the loss did arise, if it were by fire, and the counties that abut upon it, as the case shall require; and if it were by sea, then unto the county where the port is, from whence the ship went, and to some counties ad-

joining.

ters patent (inter alia) with omission of the general words; nor of records made void, or cancelled; nor of the decrees of this court not involled; nor of depositions by parcel; nor of depositions in court, to which the hand of the examiner is not subscribed; nor of records of the court not being enrolled or filed; nor of records of any other court, before the same be duly certified to this court, and orderly filed here; nor of any records upon the sight and examination of any copy in paper, but upon sight and examination of the original.

discover some of these rules to be inconvenient, and some other to be fit to be added; therefore his lordship intendeth in any such case from time to time to publish any such revocations or addi-

and the contract of the second contract of the contract of the

tions.

Shiring.

THE

W

of ex ab fo in R

arg

THE

ed f it

it, fea,

ad-

letge-

caninde-

ex-

ords cer-

nor on of ina-

may ient,

efore

time

addi-

HE

LEARNED READING

OF

Sir FRANCIS BACON.

One of her Majesty's Counsel at Law,

UPON THE

STATUTE of USES:

Being his double Reading to the Honourable SOCIETY of GRAYS-INN.

Ju Harl. Mp. bbDD. 2. a hiere

intelled Locka ba becurde by ford Bacon HAVE chosen to read upon the law of uses the stat. made 27 H. VIII. a law whereupon the inheritances of this realm are toffed at this day like a ship upon the sea, in such fort, that it is hard to fay which bark will fink, and which will get to the haven; that is to fay, what affurances will stand good, and what will not, whether is this any lack or default in the pilots thelf grave and learned judges? But the tides and currents of received errors, and unwarranted and abusive experience have been fo strong, as they were not able to keep a right course according to the law, to as this statute is in great part as a law made in the parliament, held 35 Regine; for in 37 Regina, by the notable judgment, upon folemn arguments of all the judges affembled in the exchequer chamber, in the famous case between

READING ON THE STATUTE OF USES.

Dillon and Frayne, concerning an affurance by Chudley, this law began to be reduced to a true and found exposition, and the false and perverted exposition, which had continued for so many years, though never countenanced by any rule or authority of weight, but only entertained in a popular conceit, and in practice at adventure, grew to be controlled; since which time (as it cometh to pass always upon the first reforming of inveterate errors) many doubts, and perplexed questions have risen, which are not yet resolved, nor the law thereupon settled: the consideration whereof moved me to take the occasion of performing this particular duty to the house, to see if I could by my travel, bring to a more general

good of the commonwealth.

HEREIN, though I could not be ignorant of the difficulty of matter, which he that taketh in hand shall soon find, or much less of my own unableness, which I had continual sense and feeling of; yet because I had more means of abfolution than the younger fort, and more leifure than the greater fort, I did think it not impossible to work some profitable effect; the rather because where an inferior wit is bent and conversant upon one subject, he shall many times with patience and meditation dissolve and undo many of the knots, which a greater wit distracted with many matters would rather cut in two than unknit: And at least if my invention or judgment be too barren, or too weak; yet by the benefit of other arts, I did hope to dispose or digest the authorities or opinions, which are in cases of use, in such order and method, as they should take light one from another, though they took no light from me. And like to the matter of my reading shall my manner be, for my meaning is to revive and recontinue the ancient form of reading, which you may fee in Mr. Frowickes, upon the prerogative, and all other readings of ancient

wh ten cie

a

t

ft

fi

lil

in

fti

di

T mat

help of r itsel

mon

the misch way

frame frame readin divide introd

readin

e

Y

or

a e,

it of

 $^{\rm ed}$

d,

on

r-

ee

of in yn

nd

ab-

ure

Mi-

ner

on-

nes

obi

ct-

WO

or

the

in

hey

hey

tter

an-

orm

kes,

s of

ient

ancient time, being of less oftentation and more fruit, than the manner lately accustomed; for the use then was substantially to expound the statutes, by grounds and diversities; as you shall find the reading still to run upon case of the like law, and contrary law; whereof each one includes the learning of a difference: and not to stir concise and subtile doubts, or to contrive tedious and intricate cases, whereof all saving one are buried, and the greater part of that one case which is taken, is commonly nothing to the matter in hand; but my labour shall be in the ancient course, to open the law upon what are doubts, and what not doubts upon this law.

Expositio Statuti.

THE exposition of this statute consists, upon the matter without the statute! upon the matter within the statute.

THREE things, are to be confidered concerning that statutes, and all other statutes, which are helps and inducements to the right understanding of my statute, and yet are no part of the statute itself.

1. The confideration of the statute at the common law.

2. The confideration of the mischief which the statute intendeth to redress, as also any other mischief, which an expositor of the statute this exposition way that way may breed.

3. CERTAIN maxims of the common law, touching exposition of statutes aving therefore framed six divisions according to the number of readings upon the statute itself, I have likewise divided the matter without the statute into six introductions or discourses, so that for every day's reading I have made a triple provision.

1. A PREFACE, or introduction.

READING ON THE STATUTE OF USES

2. A Division upon the law itself.

3. A rew brief cases, for exercise and argument. The last of which I would have forborn, and according to the ancient manner, you should have taken some of my points upon my divisions, one, two, or more as you should have thought good; fave that I had this regard, that the younger fort of the bar were not fo conversant upon matters upon the statutes; and for that case I have interlaced fome matters at the common law that are more familiar within the books.

I. THE first matter I will discourse unto you, is the nature and definition of an use, and its inception and progression before the statute.

2. THE fecond discourse shall be of the second

fpring of this tree of uses fince the statute.

3. THE third discourse shall be of the estate of the affurances of this realm at this day upon uses, and what kind of them is convenient and reasonable, and not fit to be touched, as far as fense of law and natural construction of the statute will give leave, and what kind of them is convenient and meet to be suppressed.

4. The fourth discourse shall be of certain rules and expositions of laws applied to this present

purpose.

5. THE fifth discourse shall be of the best course to remedy the same inconveniences now a foot, by construction of the statute, without offering violence to the letter or fenfe.

6. THE fixth and dast discourse shall be of the best course to remedy the same inconveniences, and to declare the law by act of parliament; which last I think good to referve and not to publish.

THE nature of a use is best discerned by conet common sidering what it is not, and then what it is; for it is the nature of all human science and knowledge to proceed most safely by negative and exclusive, to what is affirmative and inclusive.

FIRST,

f

01

is

th

VE

de

th

in

a

up

VII

nif

fee

COI

lav

for

the

caf

cas

use

nan

ben

tha

gre

tho

fits :

out

hav

one and

io;

cy c

go f

FIRST, use is no right, title, or interest in law, and therefore mafter attorney who read upon this statute said well, that there are but two rights:

Jus in Re: Jus ad Rem.

THE one is an estate which is Fus in Re, the other a demand which is Jus ad Rem, but a use is neither; fo that in 24 H. VIII. it is faid that the faving of the statute of I R. III. which saveth any right or interest of intails, must be understood of intails of the possession, and not of the part of the use, because a use is no right nor interest, To again, you see Littleton's conceit, that fill 162. a use should amount to a tenancy at will, whereupon a release might well inure, because of priother books, which fay that cefty que use is pu- notice makes nishable in an action of trespass towards the feof-lately to content fees; only 5 H. V. feemeth to be at some distance in supposed cord with other books, where it is admitted for the costuique law, that if there be cesty que use of an advowfon, and he be out-lawed in a personal action, with the content the King should have the presentment, which of the bruste, case master Evans in the argument of Chudley's where case the second the case the second case did feem to reconcile thus; where cesty que a suppose the use being out-law'd, had presented in his own certaigne tous name, there the King should remove his incum-use to enter bent, and no fuch thing can be collected upon without much that book; and therefore I conceive the error consect, for grew upon this, that because it was generally if the entry is thought, that a use was but a pernancy of pro- with consent fits; and then again because the law is, that upon how can if the outlawries, upon personal actions, the King shall alreshaft? have the pernancy of profits, they took that to be one and the felf same thing which cefty que use had, and which the King was intitled unto, which was not to; for the King had remedy in law for his pernancy of profits, but cesty que use had none. The books go farther and fay, that a use is nothing, as in 2 H.

11.8.) Acanas be collected VII. from the 5: 14.5. 3. h. Heat and we arrest to

br ve le, d;

É.

ort ers erare

ou, inond

ate

pon and r as

ftan is

ules fent

urfe oot, ring

the nces, ent;

con-; for

ot to

nowd ex-

IRST,

VII. dett fuit port, and counted fur leas for years

rendring rent, &c. The defendant pleaded in bara

that the plaintiff nibil babuit tempore dimissionis:

whether it hath any being in nature and con-

science the law accepteth of it; and therefore

the plaintiff made a special replication, and shewed that he had an use, and issue joined upon that; wherefore it appeareth, that if he had taken iffue upon the defendant's plea, it should have been found against him. So again in 4 Regina, in the case of the lord Sands, the truth of the case was a fine levied by cesty que use before the statute, and this coming in question since the statute upon an averment by the plaintiff quod partes finis nibil babuerint, it is faid that the defendant may shew the special matter of the use, and it shall be no departure from the first pleading of the fame; and it is faid farther that the averment given in 4 H. VII. quod partes finis nibil · babuerint, nec in possessione, nec in usu, was ousted upon this statute of 27 Hen. VIII. and was no more now to be accepted: but yet it apby me pears, that if iffue had been taken upon the general averment, without the special matter shewed, it should have been found for him that took the averment, because a use is nothing. But these to be offering books are not to be taken generally or grofly, for we see in the same books, when an use is specially alleged, the law taketh knowlege of it; but the fense of it is, that use is nothing for which remedy is given by the course of the common law, so as the law knoweth it, but protects it not; and therefore when the question cometh

> Littleton's case is good law, that he which hath but forty shillings free-hold in use, shall be sworn in an inquest, for it is ruled secundum dominium naturale, and not secundum dominium legitimum, nam natura dominus est, quit fructum ex re percipit. And some doubt if upon subsidies and taxes

cefty que use should be valued as an owner: so likewife

an of the is f

lik

fec

ge

a g

whi had goo

for

thin

agai this chai

that the whe of la

upor nera T

T case profi

get t nanc or th

those

TE iome the fe lome

ter ir tent t recov

infeof

likewise if cesty que use had resold his use unto the feoffee for fix pound, or contracted with a stranger for the like fum, there is no doubt but it is a good condition or contract whereon to ground an action upon the case: for money for release of a fuit in the chancery is a good quid pro quo therefore to conclude, though a use be nothing in law to yield remedy by course of law, yet it is fomewhat in reputation of law and conscience, for that may be somewhat in conscience which is nothing in law, like as that may be something in law which is nothing in conscience; as if the seoffees had made a feoffment over in fee, bona fide, upon good confideration, and upon a subpana brought against them, they pleaded this matter in chancery, this had been nothing in conscience, not as to discharge them of damages.

A SECOND negative fit to be understood is, that a use is no covin, nor is it a collusion, as the word is now used; for it is to be noted, that where a man doth remove the state and possession of land, or goods, out of himself unto another upon trust, it is either a special trust, or a ge-

neral truft.

1

-

n

-

e

2,

ie ie

1-

1-

d

of

r-

il

t-

as

p-

e-

wok

fe

y,

15

t;

ch

on

it

th

n-

ore

th

orn

um

im,

rci-

xes

fo

vise

THE special trust is either lawful or unlawful.

THE special trust unlawful, is according to the case provided for by ancient statutes of the profits; as where it is to defraud creditors, or to get men to maintain suits, or to defeat the tenancy to the pracipe, or the statute of Mautmain, or the lords of their wardships or the like; and those are termed frauds, covins, or collusions.

THE special trust lawful is, as when I infeosf some of my friends, because I am to go beyond the seas, or because I would free the land from some several statute, or bond which I am to enter into, or upon intent to be infeosf'd, or intent to be vouched, and so to suffer a common recovery, or upon intent that the seosses shall infeosf over a stranger, and infinite the like in-

TI

READING ON THE STATUTE OF USES.

tents and purposes, which fall out in mens dealings and occasions: and this we call confidence, and the books do call them intents; but where the trust is not special, nor transitory, but general and permanent, there it is a use; and therefore these three are to be distinguished, and not confounded by covin, confidence and use.

So as now we are come by negatives to the affirmative, what a use is, agreeable to the definition in Plowden, 352. Delamer's case, where it

is faid:

Use is a trust reposed by any person in the terre-tenant, that he may fuffer him to take the profits, and he that will perform his intent. it is a shorter speech to fay, that

vunership in Usus est dominium siduciarium: Use is an owner's life in trust.

> So that usus & status, sive possessio, potius differunt secundum rationem fori quam secundum naturam rei, for that one of them is in court of law, the other in court of conscience; and for a trust which is the way to an use, it is exceeding well defined by a civilian of great understanding:

> > Fides est obligatio conscientiæ unius ad intentionem alterius.

And they have a good division likewise of rights.

Jus precarium : Jus fiduciarium : Jus legitimun.

1. A RIGHT in courtefy, for the which there is no remedy at all.

2. A RIGHT in trust, for which there is a remedy only but in conscience.

3. A RIGHT in law.

So

til

an in

fo

th

est

by

fo

or fo

tio

thr

caf

but ter

by

gen

cer 1

mat have

not

true

it te

at t

B botl So much of the nature and definition of an use.

Ir followeth to consider the parts and properties of an use, wherein by the consent of all books; The properand it was distinctly delivered by justice Walmsley in 36 of Elizabeth:

THAT a trust consisteth upon three parts.

THE first, that the feoffee will suffer the feof-

THE second, that the seessee upon request of the seesser, or notice of his will, will execute the estates to the seesser, or his heirs, or any other

by his direction.

THE third, that if the feoffee be disseised, and so the feoffor disturbed, the feoffee will re-enter, or bring an action to re-continue the possession, so that those three, pernancy of profits, execution of estates, and desence of the land, are the three points of trust.

THE properties of an use they are exceeding well set forth, by the former justice in the same

case; and they be three:

1. Uses (faith he) are created by confidence.

2. Presen by privity, which is nothing else but a continuance of the confidence without interruption; and

3. Ordered and guided by conscience: either by the private conscience of the feosses; or the general conscience of the realm which is chancery.

The two former of which (because they be matters more thoroughly beaten, and we shall have occasion hereafter to handle them) we will

not now debate upon:

Bur the third, we will speak somewhat of; both because it is a key to open many of the true reasons, and termings of uses, and because it tendeth to decide our great and principal doubts at this day.

COOKE

U 2

eiot

af-

1-

e,

re

e-

niit

the the But

-WC

difatuaw, rust

well

e of

egit**i-**

there

a re-

So

146.

17,10.

Therein easy of COOKE follicitor entring into his argument of come differ for Chudley's case, said sharply and fitly: I will put there are perferencer a case but it shall be of an use, for a use in law hath no fellow; meaning, that the learning of uses is not to be matched with other learnthe accord. 2. Haings. Anderson, chief justice, in the argument of the same case, did truly and profoundly controul the vulgar opinion collected upon 5 E. IV. See 1. lo. 88 a. that there might be possession fratris of a use; for 2.4. 2.6. Lo. Sil he said that it was no more but that the chancel-14.6.4.6.22. a lor would consult with the rules of law, where Dr.10.6.11.4.1. the intention of the parties did not specially ap-Line 15. 2. pear; and therefore the private conceit which Finch 21, all Glanvile, justice, cited in the 42 Regina in the case of Corbet, in the common pleas, of one of Lincolns-Inn, whom he named not, but seemed to allow, is not sound; which was, that a use was Gille on Uns 16, but a limitation, and did ensue the nature of a possession.

> This very conceit was fet on foot in 27 H. VIII. in the lord Darcie's case, in which time they began to heave at uses; for thereafter the realm had many ages together put in ure the passage of uses by will. They began to argue that an use was not deviseable, but that it did enfue the nature of the land; and the same year after this statute was made; so that this opinion seemeth ever to be, a prelude and forerunner to an act of parliament touching uses; and if it be so meant now, I like it well: but in the mean time the opinion itself is to be rejected; and because in the same case of Corbet three reverend judges of the court of common pleas did deliver and publish their opinion, though not directly upon the point adjudged, yet obiter as one of the reasons of their judgment, that an use of inheritance could not be limited to cease; and again, that the limitation of a new use could not be to a stranger; ruling uses merely according to the ground of polfessions it is worth the labour to examine that learn-

by de tha

le

la

re

at

up

ur

eff

th

tha lav adı

wil wil bec law

fcie que lan

the and by cau

the fore and as v

of t ably find his 1

anot beca heir

teoff refu

But

it

1-

200 1-

0-

h

1e

of

to

as

I.

e-

ad

of

1e a-

nis

th

ct

nt

on

ne

irt

eir

d-

eir

ot

ta-

11-

of-

nat

n-

learning. By 3 Hen. VII. you may collect, that law, and an ancestor collateral of cesty que use had collateral une released unto the diffeisor, and his warranty had really did not attached upon cesty que use; yet the chancellor espuque upon this matter shewed, would have no respect use at tominon unto it, to compel the feoffees to execute the law. See post estate unto the disseisor: for there the case being 314. that cesty que use in tail having made an affurance by fine and recovery, and by warranty which descend upon his iffue, two of the judges held, that the use is not extinct; and Bryan and Hussey, that held the contrary, faid, that the common law is altered by the new statute; whereby they admit, that by the common law that warranty will not bind and extinct a right of a use, as it will do a right of possession; and the reason is, because the law of collateral garranty is a hard law, and not to be confidered in a court of conscience. In 5 Edw. IV, it is said, that if cesty que use be attainted, quere, who shall have the land, for the lord shall not have the land, so as the land with there the use doth not limitate the possession; rateschiat to the and the reason is, because the lord hath a rent or attainder by title; for that is nothing to the Subpana, be- of the testingue caule the feoffee's intent was never to advance the lord, but only his own blood; and therefore the quære of the book ariseth what the trust and confidence of the feoffee did tye him to do, as whether he should not sell the land to the use of the feoffee's will, or in pios usus? So favour- feofford ably they took the intent in those days, as you find in 27 H. VI. that if a man had appointed his use to one for life, the remainder in fee to another, and cefty que use for life had refused, because the intent appeared not to advance the heir at all, nor him in reversion, presently, the teoffee should have the estate for life of him that refused, some ways to the behoof of the feoffor: But to proceed in some better order towards U 3

Uses exam? in the disproof of this opinion of limitation, there be quapitopose four points wherein we will examine the nature how they differ of uses.

from cases of posiession.

1. THE raising of them.

2. THE preserving of them.

THE transferring of them. 4. The extinguishing of them.

I. In all thefe four, you shall see apparently that uses stand upon their own reasons, utterly differing from cases of possession. I would have In cases apossessione case shewed by men learned in the law, where there is a deed; and yet there needs a confidera-

the law presumes there is a used; and jet the law adjudgeth it too a consideration; light to give action without consideration; but a Whe consequent deed ever in law imports a confideration, because batitis otherwise tion of it: and therefore in 8 Reginæ it is solemn-

on use; for that'y argued, that a deed should raise an use withwill not arise out any other consideration. In the Queen's case unless the conside a false consideration, if it be of record, will hurt

the patent, but want of confideration doth never hurt it; and yet they fay that a use is but a nimble and light thing; and now contrariwise it seemeth to be weightier than any thing elfe: for you cannot weigh it up to raife it, neither by deed,

nor deed inrolled, without the weight of a confideration: but you shall never find a reason of this to the world's end, in the law: But it is a

reason of chancery, and it is this:

THAT no court of conscience will enforce domum gratuitum, though the intent appear never fo clearly where it is not executed, or fufficiently passed by law; but if money had been paid, and so a person damnissed, or that it was for the establishment of his house, then it is a good matter in the chancery. So again I would fee in the law, a case where a man shall take by a conveyance, be it by deed, livery, or word, that is not party to the grant: I do not fay that the delivery must be to him that takes by the deed, for a

de

an

to

m

he

ag

bu

as

to

ra

in

a

he no

de

me

a

the V]

go

pro boo

to

31 alie

one

ran

ma tha

pra itai

vin

ftra

if i

twe

1100

deed may be delivered to one man to the use of another. Neither do I say that he must be party to the delivery of the deed, for he in the remainder may take though he be not party: but he must be party to the words of the grant: here again the case of the use goeth single, and the reason is, because a conveyance in use is nothing but a publication of the trust; and therefore so as the party trusted be declared, it is not material to whom the publication be. So much for the raising of uses. Now as to the preserving of them.

y

ly

ve

re

a-

00

: 4

ise

C-

n-

h-

afe

ırt

ver

m-

m-

ou

ed,

on-

of

s a

do-

r fo

ntly

and

the

nat-

the

rey-

not

ive-

or a leed

2. THERE is no case in the common law, where- 2 in the preserve in notice simply and nakedly is material to make a covin, or particeps criminis; and therefore if the he cases of possible in his defeater, which is in his defeater. heir, which is in by descent, infeoff one which had mere notice of notice of the disseisin, if he were not a disseisor a wrong will de facto, it is nothing: so in 33 H. VI. if a feoff- not make a ment be made upon collusion, and feoffee makes person partia feofiment over upon good confideration, the ceps criming collusion is discharged, and it is not material if to as to a world they had notice or no. So as it is put in 14 H. a- consequence VIII. if a fale be made in a market overt upon " good consideration, although it be to one that hath notice that they are stollen goods, yet the property of a stranger is bound; though in the book before remembred 33 Hen. VI. some opine to the contrary, which is clearly no law; so in 31 E. III, if affets descend to the heir, and he alien it upon good confideration, although it be to one that had notice of the debt, or of the warranty, it is good enough. So 25 Ass. p. 1. if a man enter of purpose into my lands, to the end that a stranger, which hath right, should bring his pracipe and evict the land, I may enter notwithstanding any such recovery; but if he enter, having notice that the stranger hath right, and the stranger likewise having notice of his entry, yet if it were not upon confederacy or collusion between them, it is nothing; and the reason of these 1100

cases is, because the common law looketh no far-. ther than to fee whether the act were merely actus fictus in fraudem legis; and therefore wherefoever it findeth confideration given, it dischargeth the covin.

But in uses it is otherwise.

Bur come now to the case of use, and there it is otherwise, as it is in 14 H. VIII. and 28 H. VIII. and divers books; which prove that if the feoffee sell the land for good consideration to one that hath notice, the purchaser shall stand seized to the ancient use; and the reason is because the chancery looketh farther than the common law, viz. to the corrupt conscience of him that will deal in the land, knowing it in equity to be another's; and therefore if there were Radix Amaritudinis, the confideration purgeth it not, but it is at the peril of him that giveth it: fo that confideration, or no confideration, is an iffue at the common law, but notice, or no notice is an iffue in the chancery, and fo much for the preserving of uses.

Vinthe transferring

not allow the

mentof

Butan ing the only a right or litters as equity.

3. For the transferring of uses there is no case in law whereby an action is transferred, but the Subpana in case of use was always assignable; nay farther, you find twice 27 H. VIII. Fol. 10. Pla. 9. Fol. 30. and Pla. 21. that a right of use may be transferred: for in the former case Montague Letter maketh the objection, and faith, that a right of menteright toland use cannot be given by fine, but to him that hath the possession; Fitz-Herbert answereth, yes, well enough; quære the reason, saith the book.

AND in the latter case, where cesty que use was infeoffed by the diffeifor of the feoffee, and made a feoffment over, Englefield doubted whether the fecond feoffee should have the use. Fitz-Herbert faid, I marvel you will make a doubt of it, for there is no doubt but the use passeth by the feoff--signable in ment to the stranger, and therefore this question needeth not to have been made. So the great difficulty in 10 Regina, Delamer's case, where the

th uf ma uf mı

cat

ca

re

in

tru his ed act fcie

efta rec be law fo n

aga

ed, ri i ty (ano faid

I

den to a you ting

all; well ferve in pr

exce tena be t

tance the c Obits case was in effect tenant in tail of an use, the forme thing remainder in fee; tenant in tail made a feoffment in fee, tenant, by the statute of r R. III. and the feoffee infeoffed him in the remainder of the use, who made it over; and there question being he had a land made whether the second seoffee should have the -tellique use in remainder, it is said that the second feoffee must needs have the best right in conscience; because the first seoffee claimed nothing but in trust, and the cesty que use cannot claim it against his fale; but the reason is apparent, (as was touched before) that a use in effe was but a thing in action, or in fuit to be brought in court of conscience, and where the subpana was to be brought against the feoffee in possession to execute the estate, or against the seoffee out of possession to recontinue the estate, always the subpana might be transferred; for still the action at the common law was not stir'd, but remained in the feoffee; and fo no mischief of maintenance or transferring rights.

e

e d

e

v, 11

)-

1-

it

nne

ue

ng

ise

he

ay la.

ay

gue

of

ath

vell

was

ade the

bert

for

off-

tion

reat the

case

And if a use being but a right may be affigned, and pass'd over to a stranger, a multo fortiori it may be limited to a stranger upon the privity of the first conveyance, as shall be handled in another place, and as to what Glanvile, justice, faid, he could never find by any book, or evidence of antiquity, a contingent use limited over to a stranger: I answer, first, it is no marvel that you find no case before E. IV. his time, of contingent uses, where there be not fix of uses in all; and the reason I doubt was, men did choose well whom they trufted, and truft was well observed: and at this day in Ireland, where uses be in practice, cases of uses come seldom in question, except it be fometimes upon the alienations of tenants in tail by fine, that the feoffees will not be brought to execute estates, to the dis-inheritance of ancient blood. But for experience, and the conveyance there was nothing more usual in Obits, than to will the use of the land to certain perions

im wanters

persons and their heirs; so long as they shall pay the chantry priefts their wages, and in default of payment, to limit the use over to other persons and their heirs; and so in case of forfeiture, through many degrees; and fuch conveyances

Nin the estinguish of

Colleteral warranty will notex thonguish an use, tho sal litte

tinguish by may it in clude, we fee that things may be avoided and the same person determined by the ceremonies and acts, like unto

Glant a 10 resemble

not the news fracturef

are as ancient as R. II. his time. 4. Now for determining and extinguishing of uses, I put the case of collateral garranty before, and to that the notable case of 14 H. VIII. Halfpenny's case, where this very point was as in the principal case; for a right out of land, and the land itself in case of possession cannot stand together, but the rent shall be extinct; but there the case is, that the use of the land, and the use of it will a legthe rent shall stand well enough together; for a rent-charge was granted by the feoffee to one, that had notice of the use, and ruled, that the Gel ante 309 rent was to the ancient use, and both uses were Read willer in effe fimul & femel: and though Brudenell chief justice urged the ground of possession to be otherunity of possessive wife, yet he was over-ruled by the other three but the use of justices, and Brooke said unto him, he thought Fent & of the langhe argued much for his pleasure; and to con-

> entry; that which passeth by grant, by claim; that which passeth by way of charge, determineth by way of discharge: and so a use which is raised but by a declaration or limitation, may cease by words of declaration or limitation, as

> the civil law faith, in bis magis consentaneum ef,

those by which they are created and raised; that

which passeth by livery ought to be avoided by

quam ut iisdem modis res dissolvantur a quibus constituantur. For the inception and progression of uses; I have for a precedent in them searched other laws, because states and common-wealths

have common accidents; and I find in the civil law, that that which cometh nearest in name to the use, is nothing like in matter, which is usus fruc-

the kyomany but their fider comming tus:

copy Ls. c SE

tu

W

B

COI

lib

inl

CON

ten

tha

wa

un

in

nec

fort

the

felf

me

of i

fper

ticu

præ

inco

ed

for

tum

que

likev

keth

am (

com

man

here

F

troul for it there

y, in

tus! for usus fructus & dominium is with them, as with their particular tenancy and inheritance. But that which resembleth the use most is fidei commissio, and therefore you shall find in Justinian, lib. 2. that they had a form in testaments, to give inheritance to one to the use of another, Hæredem constituo Caium, rogo autem te, Caie, ut bæreditatem restituas Seio; and the text of the civilians saith, that for a great time if the heir did not, as he was required, cefty que use had no remedy at all, until about the time of Augustus Casar there grew in custom a flattering form of trust, for they penned it thus: Rogo te per salutem Augusti, or per fortunam Augusti &c. Whereupon Augustus took the breach of trust to found in derogation of himfelf, and made a rescript to the prætor to give remedy in fuch cases; whereupon within the space of a hundred years, these trusts did spring and speed so fast, as they were forced to have a particular chancellor only for uses, who was called prætor fidei commissarius; and not long after the inconvenience of them being found, they reforted unto a remedy much like unto this statute; for by two decrees of senate, called fenatus-confultum Trebellianum & Pegasianum, they made cesty que use to be heir in substance. I have sought likewise, whether there be any thing which maketh with them in our law, and I find that Periam chief baron in the argument of Chudley's case compareth them to copyholders, and aptly for many respects.

First, because as an use seemeth to be an hereditament in the court of chancery, so the copy-hold seemeth to be an hereditament in the

Ls. court.

F

S

25

of

e,

f-

ne

he

e-

he

of

ra

ne,

the

ere

nief

ier-

ree

ight

on-

and

unto

that

l by

im;

rmi-

ch is

may

3, as

n eft,

con-

on of

red o

ealths

e civil

me to

s fruc-

tus:

SECONDLY, this conceit of limitation hath been troublesome in copy-holds as well as in uses; for it hath been of late days questioned, whether there should be adowers, tenancy by the courte-sy, intails, discontinuances, and recoveries of copy-holders,

Tome re-

READING ON THE STATUTE OF USES.

holders, in the nature of inheritances at the common law, and still the judgments have weighed, that you must have particular customs in copyholds, as well as particular reasons of conscience

in use, and the limitation rejected.

AND thirdly, because they both grew to strength and credit by degrees: for the copyholder first had no remedy at all against the lord, and were as tenancy at will. Afterwards it grew to have remedy in chancery, and afterwards against their lords by trespass at the common law; and now lastly the law is taken by some, that they have remedy by ejectione firmæ, without a special custom of leasing. So no doubt in uses: At the first the chancery made question to give remedy, until uses grew more general, and the chancery more eminent; and then they grew to have remedy in conscience: but they could never obtain any manner of remedy at the common law, neither against the feoffee, nor against strangers; but the remedy against the feoffee was left to the subpana; and the remedy against strangers to the feoffee.

Now for the cases whereupon uses were put in practice, Coke in his reading doth say well, that they were produced sometimes for sear, and many times for fraud. But I hold that neither of these cases were so much the reasons of uses, as another reason in the beginning, which was, that lands by the common law of England were not testamentary, or deviseable; and of late years since the statute, the case of the conveyance for sparing of purchases, and execution of estates; and now last of all an excess of evil in mens minds, affecting to have the assurance of their estate, and possession to be revocable in their own times, and irrevocable after their own times.

Now for the commencement and proceeding of them, I have confidered what it hath been in course of common law, and what it hath been in course

May areswere intoforced

2-themany of their

ce Hi wl aft

tw

CO

the bei the not for

bee And thir

ren

cont mor thin

fide

of a mad when because reste chase

his co prove towar

and i

chase An law i

mon dial, v

1-

d,

y-

ce

to

y-

d,

ew

a-

W;

ey

cial

the

dy,

ery

ne-

ain

nei-

rs;

to

s to

t in

hat

ma-

r of

as

that

not

ince

ring

now

fect-

pof-

and

ding

n in

n in

ourie

course of statute. For the common law, the conceit of Shelly in 24 H. VIII. and of Pollard in 27 H. VIII. feemeth to me to be without ground, which was that the use succeeded the tenure; for after that the statute of emptores terrarum, which was made 18 E. I. had taken away the tenure between the feoffor and the feoffee, and left it to the lord Paramount: they faid that the feoffment being then merely without confideration, should therefore intend an use to the feoffor, which cannot be; for by that reason, if the feoffment before the statute had been made tenendum de capitalibus dominis, as it must be, there should have been an use unto the feoffor before that statute. And again, if a grant had been made of fuch things as confift not in tenure, as advowfons, rents, villains, and the like, there should have been a use of them, wherein the law was quite contrary; for after the time that uses grew common, it was nevertheless a great doubt whether things that did lie in grant, did not carry a confideration in themselves because of the deed.

And therefore I do judge that the intendment of a use to the feoffor, where the feoffment was made without consideration, grew long after, when uses waxed general; and for this reason, because when feoffments were made, and that it rested doubtful whether it were in use or in purchase, because purchases were things notorious, and uses were things secret, the chancellor thought it more convenient to put the purchaser to prove his consideration, than the feoffor and his heirs to prove the trust; and so made the intendment towards the use, and put the proof upon the purchaser.

And therefore as uses were at the common law in reason, for whatsoever is not by statute, nor against law, may be said to be at the common law; and both the general trust and the special, were things not prohibited by the law, though

11.3 A

might

perience and practice of uses were not ancient;

e

n

g

W

be

th

pr

fo

ać

tu

A

up

dro

of

the

it a

Ri

anc

wa

to 1

ring

twe

cro

cou

the

rect

desc

relea

ftrar

and

Rick

Was

good

came

1

and my reasons why I think so, are these.

FIRST, I cannot find in any evidence before King R. II. his time, the clause ad opus & usum, and the very latin of it savoureth of that time; for in ancient time, about Edw. I. his time, and before, when lawyers were part civilians, the latin phrase was much purer, as you may see by Bracton's writing, and by ancient patents and deeds, and chiefly by the register of writs, which is good latin; wherein this phrase (ad opus & usum) and the words (ad opus) is a barbarous phrase, and like enough to be the penning of some chaplain that was not much past his grammar, where he had found opus & usus coupled together, and that they did govern an ablative case; as they do indeed fince this statute, for they take away the land and put them into a conveyance.

SECONDLY, I find in no private act of attainder, the clause of forfeiture of lands, the words, which he hath in possession or in use, until Ed.

IV.'s reign.

THIRDLY, I find the word (u/e) in no statute until 7 Rich. II. cap. 11. of proviso's, and in 15

Rich. II. of Mortmaine.

FOURTHLY, I collect out of Choke's speech in 8 Edw. IV. where he saith, that by the advice of all the judges, it was thought that the subpanal did not lie against the heir of the seossee which was in by law, but cesty que use was driven to his bill in parliament, that uses even in that time were but in their infancy; for no doubt but at the first the chancery made difficulty to give remedy at all, and did leave it to the particular conscience of the seossee; but after the chancery grew absolute, as may appear by the statute of 13 H. VI. that complainants in chancery should enter into bond to prove their suggestions, which sheweth that the chancery at that time began to embrace

13

47

3

re

m,

e;

nd

tin

ac-

ds,

is

m)

ind

ain

he

hat

in-

the

ain-

rds,

Ed.

tute

15

in 8 e of

pæna

hich

o his

time

it at

e re-

cular

ncery

te of

hould

which

an to

embrace too far, and was used for vexation; yet nevertheless it made scruple to give remedy against the heir being in by act in law, though he were privy; so that it cannot be that uses had been of any great continuance when they made that a question: as for the case of matrimony praelocuti, it hath no affinity with use; for where-soever there was remedy at the common law by action, it cannot be intended to be of the nature of a use.

And for the book commonly vouched of 8 Ass. where Earl calleth the possession of a conizee upon a fine levied by consent, an entry in auter droit, and 44 of E. III. where there is mention of the seoffors that sued by petition to the King, they be but implications of no moment. So as it appeareth the first practice of uses was about Richard II. his time; and the great multiplying and over-spreading of them was partly during the wars in France, which drew most of the nobility to be absent from their possessions; and partly during the time of the trouble and civil war between the two houses about the title of the crown.

Now to conclude the progression of uses in the course of statutes, I do note three special points.

1. THAT a use had never any force at all, at them. O.

the common law, but by statute law.

2. That there was never any statute made directly for the benefit of cesty que use, as that the descent of an use should toll an entry, or that a release should be good to the pernor of the profits, or the like; but always for the benefit of strangers and other persons against cesty que use, and his feosses: for though by the statute of Richard III. he might alter his feosses, yet that was not the scope of the statute, but to make good his assurance to other persons, and the other came in ex oblique.

3. THAT the special intent unlawful and covenous was the original of uses, though after it induced to the lawful intent general and special; for 30 Edward III. is the first statute I find, wherein mention is made of the taking of profits by one, where the estate in law is in another.

ì

bi

m

la

ali

aft

ou

fta

for

use

alie

in t

wei

fed

to t

his

mac

whe

ratio

past.

chaf

fome they

In 4

is en

as th withi

case

the d the ye

II H

declai

that i the d

seisin,

Statute

For as to the opinion in 27 Hen. VIII. that in case of the statute of Marlebridge, the feoffees took the profits, it is but a conceit; for the law is this day, that if a man infeoff his eldest fon within age, and without consideration, although the profits be taken to the use of the son, yet it is a feoffment within the statute. for the statute de religiosis 7 Ed. I. which prohibits generally that religious persons should not purchase arte vel ingenio, yet it maketh no mention of a use, but it saith, colore donationis termini vel alicujus tituli, reciting there three forms of conveyances, the gift, the long leafe, and feigned recovery; which gift cannot be understood of a gift to a stranger to their use, for that came to be holpen by 15 Richard II. long after. But to proceed in 50Edward III. a statute was made for the relief of creditors against such as made covenous gifts of their lands and goods, and conveyed their bodies into fanctuaries, there living high upon others goods; and therefore that statute made their lands liable to their creditors executions in that particular case, if they took the profits. In I Richard II. a statute was made for relief of those as had right of action, against those as had removed the tenancy of the pracipe from them, fometimes by infeoffing great persons, for maintenance, and fometimes by fecret feoffments to others, whereof the defendants could have no notice; and therefore the statute maketh the recovery good in all actions against the first feoffees as they took the profits, and so the defendants bring their action within a year of their exexpulsion. In 2 Richard II. Cap. 3. Session 2. an impersection of the statute of 50 Edward III. was holpen; for whereas the statute took no place, but where the desendant appeared, and so was frustrated, the statute giveth upon proclamation, made at the gate of the place privileged, that the

land should be liable without appearance.

١,

)-

at f-

ne el-

113

he

nd

nilot

n-

er-

ms

ind

erhat

ter.

was 1 as

ods,

nere

that

tors

ainst

ecipe

ons,

eoffould

keth

first

e de-

their

ex-

IN 7 R. 2. a statute was made for the restraint of aliens, to take any benefices, or dignities ecclesiaftical, or farms, or administration to them, without the king's special license, upon pain of the statute of provisors: which being remedied by a former statute, where the alien took it to his own use; it is by that statute remedied, where the alien took it to the use of another, as it is said in the book; though I guess, that if the record were fearched, it should be, if any other purchafed to the use of an alien, and that the words (or to the use of another) should be (or any other to his use.) In 15 Rich. II. cap. 5. a statute was made for the relief of lords against Mortmain, where feoffments were made to the use of corporations, and an ordinance made that for feoffments past, the feoffees should before a day, either purchase license to amortise them, or alien them to some other use, or other feoffments to come, or they should be within the statute of Mortmain. In 4 Hen. IV. cap. 7. the statute of I Richard II. is enlarged in the limitation of time; for whereas the statute did limit the action to be brought within the year of the feoffment, this statute in cale of a diffeifin extends the time to the life of the diffeifor; and in all other actions, leaves it to the years, from the time of the action grown. II Henry VI. cap. 3. that statute of 4 Henry IV. is declared, because the conceit was upon the statute that in case of disseisin the limitation of the life of the disseifor went only to the affise of novel disseisin, and to no other action; and therefore that statute declareth the former law to extend to all other

h

h

Ca

CC

W

ar

of

tu

fo

Wa

lor

in

me

 M_0

me

moi

rat

act

tion

frat

cor

terr

por

is re

lord

neit

the

feoff

vifo,

from

this

forth

use,

Parts

T

demand !

other actions, grounded upon novel diffeisin. II Henry VI. cap. 5. a statute was made for relief of him in remainder against particular tenants, for lives, or years, that affigned over their estates, and took the profits, and then committed waste against them; therefore this statute giveth an action of waste, being pernors of the profits. all this course of statutes no relief is given to purchasers, that come in by the party, but to fuch as come in by law, as defendants in pracipes, whether they be creditors, diffeifors, or lesfors, and that only in case of Mortmain: and note also, that they be all in cases of special covenous intents, as to defeat executions, tenancy to the pracipe, and the statute of Mortmain, or provisors. From 11 Henry VI. to 1 R. III. being the space of fifty years, there is a filence of uses in the statute book, which was at that time, when, no question, they were favoured most. In I Richard III. cap. 1. cometh the great statute for relief of those that come in by the party, and at that time an use appeareth in his likeness; for there is not a word spoken of taking the profits, to describe a use by, but of claiming to a use; and this statute ordained, that all gifts, feoffments, grants, &c. shall be good against the feoffors, donors and grantors, and all other persons claiming only to their use; so as here the purchaser was fully relieved, and cesty que use was obiter enabled to change his feoffees; because there were no words in the statute of feoffments, grants, &c. upon good confideration; but generally in Henry VII's time, new statutes were made for further help and remedy to those that came in by act in law; as first 1 Henry VII. cap. 1. a formedon is given without limitation of time against cesty que use; and obiter, because they make him a tenant, they give him advantage of a tenant, as of age, and voucher: quære 4 Hen. VII. 17. the wardship is given to the lord of the heir of cefty que use, dying,

n

ef

S.

s,

te

an

In

to

to

es,

ors,

lfo,

in-

ra-

ors.

ace

sta-

que-

bard

f of

time

not

be a

fta-

ants,

s and

ly to

y re-

ed to

words

upon

VII's

p and

w; as

with-

; and

y give

d vou-

is gl-

dying

and

and no will declared, is given to the lord, as if he had died feised in demesne, and action of waste given to the heir against the guardian, and damages, if the lord were barr'd in his writ of ward; and relief is likewise given unto the lord, if the heir holding the knight-service be of full age. 19 Hen. VII. cap. 15. there is relief given in three cases, first to the creditors upon matters of record, as upon recognizance, statute, or judgment, whereof the two former were not aided at all by any statute; and the last was aided by a statute of 50 E. III. and 2 R. II. only in case of sanctuary men. Secondly, to the lords in focage for their relief, and heriots upon death, which was omitted in the 4 Hen. VII. and lastly to the lords of villains, upon a purchase of their villains In 23 Henry VIII. cap. 10. a further remedy was given in a case, like unto the case of Mortmain; for in the statute of 15 Richard II. remedy was given where the use came ad manum mortuam, which was when it came to fome corporation: now when uses were limited to a thing, act, or work, and to a body, as to the reparation of a church, or an abbot, or to a guild, or fraternities, as are only in reputation, but not incorporate: as to parishes, or such guilds or fraternities as are only in reputation, but not incorporate; that case was omitted, which by this statute is remedied, not by way of giving entry unto the lord, but by way of making the use utterly void; neither doth the statute express to whose benefit the use shall be made void, either the feoffor, or feoffee, but leaveth it to law, and addeth a proviso, that uses may be limited twenty years from the gift, and no longer.

This is the whole course of statute law before this statute, touching uses. Thus have I set forth unto you the nature and definition of an use, the differences and trust of an use, and the parts and qualities of it; and by what rules and

X 2

learn-

learnings uses shall be guided and ordered: by a precedent of them in our laws, the causes of the fpringing and fpreading of uses, the continuance of them, and the proceedings that they have had both in common law and statute law; whereby it may appear, that a use is no more but a general trust, when any one will trust the conscience of another better than his own estate and possession, which is an accident or event of human fociety, which hath been, and will be in all laws, and therefore was at the common law, which is common reason. Fitz-Herbert saith in the 14 H. VIII. common reason is common law, and not conscience; but common reason doth define that uses should be remedied in conscience, and not in courts of law, and ordered by rules in confcience, and not by streight rules of law, for the common law hath a kind of a rule and furvey over the chancery, to determine what belongs to the chancery. And therefore we may truly conclude, that the force and strength that a use had or hath in conscience, is by common law, and the force that it had or hath by common law is only by statutes.

0

Ь

th

to

of

pl

CO

du

re.

pre

an

rol

exp

in e

Se M

ted

WOI

shou

bus

of 1

the

the

tent

tenti

Now followeth in time and matter, the confideration of this statute, which is of principal labour; for those former considerations which we

have handled serve but for introduction.

This statute, as it is the statute which of all others hath the greatest power and operation over the heritages of the realm, so howsoever it hath been by the humour of the time perverted in exposition, yet in itself is most perfectly and exactly conceived and penned of any law in the book. 'Tis induced with the most declaring and persuading preamble, 'tis consisting and standing upon the wisest and sittest ordinances, and qualified with the most foreseeing and circumspect savings and provisoes: and lastly 'tis the best ponder'd in all the words and clauses of it of any statute

statute that I find; but before I come to the statute itself, I will note unto you three matters of circumstance.

1. THE time of the statute: 2. The title of it:

3. The president or pattern of it.

7 2

he

ice

ad

it

ral of

on,

ty,

and

m-

III.

on-

hat

not

fci-

the

vey

s to

on-

had

and

v is

onfila-

we

f all

n 0-

r it

rted

and

the

and

ding

qua-

spect

pon-

any atute

For the time of it was in 27 Hen. VIII. when It i time when the King was in full peace, and a wealthy and Partationed flourishing estate, in which nature of time men are most careful of their possessions; as well because purchasers are most stirring: as again, because the purchaser when he is full, is no less careful of his affurance to his children, and of disposing that which he hath gotten, than he was of his bargain for compassing thereof.

About that time the realm likewise began to be enfranchised from the tributes of Rome, and the possessions that had been in Montmain began to stir abroad; for this year was the suppression of the smaller houses of religion, all tending to plenty, and purchasing: and this statute came in confort with divers excellent statutes, made for the kingdom in the same paliament; as the reduction of Wales to a more civil government, the re-edifying of diverse cities and towns, the sup-

preffing of depopulation and inclosures.

For the title, it hath one title in the roll, and I hite another in course of pleading. The title in the? roll is no solemn title, but an act entitled, an act expressing an order for uses and wills; the title in course of pleading is, statutum de usibus, in possessionem transferendis: wherein Walmsty justice noted well 4 Regina, that if a man look to the working of the statute, he would think that it should be turned the other way, de possessionibus ad usus transferendis; for that is the courie of the statute, to bring possession to the use. But the title is framed not according to the work of the statute, but according to the scope and intention of the statute, nam quod primum est in intentione, ultimum oft in operatione. The intention

of the statute by carrying the possession to the use, is to turn the use to a possession; for the words are not de possessionibus ad usus transferendis; and as the grammarian faith, præpositio (ad) denotat notam actionis, sed præpositio (in) cum accusativo denotat notam alterationis: and therefore King [mill justice in the same case saith, that the meaning of the statute was, to make a transubstantiation of the use into a possession. But it is to be noted, that titles of acts of parliament feverally came in but in the 5 H. VIII. for before that time there was but one title of all the acts made in one parliament; and that was no title neither, but a general preface of the good intent of the King, tho' now it is parcel of the record.

For the president of this statute upon which The it is drawn, I do find by the first Richard III. whereupon you may fee the very mould whereon this statute was made, that the said King having

Jour was been infeoffed (before he usurped) to uses, as it vanting to was ordained that the land whereof he was jointly on ale the infeoffed as if he had not been named; and where sense com he was folely infeoffed, it should be in cefty que · pleati

use, in estate, as he had the use.

Now to come to the statute itself, the statute confisteth as other laws do upon a preamble, the body of the law, and certain favings, and provisoes. The preamble setteth forth the inconveniences, the body of the law giveth the remedy, and the favings and provifoes take away the inconveniences of the remedy. For new laws are like the apothecaries druggs, though they remedy the difease, yet they trouble the body; and therefore they use to correct with spices; so it is not possible to find a remedy for any mischief in the common-wealth, but it will beget fome new mifchief; and therefore they spice their laws with provisoes to correct and qualify them.

THE preamble of the law was justly commended by Popham chief justice in 36 Regina, where

C

to

u

aı

d

th

of

tr

to

m

or

fe

de

m

th

fu

he faith, that there is little need to fearch and collect out of cases, before this statute, what the mischief was which the scope of the statute was to redress; because there is a shorter way offered us, by the fufficiency and fulness of the preamble, and therefore it is good to consider it, and ponder it thoroughly.

THE preamble hath three parts.

e

e

2-1)

1re

ne

b-

is

e-

re As

tle

ent l.

ch

II.

on

ing

it

tly

ere que

ute the

ro-

ve-

dy, in-

are

edy ere-

not

the

mif-

with

end-

here

he

FIRST a recital of the principal inconvenience, he is convenience which is the root of all the rest.

SECONDLY, an enumeration of divers particu- del forth. lar inconveniencies, as branches of the former.

THIRDLY, a tafte or brief note of the remedy that the statute meaneth to apply. The princi- New Jac. pal inconvenience which is radix omnium malorum, is the directing from the grounds and principles of the common law, by inventing a mean to transfer lands and inheritances without any folemnity, or act notorious: fo as the whole statute is to be expounded strongly towards the extinguishment of all conveyances, whereby the freehold or inheritance may pass without any new confections of deeds, executions of estate or entries, except it be where the estate is of privity and dependance one towards the other, in which cases mutatis mutandis, they might pass by the rules of the common law.

THE particular inconveniencies by the law rehearfed may be reduced into four heads.

1. First, that these conveyances in use are weak for confideration.

2. SECONDLY, that they are obscure and doubtful for trial.

3. THIRDLY, that they are dangerous for want of notice and publication.

4. FOURTHLY, that they are exempted from all fuch titles as the law subjecteth possessions unto.

THE first inconvenience lighteth upon heirs.

THE fecond upon jurors and witnesses.

THE third upon purchasers.

THE

Mrs. presendle

THE fourth upon fuch as come in by gift in law.
ALL which are perfons that the law doth principally respect and favour.

For the first of these are three impediments (to the judgment of man) in disposing justly and

advisedly of his estate.

FIRST, trouble of mind. SECONDLY, want of time.

THIRDLY, of wife and faithful counsel about him. I. AND all these three the statute did find to be in the disposition of an use by will, whereof followed the unjust disinherison of heirs. the favour of law unto heirs appeareth in many parts of the law; as the law of descent privilegeth the possession of the heir, against the entry of him that hath right by the law: no man shall warrant against his heir, except he warrant against himself, and divers other cases too long to stand upon: and we fee the ancient law in Glanvill's time was, that the ancestor could not disinherit his heir by grant, or other act executed in time of fickness; neither could he alien land which had descended unto him, except it were for consideration of money or fervice, but not to advance any younger brother without the confent of the heir.

2. The jurors

2. For trials, no law ever took a straiter course that evidence should not be perplexed, nor juries inveigled, than the common law of England; as on the other side, never law took a more precise and strait course with juries, that they should give a direct verdict. For whereas in a manner all laws do give the tryers, or jurors (which in all other laws are called judges de fasto) a liberty to give non liquet, that is, to give no verdict at all, and so the case to stand abated; our law enforceth them to a direct verdict, general or special; and whereas other laws, accept of plurality of voices to make a verdict, our law enforceth them all to agree in one; and whereas other laws leave them

the armore or tion

iffi the as

th

wi ha

fpa

and

hav find laft

tan

rio

the the for in

fo a as a pur com

ter

which chaff Rick fort.

mor

at all and play

them to their own time, and ease, and to part, and to meet again; our law doth dures and imprison them in the hardest manner, without light or comfort, until they be agreed, in consideration of straitness and coercion: it is consonant, that the law do require in all matters brought to issue, that there be full proof and evidence; and therefore if the matter in itself be of that surety as in simple contracts, which are made by parol, without writing, it alloweth wager of law.

I

0

of w

e-

ry

ıst

nd U's

rit

ad

dence

the

ter

nor

re-

uld

ner

in in

all,

tor-

cial;

v ot

hem eave

hem

In iffue upon the mere right (which is a thing hardly to discern) it alloweth wager of battail to spare jurors, if time have wore out the marks and badges of truth: from time to time there have been statutes of limitation, where you shall find this mischief of perjuries often recited; and lastly, which is the matter in hand, all inheritances could not pass but by acts overt and noto-

rious, as by deeds, livery, and records.

3. For purchasers (bona fide) it may appear that they were ever favoured in our law, as first by the great favour of warranties, which were ever for the help of purchasers: as where by the law in 5 Edw. III.'s time, the disseifor could not enter upon the feoffee in regard of the warranty; so again the collateral, garranty, which otherwise was a hard law, grewin-doubt only upon favour of purchasers; fo was the binding of fines at the common law, the invention and practice of recoveries, to defeat the statute of intails, and many more grounds and learnings are to be found, which respect the quiet of the possession of pur-And therefore though the statute of I Rich. III. had provided for the purchaser in some fort, by enabling the acts and conveyances of cesty que use; yet nevertheless, the statute did not at all disable the acts or charges of the seoffees; and fo as Walmesty justice said 42 Regina, they played at double hand, for cefty que use might iell.

fell, and the feoffee might fell, which was a very

great uncertainty to the purchaser.

4. For the fourth inconvenience towards those that come in by law, conveyances in uses were like privileged places or liberties; for as there the law doth not run, so upon such conveyances the law could take no hold, but they were exempted from all titles in law. No man is so absolute owner of his possessions, but that the wisdom of the law doth reserve certain titles unto others; and such persons come not in by the pleasure and disposition of the party, but by the justice and consideration of law, and therefore of all others they are most favour'd: and also they are principally three.

1. THE King and lords who lost the benefit of attainders, fines for alienations, escheats, aids,

heriots, reliefs, &c.

2. THE defendants in pracipes either real or personal, for debt and damages, who lost the benefit of their recoveries and executions.

3. TENANTS in dower, and by the courtefy,

who lost their estates and tithes.

1. FIRST for the King: no law doth endow the King or Sovereign with more prerogatives or privileges: for his person is privileged from suits and actions, his possessions from interruption and disturbance, his right from limitation of time, his patents and gifts from all deceits and false suggestions. Next the King is the lord, whose duties and rights the law doth much favour, because the law supposeth the land did originally come from him; for until the statute of Quia emptores terrarum, the lord was not forced to destruct or dismember his signiory or service. So until 15 H. VII. the law was taken, that the lord, upon his title of wardship, should be put to a conizee of a statute, or a termor; so again we see, that the statute of Mortmain was made to preserve the lord's

put out

fo wo

del tine led fpec tior fucl leth die not that com

rema with the poin preju ancie ly cance trial mary image verfit

of the nister F1

SE mage been

T_H

lord's escheats and wards, The tenant in dower is fo much favoured, as that it is the common byword in the law, that the law favoureth three things.

1. LIFE. 2. Liberty. 3. Dower.

e

8

 \mathbf{f}

S,

or e-

y,

WO

or

iits

ind

his

ug-

du-

ule

ome

ores t or

5 H. his

ofa

the

the

ord's

So in case of voucher, the seme shall not be delayed, but shall recover against the heir incontinent; fo likewise of tenant by curtefy it is called tenancy by the law of England, and therefore specially favoured, as a proper conceit and invention of our law; fo as again the law doth favour fuch as have ancient rights, and therefore it telleth us it is commonly faid that a right cannot die: and that ground of law, that a freehold cannot be in suspence, sheweth it well, insomuch that the law will rather give the land to the first comer, which we call an occupant, than want a tenant to a demandant's action.

And again the other ancient ground of law of remitter sheweth that where the tenant faileth without folly in the defendant, the law executeth the ancient right. To conclude therefore this point, when this practice of feoffments to use did prejudice and damnify all those persons that the ancient common law favour'd; and did absolutely cross the wisdom of the law: to have conveyances confiderate and not odious, and to have trial thereupon clear and not inveighed, it is no marvail that the statute concludeth, that their subtle imaginations and abuses tended to the utter subversion of the ancient common laws of this realm.

THE third part of the preamble giveth a touch the remains of the remedy which the statute intendeth to minister, consisting in two parts.

First, the expiration of feoffinests testing the patron SECONDLY, the taking away of the hurt, damage, and deceit of the uses, out of which have been gathered two extremities of opinions.

THE first opinion is, that the intention of the statute was to discontinue and banish all convey-

ances

ances in use; grounding themselves upon the words, that the statute doth not speak of the extinguishment or extirpation of the use, viz. unity of possession, but of an extinguishment or extirpation of the feoffment, &c. which is the conveyance itself.

SECONDLY, out of the words (abuse and errors) heretofore used and accustomed, as if uses had not been at the common law, but had been only

an erroneous device or practice,

To both which I answer.

To the former, that the extirpation which the statute meant was plain, to be of the feoffee's estate, and not to the form of conveyances.

To the latter I say, that for the word (abuse) that may be an abuse of the law which is not against law, as the taking long leases at this day of land in capite to defraud wardships, is an abuse of the law, which is not against law: and by the word (errors) the statute meant by it, not a mistaking of the law, but wandring or going aftray, or digreffing from the ancient practice of the law into a by-courfe: as when we fay (erravimus cum patribus juris) it is not meant of ignorance only, but of perversity. But to prove that the statute meant not to suppress the form of conveyances, there be three reasons which are not answerable.

THE first is, that the statute in the very branch thereof hath words, de futuro (that are feised, or hereafter shall be seised:) and whereas it may be faid that these words were put in, in regard of uses suspended by diffeisins, and so no present feisin to the use, until a regress of the feoffees; that intendment is very particular, for commonly fuch cales are brought in by provisoes, or special branches, and not intermixed in the body of a statute; and it had been easy for the statute to have faid, or hereafter shall be seised upon any

feoffment, &c. heretofore had or made.

THE

ft

le

of

liv

eft

for

for

tin

eth

and

WO

for

tha

cafe

hav

use

and

that

the

as I

ver

now

gain

extr

med

they

the I

uses,

that

comp

Work

and t

which of th

T

THE second reason is upon the words of the statute of involments, which saith, that no hereditaments shall pass, &c. or any use thereof, &c. whereby it is manifest, that the statute meant to leave the form of conveyance with the addition

of a farther ceremony.

THE third reason I make is out of the words of the provisoe, where it is said, that no primer seisin, livery, no fine, nor alienation, shall be taken for any estate executed by force of the statute of 27. before the first of May 1536, but they shall be paid for uses made and executed in possession for the time after; where the word (made) directly goeth to conveyances in use made after the statute, and can have no other understanding; for the words (executed in possession) would have served for the case of regress: and lastly, which is more than all, if they have had any fuch intent, the case being so general and so plain, they would have had words express, that every limitation of use made after the statute should have been void; and this was the exposition, as tradition goeth, that a reader of Grays-Inn, which read foon after the statute, was in trouble for, and worthily, who, as I suppose, was Boy, whose reading I could never see; but I do now insist upon it, because now again some in an immoderate invective against uses, do relapse to the same opinion.

The second opinion which I called a contrary extremity is, that the statute meant only to remedy the mischiefs in the preamble, recited as they grew by reason of divided use; and although the like mischief may grow upon the contingent uses, yet the statute had no foresight of them at that time, and so it was merely a new case not comprised. Whereunto I answer, that it is the work of the statute to execute the divided use; and therefore to make an use void by this statute which was good before, though it doth participate of the mischief recited in the statute, were to

15

make

ad ly

n

or

1e

he e's (e)

aay afe the

ay, aw

ute ces, le.

nch or be

l of fent ees;

only ecial of a

e to

THE

make a law upon a preamble without a purview, which were grosly absurd. But upon the question what uses are executed, and what not; and whether out of possessions of a disseisor, or other possessions out of privity or not, there you shall guide your exposition according to the preamble; as shall be handled in my next day's discourse; and so much touching the preamble of this law.

of the body of

For the body of the law, I would wish all readers that expound statutes to do as scholars are willed to do: that is, first to seek out the principal verb; that is, to note and single out the material words whereupon the statute is framed; for there are in every statute certain words, which are as veins where the life and blood of the statute cometh, and where all doubts do arise, and the rest are litera mortua sulfilling words.

The body of the statute consisteth upon two

parts.

FIRST, a supposition, or case put, as Anderson 36 Reginæ calleth it.

SECONDLY, a purview or ordinance thereupon.

THE cases of the statute are three, and every one hath his purview.

THE general case.

THE case of co-feoffees to the use of some of them.

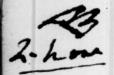
AND the general case of seosses to the use or pernors of rents or profits.

THE general case is built upon eight material words.

Four on the part of the feoffees.

THREE on the part of cesty que use, and one common to them both.

THE first material word on the part of the feoffees is the word (person.) This excludes all alliances; for there can be no trust repos'd but in a person certain: it excludes again all corporations; for they are equalled to a use certain: for note on the part of the seossor the statute insists



qui thi

bu

up

or the rul rig the

the and is f two ut a more pre-

brin tute and for

Ί

there work

felve

the is plater, carri

whice all c

upon the word (person,) and in the part of cesty

que use, that added body politick.

e

13

d

a-

re 1-

a-

1;

ch

a-

nd

WO

forz

n.

ery

of

erial

one

feof-

lian-

in a

ons;

note

nfilts upon

THE second word material, is the word (seiz'd:) this excludes chattels. The reason is, that the statute meant to remit the common law, and not but that the chattels might ever pass by testament or by parol; therefore the use did not pervert them. It excludes rights, for it is against the rules of the common law to grant, or transfer rights; and therefore the statute would execute

THIRDLY, it excludes contingent uses, because the feisin cannot be but to a fee-simple of a use; and when that is limited, the feifin of the feoffee is spent; for Littleton tells us, that there are but two seisins, one in Dominio ut de feodo, the other ut de feodo & jure; and the feoffee by the common law could execute but the fee-simple to uses. present, and not post uses; and therefore the statute meant not to execute them.

THE third material word is (hereafter) that bringeth in again conveyances made after the statute; it brings in again conveyances made before, and disturb'd by disseisin, and recontinued after; for it is not faid infeoffed to use hereafter seiz'd.

THE fourth word is (hereditament) which is to be understood of those things whereof an inheritance is in ese: for if I grant a rent-charge de novo for life to a use, this is good enough; yet there is no inheritance in being of this rent: this word likewise excludes annuities and uses them- Hexelales selves; so that a use cannot be to a use.

THE first word on the part of cesty que use, is treasure the word (use, confidence or trust) whereby it -- - lype is plain that the statute meant to remedy the mat-tonal kend ter, and not words; and in all the clauses it still carrieth the words.

THE second word is the word (person) again which excludeth all alliances: it excludeth also all contingent uses which are not to bodies, lively 335

and natural, as the building of a church, the making of a bridge; but here (as noted before) it is

ever coupled with body politick.

The third word is the word (other;) for the statute meant not to cross the common law. Now at this time uses were grown to such a familiarity, as men could not think of possession, but in course of use; and so every man was seised to his own use, as well as to the use of others; therefore because statutes would not stir nor turmoil possession fettled at the common law, it putteth in precisely this word (other:) meaning the divided use, and not the conjoined use; and this causeth the clause of joint seossession follow in a branch by itself; for else that case had been doubtful

91

of

he

Ra

ho

fee

lik

quo fior

of

fhal

give

first 'I

the

fimp

ther

man of u

and

the t

tinua

fimp.

keth

differ

faid

take

rever

or po

to exe

ter; t

upon this word (other.)

Thisto be explained on some happing

THE words that are common to both, are words expressing the conveyance whereby the use ariseth of which words, those that breed any question are (agreement, will, otherwise) whereby some have inferred that uses might be raised by agreement parol, so there were a consideration of money, or other matter valuable; for it is expressed in the words before (bargains, sale, and contract) but of blood, or kindred; the error of which collection appeareth in the word immediately following (viz. will) whereby they might as well include, that a man feised of land might raise an use by will, especially to any of his sons or kindred, where there is a real confideration; and by that reason mean, betwixt this statute and the statute of 32 of wills, lands were deviseable, especially to any man's kindred, which was clearly otherwise; and therefore those words were put in, not in regard of uses raised by those conveyances, or without, or likewise by will, might be transferred; and there was a person seised to a use, by force of that agreement or will (viz.) to the use of the affignee; and for the word (otherwise) it should by the generality of the word include a diffeifin

to a use. But the whole scope of the statute crosseth that which was to execute such uses, as were considences and trust, which could not be in case of disseisin; for if there were a commandment precedent, then the land was vested in cesty que use upon the entry; and if the disseisin were of the disseisor's own head, then no trust; and thus much for the case of supposition of this statute; here follow the ordinance and purview thereupon.

The purview hath two parts, the first operation statuti; the effect that the statute worketh: and there is modus operandi, a siction, or explanation how the statute doth work that effect. The effect is, that cesty que use shall be in possession of like estate as he hath in the use; the siction quomodo is, that the statute will have the possession of cesty que use, as a new body compounded of the matter and form; and that the seoffees shall give matter and substance, and the use shall give form and quality; the material words in the

first part of the purview are four.

e

,

ſ-

e-

b

th

ul

re

ife

ny

re-

fed

ion

ex-

and

of

edi-

as

aise

s or

and

the

spe-

arly

in,

aces,

red;

force

f the

ould

feisin to

THE first words are remainder and reverter. the statute having spoken before of uses in feesimple, in tail, for life, or years, addeth, or otherwise (in remainder, reverter:) whereby it is manifest, that the first words are to be understood of uses in possession; for there are two substantial and essential differences of estates, the one limiting the times, (for all estates are but times of their continuances) the former maketh little difference of feesimple, fee-tail for life or years, and the other maketh difference of puffession as remainder: all other differences of estate are but accidents, as shall be faid hereafter: these two the statute meant to take hold of, and at the words, remainder and reverter it stops: it adds not words, (right, title, or possibility) nor it hath not general words (or otherwise); it is most plain, that the statute meant to execute no inferior uses to remainder or reverter; that is to fay, no possibility or contingences,

but estates, only such as the feoffees might have executed by conscience made. Note also, the very letter of the statute doth take notice of a difference between an use in remainder and an use in reverter; which though it cannot properly be so called, because it doth not depend upon particular estates, as remainders do, neither did then before the statute draw any tenures as reversions do; yet the statute intends that there is a difference when the particular use and the use limited upon the particular use are both new uses; in which case it is a use in remainder; and where the particular use is a new use, and the remnant of the use is the old use, in which case it is a use in reverter.

THE next material word is (from henceforth) which doth exclude all conceit of relation that cefty que use shall not come in has from the time of the first feoffments to use, as Brudnell's confeeffeet was in 14 Hen. VIII. That is, the feoffor had granted a rent-charge, and cefty que use had made a feeffee feelfthent in fee, by the statute of I Richard III. the act of cesty que use shall put the feoffor in, as if cesty que use had been seised in from the time of cestingue une the first use limited; and therefore the statute doth take away all fuch ambiguities, and expresseth that cefty que use shall be in possession from henceforth; that is, from the time of the parliament for uses then in being, and from the time of the execution for uses limited after the parliament.

THE third material words are (lawful feifin, state and possession) not a possession in law only, but a feisin in tail; not a title to enter into the land, but an actual eftate.

THE fourth words are of and in fuch estates as they had in the use; that is to fay, little estates, fee-simple, fee-tail, for life, for years at will, in possession, and reversion, which are the substantial differences of estates, as was said before; but both their latter clauses are more fully per-

Headof

good ag !

toures.

the feoffee

W th use no

Pfi

it ' use tut aft pof not

946

of t upo But fpea fessi or r

be t righ feof ther

T

perly Scint ble ment

T manr to as the v ule w estate all acc

first n the fo perfected and expounded by the branch of the fiction of the statute which follows.

This branch of fiction hath three material words or clauses: the first material clause is, that the estate, right, title, and possession that was in fuch person, &c. shall be in cesty que use; for that the matter and substance of the estate of cesty que use is the estate of the seoffee, and more he cannot have; so as if the use were limited to cesty que use and his heirs; and the estate out of which it was limited was but an estate for life, custy que use can have no inheritance: so if when the statute came the heir of the feoffee had not entred after the death of his ancestor, but had only a possession in law, cesty que use in that case should not bring an affize before entry, because the heir of the feoffee could not; so that the matter whereupon the use must work is the feoffee's estate. But note here: whereas before when the statute speaks of the uses, it spake only of uses in posfession, remainder, and reverter, but not in title or right; Now when the statute speaks what shall be taken from the feoffee, it speaks of title and right; fo that the statute takes more from the feoffee than it executes presently in case, where there are uses in contingence which are but titles.

S

n

e

16

r.

1)

at

ne

n-

ad

II.

use s if

of

ute

for

ex-

fate

but a

fates

ele e-

rs at

d be-

fully

per-

The fecond word is (clearly) which feems properly and directly to meet with the conceit of Scintilla Juris, as well as the words in the preamble of extirpating and extinguishing such feoffments, so is their estates as clearly extinct.

The third material clause is after such quality, manners, form and condition as they had in the use; so as now as the seossee's estate gives matter, so the use gives form: and as in the sirst clause the use was endowed with the possession in points of estate, so there it is endowed with the possession in all accidents and circumstances of estate; wherein sirst note, that it is gross and absurd to expound the form of the use any whit to destroy the sub-

M

stance of the estate as to make a doubt, (because the use gave no dower or tenancy by the courtesty) that therefore the possession when it is transferred would do so likewise: no, but the statute meant such quality, manner, form and condition, as it is not repugnant to the corporal presence

and possession of the estate.

NEXT for the word (condition) I do not hold it to be put in for uses upon condition, though it be also comprised within the general words; but because I would have things stood upon learnedly, and according to the true fense, I hold it but for an explaining, or word of the effect; as it is in the statute of 26 of treasons, where it is said, that the offender shall be attainted of the overt fact by men of their condition (in this place;) that is to fay, of their degree, or fort: and fo the word condition in this place is no more, but in like quality, manner, form and degree or fort; fo as all these words amount but to (modo & forma.) Hence therefore all circumstances of estate are comprehended, as fole feifin, or jointly feifin, by intierties, or by moieties, a circumstance of estate to have age as coming in by descent, or not age as purchaser, or circumstance of estate descendable to the heir of the part of the father, or of the part of the mother. A circumstance of estate conditional or absolute, remitted or not remitted, with a condition of inter-marriage, or without, all these are accidents and circumstances of estate, in all which the possession shall ensue the nature and quality of the use; and thus much of the first case which is the general case.

THE second case of the joint seosses needs no exposition; for it pursueth the penning of the general case: only this I will note, that although it had been omitted, yet the law upon the first case would have been taken as the case provided; so that it is rather an explanation than an addition: for turn that case the other way, that one

were

1

0

p

ef

ca

ca

pe

W

rei

of

int

is,

the

is t

10

par

fi)

not

the

nati

him

ftra

plica

tion

tura

have

in th

that

as i

perfe

find

diver

te

n,

ld

it

ut d-

ut

in

d,

ert

fo

ut

t;

or-

ate

in,

of

ot

de-

er,

of

re-

or

ces

fue

ach

no

the

ugh

first

ed;

ldi-

one

ere

were infeoffed to the use of himself, I hold the law to be, that in the former case they shall be feifed jointly; and fo in the latter case cesty que use shall be seised solely: for the word (other) it shall be qualified by the construction of cases, as shall appear when I come to my division. But because this case of co-feoffees to the use of one of them was a general case in the realm, therefore they foresaw it, oppress'd it precisely, and pass'd over the case & converso, which was but an especial case: and they were loth to bring in this case, by inserting the word only into the first case, to have penned it to the use only of other persons; for they had experience what doubt the word (only) bred upon the statute of 1 R. III. after this third case: and before the third case of rents comes in the fecond faving; and the reason of it is worth the noting, why the favings are interlaced before the third case; the reason of it is, because the third case needeth no saving, and the first two cases did need savings; and that is the reason of that again.

It is a general ground, that where an act of parliament is donor, if it be penned with an (ac fi) it is not a faving, for it is a special gift, and not a general gift, which includes all rights; and therefore in 11 Henry VII. where upon the alienation of women, the statute intitles the heir of him in remainder to enter, you find never a stranger, because the statute gives entry not (fimpliciter) but within an (ac fi;) as if no alienation had been made, or if the feme had been naturally dead. Strangers that had right might have entred; and therefore no faving needs. So in the statute of 32 of leases, the statute enacts, that the leases shall be good and effectual in law, as if the leffor had been seised of a good and perfect estate in fee-simple; and therefore you find no faving in the statute; and so likewise of: divers other statutes, where the statute doth make a gift Y 3

a gift or title good, specially against certain per-

r

b

b fe

u

tl

 $f\epsilon$

to tl

in

pl

of

pr

re sh

an

gr

tic

perion

fons, there needs no faving, except it be to exempt some of those persons; as in the statute of Now to apply this to the case of rents, which is penned with an (ac fi) (viz.) as if a fufficient grant, or lawful conveyance had been made, or executed by fuch as were feifed; why if fuch a grant of a rent had been made, one that had an ancient right might have entred and have Frecond the charge; and therefore no faving needeth; but the fecond first cases are not penned with an (ac f) but absolute, that cefty que rafe shall be adjudged in estate and possession, which is a judgment of parliament stronger than any fine, to bind all rights; nay it hath farther words (viz.) in lawful estate and possession, which maketh it stronger than any in the first clause; for if the words only had flood upon the fecond clause, (viz.) that the estate of the feoffee should be in cefty que use, then perhaps the gift should have been special, and so the faving superfluous: and this note is material in regard of the great question, whether the feoffees may make any regress; which opinion (I mean that no regress is left unto them) is principally to be argued out of the faving; as shall be now declared: for the sayings are two in number; the first faveth all trangers rights, with an exception of the feoffees; the fecond is a faving out of the exception of the first faving, (viz.) of the feoffees in case where they claim to their own proper use : it had been easy in the first saving out of the statute (other than fuch persons as are seized, or hereafter should be seised to any use) to have added to these words (executed by this statute;) or in the fecond faving to have added unto the words (claiming to their proper use) these words (or to the use of any other, and executed by this statute:) but the regress of the feoffee is shut out

between the two favings; for it is the right of a

of

S,

a

en

y

at

ve

ng

n-

ue

n,

an

ch e;

nd ald

ald

is:

eat

re-

s is

of:

fa-

all of-

ion

afe: it

sta-

or

ave

te;)

the

ords this

out

of a

person claiming to an use, and not unto his own proper use; but it is to be added, that the first saving is not to be understood as the letter implieth, that seoffees to use shall be barr'd of their regress, in case that it be of another seoffment than that whereupon the statute hath wrought, but upon the same seoffment; as if the seoffee before the statute had been disseised, and the disseised had made a seoffment in see to I. D. his use, and then the statute came: this executeth the use of the second feosfment; but the first feosfees may make a regress, and they yet claim to an use, but not by that feosfment upon which the statute hath wrought.

angelige

Now followeth the third case of the statute touching execution of rents; wherein the material words are four *

First, whereas divers persons are seised, which hath bred a doubt that it should only go to rents in use, at the time of the statute; but it is explained in the clause following (viz.) as if a grant had been made to them by such as are or shall be seised.

THE fecond word is (profit) for in the putting of the case, the statute speaketh of a rent; but after in the purview is added these words (or profit.)

The third word is (ac fi) (S) that they shall have the (S) as if a sufficient grant or lawful conveyance had been made and executed unto them.

The fourth words are the words of liberty and remedies attending upon such rent (S) that he shall distrain, &c. and have such suits, entries, and remedies, relying again with an (ac si) as if the grant had been made with such collateral penalaties and advantages.

Now for the provisoes; the makers of this law did so abound with policy and discerning, as they

gents

did not only foresee such mischiefs as were incident to this new law immediately, but likewise fuch as were confequent in a remote degree; and therefore besides the express provisoes, they did add three new provisoes which are in themselves substractive laws; for foreseeing that by the execution of uses, wills formerly made should be overthrown: They made an ordinance for wills. Foreseeing likewise, that by execution of uses, women should be doubly advanced: they made an ordinance for dowers and jointures. Foreseeing again, that the execution of uses would make franktenement pass by contracts paroll, they made an ordinance for inrollments of bargains and fales. The two former they inserted into this law, and the third they diffinguished into a law apart, but without any preamble, as may appear, being but a provisoe to this statute. Besides all these provisional laws; and besides five provisoes, whereof three attend upon the law of jointure, and two born in Wales, which are not material to the purpose in hand. There are fix provisoes which are natural and true members and limbs of the statute, whereof four concern the part of cesty que

tute, whereof four concern the part of cefty que use, and two concern the part of the feoffees: The four, which concern the part of cesty que use, tend all to save him from prejudice by the execu-

tion of the estate.

1.63.6

The first faveth him from the extinguishment of any statute or recognizance; as if a man had an extent of a hundred acres, and an use of the inheritance of one. Now the statute executing the possession to that one, would have extinguish'd his extent being intire in all the rest: or as if the commissioner of a statute having ten acres liable to the statute, shad made a feossment in see to a stranger of two, and after had made a feossment in see to the use of the conizee and his heirs. And upon this provisoe there arise three questions: First, whether this provisoe were not super-

fu fee

en

poi aft bei rat for

exe

bot

wa

the and exp cha tim

liefs
paft
T
colla
of

the limit And none to dy co

tena from

feoff

superfluous, in regard that cesty que use was comprehended in the general saving, though the seoffees be excluded?

SECONDLY, whether this provisoe doth fave statutes or executions, with an apportionment or entire?

THIRDLY, because it is penned indefinitely in point of time, whether it shall go to uses limited after the statute, as well as to those that were in being all the time of the statute, which doubt is rather inforced by this reason, because there was for uses at the time of the statute, for that the execution of the statute might be waved: but both possession and use, since the statute, may be waved.

THE second provisoe saveth cesty que use from the charge of primer seisin, liveries, ouster le maines, and such other duties to the King, with an express limitation of time: that he should be discharged for the time past, and charged for the time to come to the King, viz. May 1536. to be communis terminus.

THE third provisoe doth the like for fines, reliefs, and heriots discharging them for the time past, and speaking nothing of the time to come.

9

t

-

e

e

e

0

is

e

JC

r-

The fourth provisoe giveth to cesty que use all collateral benefits of vouchers, aids priers, actions of waste, trespass, conditions broken, and which the feosfees might have had; and this is expresly limited for estates executed before 1 May 1536. And this provisoe giveth occasion to intend that none of these benefits would have been carried to cesty que use, by the general words in the body of the law, (S.) that the seoffees estate, right, title, and possession.

For the two provisoes on the part of the tertenant, they both concern the saving of strangers from prejudice, &c.

THE first saves actions depending against the feoffees, that they shall not abate.

THE

THE fecond faves wardships, liveries, and onfier le maines, whereof title was vested in regard of the heir of the feossee, and this in case of the King only.

What persons may be seised to an use, and what not.

What persons may be cesty que use, and what not.

What persons may declare an use, and what not.

The may seized to

THOUGH I have opened the statute in order of words, yet I will make my division in order of matter, viz.

I. THE raising of uses.

2. THE interruption of uses.

3. THE executing of uses.

AGAIN, the raising of uses doth easily divide itself into three parts.

THE persons that are actors to the conveyance

to use.

THE use itself.

THE form of the conveyance.

THEN it is first to be seen what persons may be seised to an use, and what not; and what persons

may be cesty que use, and what not.

THE King cannot be feised to an use; no not where he taketh in his natural body, and to some purpose as a common person; and therefore if land be given to the King, and I. D. per terme de lour vies, this use is void for a moiety.

LIKE law is, if the King be feized of land in the right of his duchy of Lancaster, and covenanteth by his letters patent under the duchy feal to stand seised to the use of his son, nothing

paffeth.

LIKE law, if King R. III. who was feoffor to divers uses before he took upon him the crown, had after he was King by his letters patent granted the land over, the uses had not been renewed.

Saga 453.

feoffer

THE

it

ſe

hi

ec

an

bi

lai

uf

de

Ar

wa

bef

not

fing

ftat

hav

of

yea

25

teof

ed t

they

A

THE Queen (speaking not of an imperial Queen but by marriage) cannot be feifed to an use, though she be a body enabled to grant and purchase, without the King: yet in regard of the government and interest the king hath in her possession, she cannot be seised to an use.

A Corporation cannot be feifed to an ule, because their capacity is to a use certain; again, because they cannot execute an estate without doing wrong to their corporation or founder; but chiefly because of the letter of this statute which (in any clause when it speaketh of the feoffee) resteth only upon the word (person,) but when it speaketh of cesty que use, it addeth person or body politick.

If a bishop bargain or fell lands whereof he is feifed in the right of his fee, this is good during his life; otherwise it is where a bishop is infeoffed to him and his fuccessors, to the use of I. D. and his heirs, that is not good, no not for the

bishop's life, but the use is merely void.

le

ce

be

ons

not

me e if

e de

in in

ove-

uchy

hing

or to

own,

rant-

ewed.

THE

CONTRARY law of tenant in tail; for if I give land in tail by deed fince the statute to A. to the use of B. and his heirs; B. hath a fee-simple And like law, though doubtful before the statute, was for the chief research was, for the chief reason which bred the doubt before the statute, was because tenant in tail could the not execute an estate without wrong; but that fince the statute is quite taken away, because the he cand statute saveth no right of intail, as the statute of and R. III. did; and that reason likewise might feether have been answered before the statute, in regard of the common recovery.

A FEME covert and an infant, though under years of discretion, may be seised to an use; for hand as well as land might descend unto them from alithe next teoffee to use, so may they originally be infeoff-

ed to an use; yet if it be before the statute, and they had (upon a subpana brought) executed their before the statute eltate 4

hime they might have avoided the

· descented in

READING ON THE STATUTE OF USES.

estate during the coverture or infancy, they might have deseated the same; and then they should have been seised again to the use, and not to their own use; but since the statute no right is saved unto them.

If a feme covert or an infant be enfeoffed to an use precedent since the statute, the infant or baron come too late to discharge or root up the feoffment; but if an infant be infeoffed to the use of himself and his heirs, and I. D. pay such a sum of money to the use of I. G. and his heirs, the infant may disagree and overthrow the consecutive, the tingent use.

CONTRARY law, if an infant be infeoffed to the use of himself for life, the remainder to the use of I. S. and his heirs, he may disagree to the feoffment as to his own estate, but not to divest the remainder, but it shall remain to the benefit the contraction of him in remainder.

And yet if an attainted person be infeoffed to the king's title, after office found, shall prevent the use, and relate above it, but until the statute office the cesty que use is seised of the land.

LIKE law of an alien; for if land be given to by first and alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien; for if land be given to by first an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien; for if land be given to by first an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien; for if land be given to by first and alien; an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien; for if land be given to by first and alien; an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien; for if land be given to by first and alien; and alien; for if land be given to by first an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien; for if land be given to by first and alien; for if land be given to by first an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

Like law of an alien to an use, the use is not void ab initio:

done before. The King's villain if he be infeoffed to an use, done before the King's title shall relate above the use, otherwise in case of a common person.

But if the lord be infeoffed to the use of his villain, the use neither riseth, but the lord is in by the common law, and not by the statute discharged of the use.

his wife for years, if he die the wife shall have the term, and it shall not inure by way of discharge, although the husband may dispose of the wife's term.

p

ho

m

tic

it l

the

iay

of

to]

do :

inro

vest

Witl

the

four

the!

 \mathbf{B}

So if the lord, of whom the land is held, be infeoffed to the use of a person attainted, the lord shall not hold by way of discharge of the use, because of the King's title, An. diem & vastum.

A Person uncertain is not within the statute, nor any estate in nubibus or suspence executed: as if I give land to I. S. the remainder to the right heirs of I. D. to the use of I. N. and his heir, I. N. is not seised of the see-simple of an estate per vit. of I. S. till I. D. be dead, and then

in fee-simple.

0

e

e

it

to

all

til

to

o: in

ſe,

er-

his

in

lif-

of

ave

lif-

the

LIKE law, if before the statute I give land to I. S. per auter vie to an use, and I. S. dieth, leaving cesty que use, whereby the freehold is in suspence, the statute cometh, and no occupant entreth; the use is not executed out of the freehold in suspence for the occupant, she disseisor, the lord by escheat. The seosse upon consideration, not having notice, and all other persons which shall be seised to use, not in regard of their persons but of their title. I refer them to my division touching disturbance and interruption of uses.

Ir followeth now to see what person may be a restry que use. The King may be cesty que use; but must be the both the declaration of the use, and the conveyance itself, to be matter of record, because the King's title is compounded of both; I say not appearing of record, but by conveyance of record. And therefore if I covenant with I. S. to levy a fine to him to the King's use, which I do accordingly; and this deed of covenant be not inrol'd, and the deed be found by office, the use vesteth not. E converso, inrol'd: if I covenant with I. S. to infeosif him to the King's use, and the deed be inrol'd, and the feossment also be found by office, the use vesteth.

But if I levy a fine, or suffer a recovery to the King's use, and declare the use by deed of co-

verant

venant enrol'd, though the King be not party,

yet it is good enough.

A Corporation may take an use, and yet it is not material whether the feoffment or the declaration be by deed; but I may infeoff I. S. to the use of a corporation, and this use may be averred.

A Use to a person uncertain is not void in the first limitation, but executeth not till the person be in effe; fo that this is positive, that an use shall never be in obeyance as a remainder may be, but ever in a person certain upon the words of the statute, and the estate of the feoffees shall be in him or them which have the use. The reason is, because no confidence can be reposed in a person unknown and uncertain; and therefore if I make a feoffment to the use of I. S. for life, and then to the use of the right heirs of I. D. the remainder is not in obeyance, but the reversion is in the feoffer (quousque.) So that upon the matter all persons uncertain in use, are like conditions or limitations precedent.

LIKE law, if I enfeoff one to the use of I. S. for years, the remainder to the right heirs of I. D. This is not executed in obeyance, and therefore

m

m

dif

tut

wh

the

no

and

fan

cest wh

in |

you

Tag i had not void.

LIKE law, I make a feoffment to the use of my wife that shall be, or to such persons as I shall maintain, though I limit no particular estate at all; yet the use is good, and shall in the interim return to the feoffor.

CONTRARY law, if I once limit the whole feefimple of the use out of land, and part thereof to a person uncertain, it shall never return to the feoffor by way of fraction of the use: but look how it should have gone unto the feoffor; wif I remainder; & I entail a contingent ule, both states are alike subject to the contingent use when they thense ' fatill the torting

ya rem" of a Cegal estate for

Byleani

rency happens'

it falleth; as when I make a feoffment in fee to the use of my wife for life, the remainder to my hutare, first begotten son: I having no son at that time, of thisping the remainder to my brother and his heirs: if whithin my wife die before I have any fon, the use shall not be in me, but in my brother. And yet if I marry again, and have a fon, it shall divest from my brother, and be in my fon, which is the skipping they talk fo much of.

So if I limit an use jointly to two persons, not in effe, and the one cometh to be in effe, he shall take the intire use; and yet if the other afterward come in effe, he shall take jointly with the former; as if I make a feoffment to the use of my wife that shall be, and my first begotten son for their lives, and I marry; my wife taketh the whole use; and if I afterwards have a ion, he

taketh jointly with my wife.

Bur yet where words of obeyance work to an estate executed in course of possession, it shall do the like in uses; as if I inseoff A. to the use of B. for life, the remainder to C. for life, the re- rescut mainder to the right heirs of B. this is a good remainder executed.

So if I enfeoff A. to the use of his right heirs, legal estate A. is in the fee-simple, not by the statute, but the same will

by the common law.

Now are we to examine a special point of the disability of such persons as do take by the statute; and that upon the words of the statute, where divers persons are seised to the use of other persons; so that by the letter of the statute, Where the no use is contained; but where the feoffor is one, harly shell and cesty que use is another.

THEREFORE it is to be feen in what cases the _ mon lan same persons shall be both seised to the use and cesty que use, and yet in by the statute; and in what cases they shall be diverse persons, and yet by force in by the common law; wherein I observe unto it the you three things: First, that the letter is full in

possession operate in the like way

take lit com the I taluto

vhen

of e

n n

Ke en

n-

he all or

S.

D.

ore

of

nall

e at

rim

fee-

f to the

ook

the

the point. Secondly, that it is strongly urged by the clause of joint estates following. Thirdly, that the whole scope of the statute was to remit the common law, and never to intermeddle where the common law executed an estate; therefore the statute ought to be expounded; that where the party seised to the use, and the cesty que use is one person, he never taketh by the statute, except there be a direct impossibility or impertinency for the use, to take effect by the common law.

And if I give land to I. S. to the use of himfelf and his heirs; and if I. D. pay a sum of money, then to the use of I. D. and his heirs, I. S. is in of an estate for life, or for years, by way of abridgment of estate in course of possession, and I. D. in of the see-simple by the statute.

So if I bargain and fell my land after feven years, the inheritance of the use only passeth; and there remains an estate for years by a kind of substraction of the inheritance or occupier of my estate, but merely at the common law.

But if I enfeoff I. S. to the use of himself in tail, and then to the use of I. D. in see, or covenant to stand seised to the use of myself in tail, and to the use of my wife in see; in both these cases the estate tail is executed by this statute; because an estate tail cannot be re-occupied out of a see-simple, being a new estate, and not like a particular estate for life or years, which are but portions of the absolute see; and therefore if I bargain and sell my land to I. S. after my death without issue, it doth not leave an estate tail in me, nor vesteth any present see in the bargain, but is an use expectant.

So if I enfeoff I. S. to the use of I. D. for life, and then to the use of himself and his heirs, he is in of the see-simple merely in course of possession, and as of a reversion, and not of a remain-

der.

sh

le

of

a

fef

in

de

ons

4

afte

to 1

CONTRARY Law, if I enfeoff I. S. to the use of I. D. for life, then to the use of himself for life, the remainder to the use of I. N. in see: Now the law will not admit fraction of estates; but I. S. is in with the rest by the statute.

So if I infeoff I. S. to the use of himself and a stranger, they shall be both in by the statute, because they could not take jointly, taking by

feveral titles.

i

y

11

en

1;

nd

of

in

co-

in

oth

Ita-

ied

not

are

e if

ath

l in

ain,

life

, he

ffelnainLIKE law, if I infeoff a bishop and his heirs to the use of himself and his successors, he is in

by the statute in the right of his see.

And as I cannot raise a present use to one out of his own seisin; so if I limit a contingent or suture use to one being at the time of limitation not seis'd, but after become seised at the time of the execution of the contingent use, there is the same reason and the same law, and upon the same difference which I have put before.

As if I covenant with my fon, that after his marriage I will stand seised of land to the use of himself and his heirs; and before marriage I enfeoff him to the use of himself and his heirs, and then he marrieth; he is in by the common law, and not by the statute; like law of a bar-

gain and fale.

But if I had let to him for life only, then he should have been in for life only by the common law, and of the see-simple by statute. Now let me advise you of this, that it is not a matter of subtilty or conceit to take the law right, when a man cometh in by the law in course of possession, and where he cometh in by the statute in course of possession; but it is material for the deciding of many causes and questions, as for warranties, actions, conditions, wavers, suspicions, and divers other provisoes.

For example; a man's farmer committed waste: have the safter he in reversion covenantes to stand seis'd by the to the use of his wife for life, and after to the

Reasons
why it is national
to disting
feture take
at common
have at takes
by the states

Z

RARY

use of himself and his heirs; his wife dies; if he be in his see untouch'd, he shall punish the waste; if he be in by the statute, he shall not

punish it.

So if I be infeoffed with warranty, and I covenant with my fon to stand seised to the use of myself for life, and after to him and his heirs; if I be in by the statute, it is clear my warranty is gone; but if I be in by the common law it is doubtful.

So if I have an eigne right, and be infeoffed to the use of I. S. for life, then to the use of myfelf for life, then to the use of I. D. in fee, I. S. dieth. If I be in by the common law, I cannot wave my estate, having agreed to the feoffment: but if I am in by the statute, yet I am not remitted, because I come in by my own act: but I may wave my use, and bring an action prefently; for my right is faved unto me by one of the favings in the statute. Now on the other fide it is to be seen, where there is a seisin to the use of another person; and yet it is out of the statute which is in special cases upon the ground; wherefoever cefty que use had remedy for the posfession by course of common law, there the statute never worketh; and therefore if a diffeisin were committed to an use, it is in him by the common law upon agreement; fo if one enter as occupant to the use of another, it is in him till disagreement.

So if a feme infeoff a man (causa matrimonii prælocuti) she hath remedy for the land again by course of the law; and therefore in those special cases the statute worketh not; and yet the words of the statute are general, (where any person stands seised by force of any fine, recovery, feoffment, bargain and sale agreement or otherwise) but yet the seme is to be restrained for the rea-

fon aforefaid.

It remainesh to shew what persons may limit the may and declare an use: wherein we must distinguish; we for there are two kinds of declarations of uses, we the one of a present use upon the first conveyance, the other upon a power of revocation or new declaration; the latter of which I refer to the division of revocation: now for the former.

THE King upon his letters patents may declare an use, though the patent itself implieth an use,

if none be declared.

Is the King gives lands by his letters to I. S. and his heirs, to the use of I. S. for life, the King hath the inheritance of the use by implication of the patent, and no office needeth; for implication out of matter of record, amounteth ever to matter of record.

If the Queen give land to I. S. and his heirs to the use of all the church-wardens of the church of Dale, the patentee is seised to his own use, upon that confidence or intent; but if a common perfon had given land in that manner, the use had been void by the stat. of 23 H. VIII. and the use had returned to the seoffor and his heirs. A corporation may take an use without deed as hath been said before; but can limit no use without deed.

An infant may limit an use upon a feoffment, fine, or recovery, and he cannot countermand or avoid the use, except he avoid the conveyance; contrary, if an infant covenant in consideration of blood or marriage to stand seised to an use, the use is merely void.

If an infant bargain and fell his land for money, for commons or teaching, it is good with averment; if for money otherwise: if it be proved it is avoidable; if for money recited and not paid, it is void; and yet in the case of a man of

full age the recital fufficeth.

Ir baron and feme be feised in the right of the feme, or by joint purchase, during the coverture,

1 Z 2

ut

e-

of

er

he

he

id;

of-

lta-

isin

the

r as

till

201212

a by

ecial

vords

erfon

feoff-

wife)

rea-

and they join in a fine, the baron cannot declare the use for longer time than the coverture, and the seme cannot declare alone; but the use goeth according to the limitation of law, unto the seme and her heirs; but they may both join in declaration of the use in see; and if they sever, then it is good for so much of the inheritance as they concurr'd in; for the law avoucheth all one as if they join'd: as if the baron declare an use to I. S. and his heirs, and then to I. S. and his heirs, the use is good to I. S. in see.

AND if upon examination the feme will declare the use to the judge, and her husband agree not to it, it is void, and the baron's use is only good; the rest of the use goeth according to the limitation of law.

Note this treatise seems in simplestings the author with having treated of the interrupt, of uses, a status expected of the interrupt, of uses, as he influenced to do me . Lee arte personed to do me . Lee arte personed to do me . Lee

Bator, who is fo call'd, 127. how, and when he may become lawful owner of another's lands, ibid.

Abjuration, in what cases a man shall be oblig'd to abjure the realm, 177. Several cases thereof, with the proceedings

relating to them, ibid.

Absque impetitione vasti, the sense and meaning of this clause clear'd up, and stated by the words themselves; by reason; by authorities; by removing contrary authorities; by practice, 210 to 217. it gives no grant of property, 210. how this clause came first to be ufed, 213.

Accessary, how one man may become so to the act of another

done by his order, 82.

Act, not to be confounded with the execution of the act; nor the entire act with the last part of it; instances, 36, &c.

Act of Parliament, a rule to be observ'd where that is donor,

341.

Administration, how a property in goods, &c. may be gain'd by letters thereof, 160, what bishop shall have the power of granting them in disputable cases, ibid. two cases in the deaths of executors and administrators where the ordinary shall administer, 162.

Administrators, their office and authority in some particulars, 162. in what cases the ordinary is to commit administration, ibid. they must execute their authority jointly, ibid. may

retain, ibid.

Adrian; instances of his misplac'd bounty and expence, 16.

Advorvsons, cases relating thereto explain'd, 36, 69, 74.

Affidavits in Chancery, in what cases not to be allowd, 293.

Aid, a certain fum of money fo

call'd, its uses, 135.

Alexander, his faying to Callifthenes upon his two orations on the Macedonians, 3.

Alienation Office, its business,

135.

 Z_3

Ambiguitas patens, what is meant thereby in law, 99. how to be holden, 100. Latens, what meant by it, 99. how to be holden, 100. another fort of it, ibid.

Amendment of the law, vide law.

Annuity given pro concilio impenfo & impendendo, is not void,
if the grantee is hinder'd from
giving it by imprisonment, 35.

Answers insufficient, how to be punish'd in chancery, 289. in what case they must be direct.

Arrest, In what cases the constable has Power to execute it. 185.

Attainder, cases relating thereto explain'd, 41, 72. what fort of them shall give the escheat to the King, 131, &c. and what to the Lord, 137. by judgment, 131. by verdict or confession, ibid. by outlawry, ibid. taken often by prayer of clergy, 138. forfeiteth all the perfon was possess'd of at the time of the offence, 140. there can be no restitution of blood after it, but by act of parliament, with other confequences thereof, 141. if a person guilty of it shall purchase, it shall be to the king's use, unless he be pardoned, ibid. cases relating to a person guilty of it, and his children, ibid. 143. the clause of forfeiture of goods thereby, found in no private act till Edw. IV.'s reign, 318.

Attorney General, us'd not to be privy counsellors, 1. did not then deal in causes between party and party. ibid.

Atturnement, what it is, 147. must be had to the grant of a reversion, ibid. in what cases a tenant is obligid to atturne, ibid.

Augustus Casar, commended as a great lawgiver, 20, 27.

Auter capacite, & auter droit, their difference shewn, 230.

B

Bankrupts, their petitions, when to be granted. 297.

Bastard, how his heirs may become lawful possession opposition to legal issue, 128.

Battery, how to be punish'd,

Bill of review, in what cases to be admitted in chancery, 280, &c. of an immoderate length, is to be fined in chancery, 289. that is libellous, or slanderous, or impertinent, to be punished, ibid.

Books proper to affift students in reading the common law, much wanted, 12. a way proposed for supplying them, ibid.

Brother, &c. of the half-blood fhall not inherit to his brother, &c. but only as a child to his parents, 128.

Burgh English, a custom in boroughs, so call'd, 129.

0

Canon law, a defign of purging it in Hen. VIII's time, 7, 20. Capite, lands held in cap. in knights-fervice, in what manner and parcels they may be devis'd, 154.

Case of Marwood, Sanders, Foster and Spencer, relating to pro-

perty

Ch

perty in timber trees, 207. of Sir Moyle Finch, of the statute of Marlbridge, Littleton and Culpepper on the same, 215. of Carr, relating to tenures in capite, 226, &c. of the bilhop of Salisbury, upon the lame, 232. of Fitz-Williams, 235. of Colthurst about the sense of Si and ita quod, 237. of Diggs on the same, ibid. of fermin and Askew about the interpretation of fome words in devising of lands, 243. of Corbet about uses, 308. of Delamer on the lame, 313.

Causes difmis'd in chancery after full hearing, are not to be re-

tain'd again, 282.

0

9.

S,

d,

in

ch

fed

boo

rer,

his

bo-

ging

20.

b. in

man-

ay be

Foster

perty

Certainty, there be three degrees of it, First of presence, which the law holds of greatest dig-Secondly, of name, nity. which is the fecond degree. Thirdly, of demonstration, or reference, which is the lowest degree, 102. there is a certainty of representation also, cases of which see 103. what the greatest kind in the naming of lands, ibid. what fort is greatest in demonstrations of persons, 106. of reference, two difficult questions relating thereto answer'd, 107.

Cesty que use, cases relating thereto, 303, 309. had no remedy till Augustus's time, if the heir did not perform as he ought, 319. cases concerning him in stat. of uses, 335. what person may be so, 349. See use.

Chancery, one formerly in all counties palatine, 266.

Chanteries, statute of, explain'd,

Cheshire, exempted from the jurisdiction of the court of marches, 261.

Circuit, counties divided into fix of them, 119. times appointed for the judges to go to them, ibid.

Claufula derogatoria, call'd alfo claufula non obstante, is of two forts, 87, &c. its force explained by several instances to pag. 90.

Clergy, benefit thereof, its first rile, 122. was allow'd in all cases except treason and robbing of churches; but is now much limited, 123. to what cases now confin'd, tbid.

Clerk of the crown, his office, 189. his place in the disposal of the judges, ibid. of the peace, his office, ibid. is appointed by the Custos Rotulo-rum, ibid.

Colthurst's case, 237.

Commissions for examinations of witnesses, 291. for charitable uses, 296. suits thereupon how to proceed, ibid. of sewards, cases relating thereto, ibid. of delegates, when to be awarded, ibid.

Common law, what merhod to be observed in the digesting of it, 10. what points chiefly to be minded in the reduction of it,

Common pleas, court of, erected in Hen. III's time, 120. its institution and defign. ibid.

Common voucher, who he is, and in what cases made use of, 148. Condition, its fignificancy in stat.

of uses, 340.

Conservators of the peace, their origin, office, and continuance thereof, 116. who are such by office, ibid. were succeeded by justices of the peace, ibid.

Constable, his office, 111. was fettled by William the conqueror, ibid. two high constables appointed for every hundred by the sheriff, 112. a petty one appointed for every village, ibid. the original of their authority very dark, 181. original of their office still more obfcure, ibid. whether the high constable was ab origine, ibid. by whom elected, and where, 182. of what condition they ought to be in estate, &c. ibid. 183. they are to perform their office gratis, 184. are oblig'd to fue, ibid. their authority, ibid. &c. their original power reducible to three heads, 185. by whom they are punishable, 186. their oath, 187. their office summ'd up, ibid.

Constantine, his saying of Trajan the emperor for his many

buildings, 16.

Contract, the difference of diffolving a contract, and making a release of the thing contracted for; the one of which may be done, when the other is imposfible, 91.

Conveyance, property of land gain'd thereby in estates in see, in tail, for life, for years, 141. of lands is made six ways; by feossment, by fine, by recovery, by use, by covenant, by

will, 147. these ways are all explain'd, ibid. &c. by way of use, ought to be construed favourably, 240.

Copies in chancery, how to be

regulated, 291.

Copy-holders, their original; with feveral other things relating to

them, 137.

Coroners, their office, 191. how they came to be call'd fo, ibid. by whom they are chosen, ibid. are in use in Scotland likewise, ibid.

Corporations, excluded from trust

by stat. of uses, 334.

Counties, the division of England into them, 113. lords set over each, and their authority, ibid. this authority given afterwards to the sheriff, ibid. county-court held by the sheriff monthly, ibid. this dealt only in crown matters, 119. its jurisdiction, 190.

Court barons, their original, and

use. 137.

Court rolls, their examination to be referr'd to two masters in chancery, 289.

Covenant, a manner of conveyance, 151. how it is effected,

ibid.

Covin, how made and discharg'd,

D.

Damages, an argument of property, 204. in what cases they are to be recover'd by a lesse, ibid.

Debts, what fort of them must first be discharg'd by executors, 161.

Decemvirs, an account of their laws. 18.

Declarations

D

Declarations, the opinion of the law about them, 78.

Decrees, none are to be reversed or explained but upon a bill of review, except in case of miscasting, 280. none are to be made against an express act of parliament. ibid. a person is to suffer close imprisonment for the breach of one, or for contempt of it, ibid. 282. cases wherein they are binding, or not so, ibid. after judgment in chancery, their effect, 286.

Defendant, not to be examin'd upon interrogatories, unless in

Delegates, to be nam'd by the chancellor himself, 297.

l

r

l.

S

ff

y

d

to

in

y-

ed,

d,

ro-

ney

ee,

ult

ors,

neir

10125

Demurrers, what is their proper matter, 289.

Deodand, what it is, 110. to whom disposed of by the king,

Depositions taken in any other court, are not to be read in chancery, but by special order,

Descent, property of lands gained thereby, 128. three Rules to be observed therein, ibid. is restrained by certain customs, 129. this concerns fee-simple estates only, ibid.

Digest of the laws of England, proposed to King James 1. 15.

Digg's case, 238.

Diffisifions from chancery, how to be regularly obtained, 282.

Diffeisin, how inheritance is gained thereby, 127.

Distringues, a Writ so called, in what cases to be executed, 124. Domitian, a dream of his just before his death, 16,

Doubts about our laws, a good rule in any fuch cases, 5.

Dower, tenant in dower, how much favoured by our laws.

E.

Edgar made a collection of the laws of England, 19.

Edward I. commended for his excellent laws, 25.

Entails of lands, how created, 143. were so strengthened by a stat. of Edw. 1. as not to be forfeitable by attainder, ibid. the great inconvenience of this stat. to the crown, 144. these mischiefs prevented by later acts of parliament, ibid. some privileges still remaining to estates in tail, 145.

Entry, a particular case how a property in lands may be gain-

ed by it, 126.

Error in law, and error in fact, what matters they constantly

concern, 85.

Escheat, property in lands gain'd thereby two ways, by bastardy, and by attainder of felony or treason, 130. two things to be noted in escheats; First, the tenure of the lands. Secondly, the manner of such attainder as draweth with it the escheat, 131.

Escheator, his office, and whence

fo call'd, 190.

Escuage, what it means, 133. is due to the King from tenants in knights-service, ibid.

Estates for years, how made, 141. See leases—in tail, how created, 143. were not forseitable by any attainder, ibid.
impediments in a man's dispo-

fing of them, 327.

Examinations in chancery, not to be made by interrogations, except in special cases, 292. other cases relating to examina-

tion of witnesses, 293.

Executorship, how a property in goods is gain'd thereby, 160. of what extent it is, ibid. the office of an executor, ibid. &c. his power before and after the probate of a will, ibid. how he may refuse ibid. what debts he is to pay, and in what order, ibid. any single one may execute alone, 162.

Exemplifications, not to be made

in many cafes, 298.

Exigent, a writ so call'd, what punishment follows it, 138, &c.

Exile, cases relating thereto, with the proceedings in them,

F.

Fealty was fworn to the King by every tenant in knights-fervice,

Fee-simple, estates so held, 146.

their advantages, ibid.

Felo de se, how to be punish'd, 110. several cases relating

thereto, 175.

Felony, if committed by a madman, why excusable, but not so, if by a man drunk, 58. cafes in the statute relating thereto explain'd in many instances, 75. by mischance, how to be punish'd, 110. other cafes of selony, ibid. slying for it, makes a forfeiture of the goods, 139. several cases in which a man becomes guilty of it, 169. the method of punishment, and other proceedings relating to it, ibid. punishment of it, is hanging, and 'tis a question whether the King has power to change it to beheading, 172. accessaries therein, when punishable, or not, ibid. a farther account of the trial, punishment, and other proceedings in it, 173.

Feoffees, cases concerning them in the statute of uses, 335,339,342. Feoffment, cases relating thereto,

36. more cases 94. conveyance by it, in what manner per-

formed, 147.

Fine, what it is, 147. how conveyances are made this way, 148. claim must be made in five years after proclamations issued in the common pleas, or else any one loses his right herein for ever, ibid. some exceptions to this, ibid. is a feoffment of record, 149.

Firmarius, the derivation and force of this word, 201.

h

H

He

Fitz-Williams's case, 235.

Forfeitures, how a property in goods is gain'd thereby, 159. Forma pauperis, when to be ad-

Frankalmoigne, a fort of tenure, 114. its origin, and dignity,

ibid.

Freeholders of some manors, do hold by suit of court, 137.

G

Gavelkind, a custom in Kent, 129. Gavelkind land is not escheatable for felony, 140.

General words, that they ought not to be firetch'd too far in intendments, intendments, is a good rule in law, 46.

Gift, property gain'd thereby, when valid, and when void.

Gloucester, statute of, relating to wastes of timber-trees, and property in them, explain'd, 199, 209.

Gaol-delivery, the course of executing it, 121, the office of gaolers, 191.

Goods stolen, if forfeited to the crown by felony, &c. cannot be recover'd by the owner,

0,

e

r-

n-

y,

in

ns

or

ht

X-

ff-

nd

in

ad-

7.

re,

ty,

do

nt,

ef-

ght

r in

nts

Grants of the King are not to be construed and taken to a special intent, 70.

how far to be extended, *ibid*.

a distinction made between them, and declarations, 78. does not prove the lessee's property in timber-trees, 206. several cases relating to them, 230.

H.

Hay, Sir Alexander, his queries about the office of constables, with answers, 181.

Heirs are bound by the acts of their ancestors, if named, 129. charg'd for false plea, 130. the great favour of our law towards them, 327.

Heresy, cases relating thereto, and the punishment of it, 178. Herlachenden's case, relating to the inheritance of timber-trees, 200, &c.

High-Constable. See constable.
Hill's and Granger's case, 235.
Homage, vow'd to the King by
every tenant, by knights-ser-

vice, 133. how perform'd, ibid. importeth continuance in the blood, 201.

Homicide, how many ways it may be committed, 172.

Horse, every tenant by knightsfervice is oblig'd to keep one for the King's use. 132.

Hundreds, division of the counties into them; and the occafion thereof, 113. hundred courts, to whom granted at first, 114. ford of the hundred is to appoint two high constables and a petry one, 115.

Jest, goods taken in jest, and sold in a market may give a property, 157.

Impetitio, what is meant by it, 211. is distinguish'd from impedimentum, 212.

Imprisonment upon contempt of orders in chancery, when to be discharg'd, 294.

Inheritance, by fee-simple binds the heir with all binding acts of his ancestors, 129 the nature of one open'd and explained, 197 inheritance moveable, ibid. perpetuity is of the effence of inheritance, ibid. what things belong to the owner of inheritance, and what to any particular tenant, in letting estates, 199 what things are not inheritance as soon as sever'd, ibid. is well distinguish'd from particular estates by our laws, 200.

Injunctions for staying of suits, in what cases to be granted, 283, 284, 285. are to be enroll'd, 296.

Intestate,

Intestate, how his goods were formerly disposed of who dy'd, 160. handure to har dower, 344

Judges of affize, their origin,

judges in eyre, ibid.

commissions, which are reckon'd up with the authority they each give, ibid.

manner of proceeding, 121.

Juris placita, & juris regulæ, their difference, 73. the juris regulæ are never to be violated, 75. the placita are to be often, ibid.

Jury, may supply the defect of evidence out of their own knowledge, but are not compellable thereto, 52, 53. the care of our laws about them, 328.

Jus in re, & jus in rem, the difference between them stated,

303.

Justices of assize, their authority lessen'd by the court of com-

mon pleas, 120.

matters only, ibid. their authority translated to justices of assize, ibid.

gin, 116. they succeed the conservators, and are delegated by the chancellor, ibid. their authority, 117. are to attend the judges in their county, 125. their office farther declar'd, 188. itinerants in Wales, their jurisdiction, ibid. of the quorum, who are so, ibid. how called so, ibid. are appointed by the lord keeper, ibid.

Justinian, by commissioners forms the civil law, 7.

K.

King's bench, first instituted by William the conqueror, 112. its jurisdiction, ibid. dealt formerly only in crown matters. 119.

Knights-service in capite first instituted, what refervations the conqueror kept to himself in the institution of this tenure, 131. tenants by this service vow'd homage and fealty to the King, 133. every heir fucceeding his ancestors paid one year's profit of the land to the King, ibid. 'tis a tenure de persona regis, ibid. tenures held this way cannot be alien'd by the tenant without licence of the King, ibid. a tenant to a lord by it, why first instituted, ibid. a tenant to a lord by this fervice is not such of the person of the lord, but of his manor, ibid.

Knights of the shire, were required to be milites gladio

L

cineti, 222.

Lands, all in England were in the hands of the conqueror, except religious and church lands, and what belong'd to the men of Kent, 126. left by the fea, are the King's, 126. are all holden of the crown, ibid. in what cases only a man is attainted to lose them, 140. that are entail'd escheat to the King by treason, ibid. when forfeited to the lord, and when to the crown, ibid. not pass'd from one to another upon payment

ment of money, unless there be a deed indented and inrolled, 150. how many ways convey'd, 147. fettle according to the intent of the parties upon fines, feoffments, recoveries, held in capite or foccage, can be devised only two parts of the whole, 154. the rest descends to the heir, and for what uses, ibid. the whole may be convey'd by act executed in the life-time of the party, 155. entail'd, are reckoned part of the thirds, ibid. how a supply is to be made, when the heir has not the full thirds, ibid. the power of the testator in this case, ibid. no lands are charg'd by way of tribute, but all by way of tenure, 220. were by the common law formerly not deviseable, 316.

Law-givers, much commended,

15.

3

y

r-

rs.

in-

he

he

II.

ice

he

ed-

ar's

ng,

re-

vay

ant

ng,

it,

te-

vice

the

re-

adio

in

ror,

arch

d to

t by

126. own,

man

140.

the

vhen

yhen

ass'd

pay-

ment

.

Laws of England, a proposal for amending them, 1. commended, 2. are made up of customs of feveral nations, 3. are not to be alter'd as to the matter, fo much as the manner of them, ibid. the dignity of such a performance, ibid. and the convenience of it, ibid. the inconveniences of our laws, 3. what fort of them want most amending, ibid. a good direction concerning any doubts that happen in the law, ibid. whether the form of statute, or common law be best, 10. the advantage of good laws, 11. ours commended as to the matter of them, 20. the civilians laying,

that law intends no wrong, 47. whether a man may not controul the intendment of the law by particular express words, 93. the use of law, which confifts in three things chiefly, to fecure mens persons from death and violence; to dispose the property of their goods and lands, and for the prefervation of their good names from shame and infamy, 109. very much favour life, liberty, and dower, 331.

Leases for years, how made, 141. they go to the executors, 142. are forfeited by attainder; in treason, felony, premunire, killing himself, for flying, for standing out against being tried by the county, by conviction of felony, petty larceny, going beyond fea without licence,

ibid, Eic.

- for lives, how made. 142. in what cases forfeitable, and to whom they are fo, 143. Leet, court-leet, its institution was for three ends, 182. the power of this court, ibid.

Leets, stewards of leets and lawdays, their authority, 115.

Legacy, how property may be gain'd thereby, 163. what debts must first be discharg'd before they are to be paid, ibid. may be fold to pay debts upon any deficiency, ibid.

Lesse, cases wherein he has discover'd damages in trees being cut down; and yet no property is from thence prov'd to be in

him. 202.

Lex regia, what it was, 88.

Licences for loss, are to be granted cautiously, 297.

Lowe's case of tenures, 219. whether his tenancy was in capite or in soccage, ibid. a reguments for its being in capite, ibid. to 227. the cases seemingly against it are answered, 228, &c.

M.

Manors, how at first created, 246. whence they had their name, ibid.

Manslaughter, what it is, and

its punishment, 1102.

Marchers, (lordships) abolish'd by stat. 27 Hen. VIII. 246. court of marches maintained in its jurisdiction, ibid. meant by the word marches, ibid. is as old as Edward IVth's time, 248. the extent of it, ibid. &c. the intention of the King in the er ection of it, 1bid. the fense of the word marches fettled by fe veral arguments, and its authority justified, ibid. and 271. a rguments to prove that it fignifies lordships marchers, 252, 271. a confutation of those arguments, 256, 270. different fignifications of marches, with the arguments in defence; of them, 254, &c. the whole debate upon this matter summi'd up, 262 to 277. stat. 34 of Hen. VIII. relating to the marches explained, 264. mar thes diffinguish'd from lord ships marchers, 268. several arguments collected together on this head which were unansvered, 271.

Marchio, a marquis, whence derived, 246.

Marriage of wards, a political refervation of William the conqueror's, 132.

Marshal's office, what it is, 189. is in the disposal of the judges,

ibid.

Marshalsea, first erected, 113. its design, jurisdiction and extent

thereof, ibid.

Maxims in law, feveral advantages of a collection of them, 29. the method follow'd by our author in this collection, which is fet down and explain'd by instances: doubtful cases in them clear'd up, where they take place, and in what cases they fail, from pag. 35 to 108.

Mines, a law case relating to them between lessor and lessee, 206. are part of an inheritance, 197. Minos, in what his laws were sa-

mous, 17.

Misprission of treason, how a man becomes guilty thereof, 168. the method of tryal, punishment, and other proceedings relating thereto, ibid.

Mullins's case taken notice of, concerning the inheritance of

timber-trees, 200.

Murder, cases relating thereto explain'd, 61,&c. how to be prosecuted, and what to suffer for it upon conviction, 110. self-murder, how to be punish'd, 139.

Mute, any one that is so in tryal forseiteth no lands, except for treason, 138. how such a one

is to be punish'd, 122.

0

0

0

0

N

e-

cal

n-

89.

es,

its

ent

an-

em,

our

by

in

they

cales

08.

hem

206.

197.

re ta-

man

168.

nish-

dings

ce of,

ice of

hereto

e pro-

fer for

. felf-

nish'd,

n tryal

ept for

a one

Necessity is of three forts, conservation of life, necessity of obedience, and necessity of the act of God, or of a stranger, 55. it dispenses with the direct letter of a statute law, 56. how far persons are excus'd by cases of necessity, ibid. it privilegeth only quoad jura privata, 57. but does not excuse against the commonwealth, not even in case of death, ibid. an exception to the last mention'd rule, ibid.

Nevill's case relating to local in-

heritances, 198.

Nisi prius, is a commission directed to two judges, 123. the method that is holden in taking nisi prius, ibid. the jurisdiction of the justices of nisi prius, ibid. the advantages of tryals this way, 125.

Nusance, matters of, how to be punish'd by the constable, 186.

O.

Occupancy, when it gives a property in lands, 127, 143.

Orders in chancery are to be register'd, 286. a copy of them is to be kept by the register, ibid. where they vary from general rules, they are to be set down with great care, 287.

Ordinances made for the court of chancery, 279, &c.

Ordinary, in what cases he shall

administer, 162.

Outlawry, of an attainder thereby; and its consequences, 138. how far the lord's title by escheat in this case shall relate back, 139.

D

Peace, what care is taken by our laws to preserve it among the subjects, 110. the breach of it, how to be punish'd, 186.

Penal laws, a multitude of them very inconvenient, 6. penal statutes, how to be construed.

75.

Perpetual, how wifely our laws distinguish between that and transitory, 198.

Perpetuities, a fort of entails, 145, their inconveniences, ibid. a query concerning them, ibid.

Petitions, feveral cases relating

thereto, 294, &c.

Petty constable, how far subordinate to the head constable, 183.

See Constable.

Petty treason, a query relating to the guilt of it, 81. when it is a man becomes guilty of it, 169. the punishment and other proceedings, ibid.

Plea, what is properly the mat-

ter of one, 290.

Pleadings, reasons for their being publish'd, 193.

Postea, what it is, 125.

Prayer, of the clergy, benefit thereof in cases of felony, 138.

Præmunire, cases thereof; the proceedings, tryal, punishment, &c. therein, 175, 176.

Prerogative of the King in parliaments, 178. in matters of war and peace, 179. in matters of money, ibid. in trade and traffick, 180. in his subjects persons, ibid.

Presidents,

Presidents, instances of the great reverence paid to them, 276.

Property in lands, how gained, 126. by entry, how gained, ibid. by descent, how gained, 128. by escheat, how gained, 130. by conveyance, how gained, 141. Several ways of gaining it in goods and chattels, 156. three arguments of property, 203.

Prothonotary, his office, 188. is in the King's gift, ibid.

Purchasers, very much favoured by our laws, 329.

Quarter-sessions, to be held by justices, 118.

R

Recoveries, what they are, 148. they bar entails, &c. ibid. other effects thereof, ibid. methods of proceeding therein, ibid. why first introduced, ibid.

References in chancery, when they may be made, 288, &c.

Registers in chancery, their office, and orders relating to it, 286, &c.

Relief, a sum of 5 l. so call'd, to be paid by every tenant by knights-service to his lord, 136. of tenant in soccage, what, ibid.

Remainder and reversion, the difference between them, 146. the former cannot be limited upon an estate in fee-simple, ibid. its significancy in the statute of uses, 175.

Remitter, what the law means

thereby, 63. several cases of it explain'd, 64, &c.

Rents, case thereof consider'd, 342, concerning the execution of them, 343.

Reversions cannot be granted by word, 147. See Atturnement, Reverter.

Reverter, its meaning stated in the statute of uses, 337.

Review, bill of, in what cases to be admitted, or not, 280.

Revocation of uses, Sir John Stanhope's case relating thereto discusted, 233.

Rights, are of two forts, 303. according to the civilians of three forts, 306.

Rules of law, an account of our author's method and manner in digesting them, 30, 31.

S

Sale, a property gained thereby, when dishonest, 156. how it may bar the right of the owner, ibid. what markets it must be made in, ibid.

Scire facias, a writ, in what cafes not to be awarded, 294.

Search, in what cases the constable has power to do so, 186.

Seipsum defendendo, an act done, why not always justifiable, 58. the punishment for killing a man in that act, 110.

Seizure, leffee is shewn to have no property in timber-trees from thence, 205.

Sequestrations, in what cases to be granted, 285.

Serjeanty, tenures by, what they are, and how instituted, 134.

5

Sessions, to be held quarterly by the justices, with the method of proceeding in them, 118.

Sexviri, their office among the

Athenians, 7, 19.

it

d,

on

by

nt,

in

to

an-

dif-

ac-

ree

our

nner

eby,

w it

ow-

must

t ca-

nsta-

done,

, 58.

ng a

have

-trees

es to

t they

fions,

134.

36.

Sheriff's Tourne, its origin, and jurisdiction, 113. is call'd also Curia Franci Plegii, ibid. made judges of the court for the county and hundreds, ibid. call'd vicecomites, ibid. their office, ibid. 190. are bound to attend the judges in their county by person, or by deputy, 125. from whence they are so call'd, 190.

Slander, how to be punish'd, 110. Socage, tenures so call'd, what and how instituted, 134, &c. reserv'd by the lord, 135.

Solon, what remarkable in his laws, 17.

Statim, its meaning explain'd by

feveral cases, 242.

Statute laws, the great number of them censur'd, 5. they want most correcting of any, 6. more doubts arile upon them, than upon the common law, 9. the method of reforming them, 12. of 27 of Hen. VIII. concerning a ule, its advantage and extent, 150, &c. this statute takes away all uses, and reduces the law to the antient form of conveyance of land by teoffment, fine and recovery, 152. of 39 of Elizabeth concerning the explanation of the word marches, 269. of 2 Edw. VI. for the lame, 270. of 32 of Hen. VIII. for the same, 271. of 37 of Hen. VIII. for the same, ibid. of 4 of Edw.

VI. for the same, ibid. of 27 of Edw. III. for the same, ibid. &c. three things to be confider'd for the right understanding of any statute, 301. feveral relating to the case of uses explain'd, 303 to 314. of 5 of Edw. III. for the relief of creditors, 320. feveral collected relating to uses, what method to be observ'd in expounding them, 334. where an action is given by one, interest is supposed, 209. observations of statute 26 Hen. VIII. and 16 Rich. 11. 267.

Stewards of leets and law days,

their jurisdiction, 115.

Stolen goods, in what cases they may be seiz'd by the owner, and in what not, 157, &c.

Straying, how property in live cattle is gain'd thereby, 158.

Succession, particular cases relating to the succession to lands by the offspring of any person

once attainted, 140.

Suits in chancery, what kind of them are to be dismiss'd the court, 282. what to be admitted in chancery, after Judgment in other courts, 286. in which the plaintiff had not probabilem causam litigandi, he shall pay utmost costs, 289.

Supplicavit, for good behaviour, when to be granted, 295.

Surety, how one may be bound to find it for good behaviour, 109. the method of proceeding with a person so bound before he is discharged, 117. r. gairque to

Tenants particular, their power in estates, 201. of seignories, shall not have aid, and why, ibid. in dower, much favour'd

by our laws, 331.

Tenure of land, what is meant thereby, 131. in capite, what it is, 132. of the King, may take more hurt by a resolution in law, than by many suppresfions and concealments, 220. the great favour of our law towards those in capite, ibid. are divided into two kinds, ibid. by knights fervice, more eminent than by locage; with the reasons of it, 222. in capite is the most worthy of all, ibid. by knights service in capite, cannot be alien'd without licence from the King, ibid. the penalty of alienation, ibid. wherefoever the law createth the tenure of the King, it always raiseth a tenure in capite, 224, 229. where there is any incertainty of tenure by common law, it shall be tenure in capite, 224. where the tenure reserv'd is repugnant to law, or impossible, 'tis the same, ibid. fo allo where a tenure once created, is afterwards extinct, ibid. feveral instances of what are tenures in capite, ibid. of a rent or feignory when judg'd in elle, 227. in what cases they are revived, 229, &c.

Terminor, the nature of his eflate, 201. inferences relating to the inheritance of timbertrees drawn from thence, ibid. Theft, a property gain'd that Way, how it may fometimes bar the right of the owner, 157.

Timber, a house fallen, by tempest, to whom belonging, 206.

Timber-tree, when standing is part of the inheritance, as well as the foil itself, this point argued, 197. the fame more fully discuss'd, 202. so it is also when fever'd, ibid. feveral authorities produced to shew that the property of them belongs to the leffee, 207. these authorities debated and confuted, ibid. &c. the felling thereof supposed to be ad exheredationem, 199. cases wherein the lestee may fell, 204. the Statute of Gloucester relating to them explained, 209, &c.

Tourne, Sheriffs court fo called, and why, 190. jurisdiction of

it, ibid.

Treason, several cases wherein a man becomes guilty of it, 159. the punishment, the method of trial, and other proceedings

relating thereto, 166.

See Petty treason and misprission. Trees, when young belong to the lessee, when full grown to the lessee, and when set to the lessee again; with the reason of it, 201. 'tis a fault to say the lessee has a property in the trees, 202. when sever'd by grant, they subsist as a chattel divided, 203. that are windfalls to whom they belong, 205 Trials, the care of our laws observable in them, 328, &c.

Trust, what it is defined to be, 307. special trust, in what cafes lawful, or not lo, 306.

at

es

er,

n-

06.

is

ell

ar-

ul-

lo

u-

at

gs

lud,

eot

dahe

ta-

to

ed,

of

2

59.

od

igs

072.

he

the

lel-

of

he

the

by

ttel

nd-

105 ob-

ust,

and with product of ${f U}_{0}$ and ${f u}_{0}$ Value, what the law intends by 1t, 244. 1911k

Vestimentum, the canonists interpretation thereof, 60.

Villenage, what fort of tenure it 15, 137.

Usage, often over-rules the express letter of a statute, instances of which are given, 275.

Use, what it is, 150. is lettled by stat. 27 Hen. 8. 151. lands how convey'd thereby, with the circumstances necessary thereto, ibid. reasons on the statute of ules, 299. exposition of it, 301. the nature and definition of an ule, 302. what it is not, 303. what it is, 305. its parts and properties, 306. Glanvill's mistake about uses, 308. its nature farther examined in four points, 310. was once thought not to be deviseable, ibid. limitation thereof dilapproved, 311. in the civil law what most resembles uses, 315. compar'd with copyholders, in what reipects, ibid. how they came first to be practised, 318. their commencement and proceeding according to common and statute law, ibid. the practice of them not very antient, ibid. the word Use found in no statute till 7 Rich. II. ibid. three points to be noted concerning ules in the common law, 319. concerning the raising, preferving, spreading, transferring, interrupting, &c. of uses, 321. &c. 346. the statute of uses commended, 324. the time of it, 325, the title of it, abid. the precedent of it, 326. the preamble of it, ibid. the inconveniences redress'd by this statute, 327, &c. who most favour'd by it, 329. how respectful to the King, 350. the remedy intended to be given by this statute, 331. two talle opinions concerning this statute answer'd, 332. &c. an account of the statute itself, and explanation of its terms; and what things are thereby excluded, 334. an error corrected, that ules might be railed by agreement, 336. difference between a use in remainder and reverter, 337. what provides made by this statute, 343. what perfons may be feifed to a ufe, and what not, 346. must ever be in a perion certain, 349. in what cales the lame perions may be both feifed to the ule and cesty que use too, 351. what persons may limit and declare a ule, 355. See Case.

Usurious, felling of commodities to those who wanted money, and so were forced to sell them back again at disproportionate rates, the draught of an act against this practice, 278.

Waste, case of an impeachment of waste, 195, &c. very difficult to resolve this cale, 196.

Waving, how a property in goods may be got thereby, 158.

Wife, Aa 2

Wife, excus'd by law, if the acts in obedience to her husband in felony, but not in treason, and why, 56. loseth no power, tho' the husband be attainted of fe-

lony, 140.

Will, conveyance of lands thereby, 152. the want of this before 32 Hen. 8. was justly thought to be a defect of the common law, 152. what shifts people were forced to make before this method, ibid. the inconveniences therefrom of putting lands into use as they then did, 153. the method of preventing this by feveral statutes, 154. how lands are to be difposed of by will, by statute 27 Hen. 8. ibid. what limitations feveral lands are under in this way of disposing, 155. what it is to have one proved, 160. how a man's goods were formerly disposed of when he died without a will, 161. what bishop shall have the right of proving them, how determin'd, ibid.

Witches and conjurors are guilty of felony, 170.

Witnesses, how to be examined

in chancery, 292.

Words are to be understood so as to work somewhat, and not to be idle and srivolous, 47. this explaind by example, ibid. if any ambiguity and incertainty be in them in pleadings, the plea shall be strictly against him that pleads, 48. are so taken in law, as no material part of the parties intent perish, 238. rules for the exposition of them, 246.

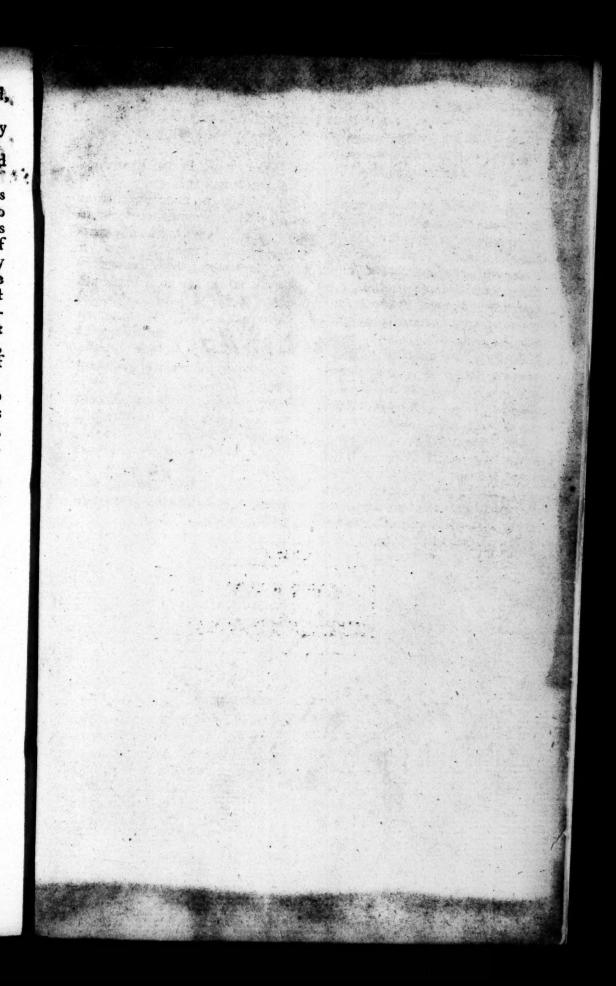
Wrecks, statute relating thereto explain'd, 71. how property is gained in goods shipwreck'd, 159. what is properly a wreck.

ibid.

Writs, which are not to pass without warrant from the chancellor, 294.

MVSEVM BRITANNICVM

F I N I S.



the not for feit the juneys exercised by the Hatete of 27. H. P. 13. H.y. y. b. - Exapt in the case of botason, inwhich they are modeful with by that of H.O. thise not dowdle - 13. H.J.y. L.

